

ELLERY

--

PICKERING  
GENEALOGY

1

PGS. 1 - 287

CS 71

.P6

1

,









THE PICKERING HOUSE AT SALEM, MASS.

RECEIVED

J. P. P. & Co.



THE  
**PICKERING GENEALOGY:**

BEING AN ACCOUNT OF THE

**First Three Generations**

OF

**THE PICKERING FAMILY**

OF SALEM, MASS.,

AND OF THE DESCENDANTS OF JOHN AND SARAH (BURRILL)  
PICKERING, OF THE THIRD GENERATION.

BY

HARRISON ELLERY

AND

CHARLES PICKERING BOWDITCH.

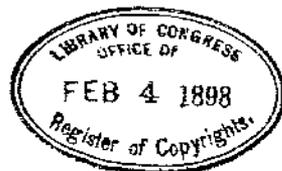
VOL. I.

PAGES 1-287.

PRIVATELY PRINTED.

1897.

*copy 2*



TWO COPIES RECEIVED

CS71  
P6  
1897  
copy 2

*Copyright, 1897,*  
BY CHARLES P. BOWDITCH.

ONE HUNDRED COPIES PRINTED.

UNIVERSITY PRESS:  
JOHN WILSON AND SON, CAMBRIDGE, U. S. A.

## P R E F A C E.

---

IN 1887 I published, under the title of "The Pickering Genealogy, comprising the descendants of John and Sarah (Burrill) Pickering, of Salem," seventy sheets which contained the names and dates of the birth, death, and marriage of the descendants of John and Sarah Pickering, and of their husbands and wives, as far as they had been ascertained. I stated in the preface of the index to that publication that the general plan of "The Pickering Genealogy" was:—

*First.* To print in the form of sheets (like those to which this volume is an index) as complete a list as possible of the descendants of the first JOHN PICKERING, who came to Salem about 1636, tracing out the female as fully as the male descent.

*Second.* To issue a book, referring to the names on the sheets, and giving, as far as practicable, sketches of the individuals whose names are there recorded, with statistical information as to the size of families, length of life, birth of twins, preponderance of male or female children, etc., in the different generations.

*Third.* To trace, either in the above book or on additional sheets, the ancestry of the men and women who have married descendants of John Pickering.

The scope of this plan was so large that I have been unable to carry it out in full, and I have limited the work in the fourth and succeeding generations to the descendants of the third John Pickering, although a great deal of information has been obtained about the descendants of the other children of the second John Pickering and of his brother Jonathan.

At the time that the sheets were printed, nothing was known about the descendants of Nathaniel Gardner Dabney [5. VII. 32] and of Lois

Pickering [66. VI. 134]. Since then I have obtained information about these descendants, which is printed on the new sheets, 5, 5<sup>a</sup>, 5<sup>b</sup>, 5<sup>c</sup>, 5<sup>d</sup>, 66, 66<sup>a</sup>, and 66<sup>b</sup>. Additional information relating to the names on the original seventy sheets is printed on the three sheets of Additions and Errata.

In attempting to carry out the plan set forth in the second paragraph above referred to, the present volumes have been printed. They contain, as far as practicable, sketches of the individuals whose names are recorded on the sheets; while statistical information as to the size of families, length of life, etc., will be found at the end of the third volume.

The plan as set forth in the third paragraph has been carried out in manuscript, but it seems very doubtful whether it will be possible to print the ancestry sheets of the men and women who have married into the Pickering family, although I now have in manuscript nearly a thousand pedigrees of these persons.

The sketches given in these volumes are, in many cases, very short, which is, in a great measure, owing to the unwillingness of some families to give the information which has been asked for. In other cases, the sketches seem to be mere eulogies, which is owing to the fact that obituary notices taken from newspapers are very apt to extol the virtues and to keep silent about the peculiarities of deceased citizens. Through the seventh generation authorities have usually been given in the notes, where the sketch is an extended one, but additions have often been made from family letters, for which it has been thought unnecessary to give the authorities. Through this generation also any discrepancies in the dates of birth, death, and marriage, as given by different authorities, have been stated in the notes at the foot of the page, but in the generations after the seventh, it has not been thought necessary to mark these discrepancies with so great care. Through the seventh generation every name which appears on the sheets is given in the text, except of those persons who died at an early age; but after the seventh generation the names of persons have been omitted about whom nothing more was known than merely their

birth, death, occupation, or residence. In carrying out this plan, I have not attempted to give sketches of any one beyond the tenth generation.

I have endeavored to obtain heliotypes of as many of the portraits of the men and women of the earlier generations as possible, and in this endeavor I have been very much assisted by the owners of these portraits, with a single exception. I have also included more than twenty heliotypes of the houses which have been occupied by various members of the family.

Among the material collected is a large amount of data related to the allied families of the earlier generations, notably those of Burrill, Hardy, Ingersoll, Gardner, Pickman, Cabot, Jackson, Lowell, etc. It was my intention to print pedigrees of a number of these families in this work, and many had been partially prepared for this purpose, but, owing to Mr. Ellery's illness, only two of these were completed, and these, relating to the Burrill and Orne families, will be found in their proper places.

In the sketches which are given in the work, figures which appear against the proper names — as, for instance, 5. VI. 2 — refer to the sheet, generation, and the individual, respectively. The names and numbers in brackets which follow the name of the individual refer to his or her parent on the Pickering side. Then follow the place of birth and death, and the occupation and residence, as far as known, — the residence and occupation given referring to the last residence and the usual occupation. The word "probably" is often used in connection with the place of birth or death, where no exact information on this point was found, but where there was very little doubt on the subject.

It has often been difficult to decide upon the form of spelling which belongs to both the Christian name and the surname. For instance, Lowell appears to have formerly been spelled Lowle; Raymond was formerly spelled Rayment; Orne, Horne, etc. As a rule, the modern spelling has been adhered to. In some cases, an unusual spelling has been accepted on the authority of the family.

The term "Ancestry Tables," as used in the text, refers to the manuscript ancestry sheets in my possession. Where these words are preceded by the word "See," tables of more or less extent exist, but where the words "Ancestry Tables" are used by themselves, it merely shows that a number is reserved for the ancestry of the individual after whose name these words occur. In tracing back the ancestry of those who have married into the family, I have gone back only to the first immigrant, and have not included in the lists the names of those who lived or died on the other side of the ocean.

The names which follow in the text after the words "His (or her) ancestry includes the following families," refer to the stocks of the individual as far as I have been able to ascertain them.

An index of names has been added to the third volume, containing an alphabetical list of all persons whose names appear in the following pages; and an index of families is also appended, containing an alphabetical list of the family stocks from which the consorts of the members of the Pickering family have drawn their birth, and thus showing the common ancestry of these consorts. I have not thought it wise to increase the size of these volumes by adding an index of places.

The statistical tables at the end of the third volume explain themselves. These tables were compiled several months ago, and, therefore, do not include all the names which have been collected while the volumes were passing through the press.

In the collection of material for this work, in preparing it for the press, and in the tabulation of the Ancestry Tables, Mr. Harrison Ellery has devoted nearly ten years of his life. He has travelled over most of the New England States; has examined state, county, town, and church archives; has transcribed many inscriptions from grave-stones; has consulted very many town histories, works on family genealogies, and files of newspapers; has visited many families, and has conducted a wide correspondence. To him, therefore, belongs, to a very large extent, the credit, as well as the responsibility, of this work. And it is a very great sorrow to me that, owing to an acute attack of a disease of his eyes, Mr. Ellery was unable to finish his

---

work. I must, therefore, ask the indulgence of my readers for whatever imperfections may be found in the last one hundred and fifty pages of the text, which have passed through the press under my care.

In preparing the Ancestry Tables and the sketches contained in these volumes, I have received most valuable assistance from members of the family, and from others who have taken an interest in the work. Among those to whom I am especially indebted are Francis H. Lee, Esq., George R. Curwen, Esq., Perley Derby, Esq., Samuel H. Gooch, Esq., and Miss Sarah Clark.

CHARLES P. BOWDITCH.

*December 1, 1897.*



## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
PREFACE . . . . .	v
THE NAME OF PICKERING IN ENGLAND . . . . .	1
PICKERING COATS OF ARMS IN ENGLAND AND AMERICA . . . . .	10
OTHER SETTLERS OF THE NAME OF PICKERING . . . . .	14
FIRST GENERATION . . . . .	17
SECOND " . . . . .	28
THIRD " . . . . .	44
FOURTH " . . . . .	67
FIFTH " . . . . .	88
SIXTH " . . . . .	176
SEVENTH " . . . . .	288
EIGHTH " . . . . .	498
NINTH " . . . . .	773
TENTH " . . . . .	1009
INDEX OF NAMES . . . . .	1089
INDEX OF FAMILIES . . . . .	1179
TABLES OF STATISTICS	

---

BURRILL PEDIGREE . . . . .	Between pages 46 and 47
ORNE " . . . . .	" " 68 " 69



## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

---

Pickering House in Salem . . . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
Ruins of Pickering Castle . . . . .	<i>to face page 4</i>
Seal of John Pickering [III] . . . . .	10
Pickering Coat of Arms . . . . .	11
Silver Watch and Seal of Timothy Pickering [V] . . . . .	12
Agreement between the Town of Salem and John Pickering [I] for Building a Meeting-house . . . . .	18
Deed of Pickering Land in Salem . . . . .	20
Back of Fire-place in Pickering House in Salem . . . . .	23
Interior of East Room in Pickering House, showing Furniture made by Rev. Theophilus Pickering [IV] . . . . .	24
Communion Service given to the First Church in Lynn by John Burrill and Theophilus Burrill . . . . .	48
Commission of William Pickering [III] . . . . .	57
Portrait of Lois (Pickering) Orne [IV]. . . . .	67
"    Esther (Orne) Gardner [V] . . . . .	90
"    Samuel Gardner [V] . . . . .	91
Gardner Coat of Arms . . . . .	94
Portrait of Timothy Orne [V]. . . . .	95
House of Timothy Orne [V] . . . . .	96
Portrait of Rebecca (Taylor) Orne [V] . . . . .	97
House of James Diman [V] . . . . .	98
Portrait of Isaac Peirce [V] . . . . .	106
House of John Clarke [V] . . . . .	111
Portrait of Mary (Pickering) Leavitt [V] . . . . .	112
"    Rev. Dudley Leavitt [V] . . . . .	113
"    Lydia (Pickering) Williams [V] . . . . .	118
House of Rev. Paine Wingate [V] . . . . .	128
Portrait of Timothy Pickering [V] . . . . .	133
"    Rebecca (White) Pickering [V] . . . . .	160

Portrait of Lucia (Pickering) Dodge [V] . . . . .	<i>to face page</i> 163
“ Israel Dodge [V] . . . . .	165
“ Esther (Gardner) Mackey [VI] . . . . .	179
“ Daniel Mackey [VI] . . . . .	180
“ Rev. Thomas Barnard [VI] . . . . .	181
House of Rev. Thomas Barnard [VI] . . . . .	183
Portrait of Elizabeth (Gardner) Dabney [VI] . . . . .	185
“ Rebecca (Orne) Cabot [VI] . . . . .	186
“ Joseph Cabot [VI] . . . . .	187
House of Joseph Cabot [VI] . . . . .	187
Portrait of Elizabeth (Pyncheon) Orne [VI] . . . . .	188
House of Clark Gayton Pickman [VI] . . . . .	189
Portrait of Lois (Orne) Paine [VI] . . . . .	189
“ William Paine [VI] . . . . .	190
House of William Paine [VI] . . . . .	192
Portrait of Rev. John Clarke [VI] . . . . .	193
“ Eunice (Diman) Mason [VI] . . . . .	196
“ Thomas Mason [VI] . . . . .	196
House of Jonathan Haraden [VI] . . . . .	198
Portrait of Eunice (Orne) Green [VI] . . . . .	200
“ Rev. Aaron Green [VI] . . . . .	201
House of John Orne [VI] . . . . .	203
Portrait of Benjamin Goodhue [VI] . . . . .	207
House of Benjamin Goodhue [VI] . . . . .	208
Portrait of Frances (Richie) Goodhue [VI] . . . . .	209
House of Joshua Phippen [VI] . . . . .	211
Portrait of Joseph Peirce [VI] . . . . .	213
“ Ann (Dawes) Peirce [VI] . . . . .	216
“ Isaac Peirce [VI] . . . . .	218
Peirce Coat of Arms . . . . .	225
House of Jerathmeel Peirce [VI] . . . . .	226
Portrait of Ichabod Nichols [VI] . . . . .	228
“ Francis Cabot [VI] . . . . .	234
“ Mary (Leavitt) Orne [VI] . . . . .	234
“ Samuel Williams [VI] . . . . .	239
“ Mary (Williams) Pratt [VI] . . . . .	243
“ William Pratt [VI] . . . . .	244
“ Stephen Williams [VI] . . . . .	245
“ Loammi Baldwin [VI] . . . . .	247
“ Charles Williams [VI] . . . . .	249

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

xv

Portrait of Samuel Blanchard [VI] . . . . .	<i>to face page</i> 249
“ Samuel Pickering Gardner [VI] . . . . .	250
“ Rebecca Russell (Lowell) Gardner [VI] . . . . .	251
“ Sarah (Gool) Putnam [VI] . . . . .	252
“ Samuel Putnam [VI] . . . . .	253
House of Samuel Putnam [VI] . . . . .	254
Portrait of George Wingate [VI] . . . . .	256
“ John Pickering [VI] . . . . .	258
Houses of John and Henry Pickering [VI] . . . . .	261
Portrait of Henry Pickering [VI] . . . . .	263
“ Octavius Pickering [VI] . . . . .	265
“ Jane (Pratt) Pickering [VI] . . . . .	266
“ Elizabeth (Pickering) Dorsey [VI] . . . . .	269
House of Hammond Dorsey [VI] . . . . .	270
Portrait of Pickering Dodge [VI] . . . . .	273
“ Rebecca (Jenks) Dodge [VI] . . . . .	273
House of Pickering Dodge [VI] . . . . .	273
Portrait of John Stone [VI] . . . . .	274
“ Eliza (Dodge) Devereux [VI] . . . . .	275
“ Humphrey Devereux [VI] . . . . .	276
House of Humphrey Devereux [VI] . . . . .	277
Portrait of George Gardner Lee [VII] . . . . .	290
“ William Colman Lee [VII] . . . . .	292
“ Benjamin Carpenter [VII] . . . . .	293
“ Joseph Lee [VII] . . . . .	294
“ Henry Lee [VII] . . . . .	300
“ Edward West [VII] . . . . .	303
“ Elizabeth Gardner [VII] . . . . .	307
“ Esther O. (Paine) Cabot [VII] . . . . .	313
“ Catherine S. P. (Orne) Cushing [VII] . . . . .	314
“ Ichabod Tucker [VII] . . . . .	318
House of Ichabod Tucker [VII] . . . . .	318
Portrait of Harriet (Paine) Rose [VII] . . . . .	319
“ Joseph Warner Rose [VII] . . . . .	320
“ Harriet (Orne) Emerson [VII] . . . . .	332
“ Hubbard Emerson [VII] . . . . .	332
“ Sophia B. P. (Orne) Spencer [VII] . . . . .	333
“ Henry Prince [VII] . . . . .	333
“ William Ward [VII] . . . . .	337
“ Jonathan Goodhue [VII] . . . . .	344

Portrait of Catherine B. (Clarkson) Goodhue [VII]	<i>to face</i> page 346
“ Joseph Hardy Peirce [VII]	353
“ Ann (Peirce) Lathrop [VII]	355
“ Solomon Towne [VII]	368
“ George Nichols [VII]	380
House of George Nichols [VII]	381
Portrait of Betsey (Peirce) Nichols [VII]	382
“ Ichabod Nichols [VII]	383
“ William Ropes [VII]	388
“ John Bertram [VII]	402
“ Joseph Orne [VII]	410
“ Mary H. (White) Gile [VII]	411
“ Elizabeth L. (Payson) Goddard [VII]	412
“ Dudley Leavitt Pickman [VII]	414
House of Dudley Leavitt Pickman [VII]	414
Portrait of Theodore Lyman [VII]	418
“ Mary E. (Henderson) Lyman [VII]	420
“ Charles Pickering [VII]	452
“ Mary J. (Dodge) Jenks [VII]	460
“ Lucy P. (Dodge) Allen [VII]	460
“ John Fiske Allen [VII]	461
House of John Henry Silsbee [VII]	463
Portrait of Lucy P. (Stone) Robinson [VII]	464
“ John Robinson [VII]	465
“ John Clarke Lee [VIII]	499
“ Harriet P. (Rose) Lee [VIII]	500
“ Henry Wheatland [VIII]	518
“ Bailey Loring [VIII]	520
“ Thomas Wren Ward [VIII]	554
“ Lydia (Gray) Ward [VIII]	555
“ Mary Orne Pickering [VIII]	677
“ Richard Saltonstall Rogers [VIII]	685

**THE PICKERING GENEALOGY.**



## THE NAME OF PICKERING IN ENGLAND.

---

**N**O connection between any family of Pickerings in England and John Pickering of Salem has as yet been established; and, in fact, no special effort has been made to discover such a connection. Hence this preliminary chapter is devoted simply to showing how the name of Pickering existed in England for several centuries before the settlement of this country, and to stating in a general way its position there to-day.

The derivation and meaning of surnames are generally matters of conjecture, and most of the books which attempt to explain them are unsatisfactory. In only two of these works have we found the name of Pickering mentioned. One of them, "The Norman People," gives Beckering and Pickering as having the same coats of arms. The different Beckering arms which Burke gives vary but slightly. One is chequy argent and gules, a bend sable. The same author gives several Pickering coats of arms, and only one of them is similar to this Beckering one. Mark Antony Lower says: "Some printers in recent times have imitated their typographical ancestors by the introduction of their rebus on titlepage. Some of Mr. Pickering's books have an antique device representing a 'pike and a ring.'" In his "Patronymica Britannica" he gives us no additional information. He merely says: "Pickering — A market town in the N(orth) R(iding) of Yorkshire. The name is widely spread over many counties, and there are about twenty coats assigned to it."

The name is doubtless territorial, as the prefix "de" shows. It is still continued in the market town of Pickering, where stand the ancient ruins of Pickering Castle. The town and castle have been described as follows:

"Pickering (which gives the name to the wapentake) is a small market and parish town, eight miles from Kirkby Moorside, and nineteen from Scarborough. The

market is held on Monday; and there are fairs on the Monday before February 14, Monday before May 13, September 25, and the Monday before November 23. In 1821 this town contained two thousand seven hundred and forty-six inhabitants.

"This town belongs to the duchy of Lancaster, having jurisdiction over several neighboring villages, called the honour of Pickering. It is a place of great antiquity, and formerly sent two members to parliament, but it no longer retains that privilege. The town is long and straggling, but is pleasantly situate on an eminence, at the bottom of which runs a brook called Pickering beck.

"The church, an ancient and spacious building, with a lofty spire, is dedicated to Saint Peter. Near the northern extremity of the town stands the castle, which is now in a very ruinous state; and part of the ground within the walls is converted into gardens. The brow of the hill commands a delightful view over the vale of Pickering, celebrated for its fertility. In the reign of King Henry III., William Lord Dacre was owner of this castle and lordship; it afterwards became the property of Edmund Plantagenet, second son of King Henry III., who was succeeded by his son, Thomas Plantagenet, Earl of Lancaster: in the tyrannic reign of Edward II. he was beheaded at Pontefract, in the year 1322. This manor and castle, with all its appendages were afterward given to the Lady Blanch, then the wife of John of Gaunt, duke of Lancaster. Richard II. was for some time imprisoned in the castle here, before his removal to Pontefract. This castle was of an irregular figure: in the first court were four towers, one of which was called Rosamond's tower; in the inner court were three towers, beside the keep, which stood on a circular mount, surrounded by a deep ditch. The whole of this once stupendous castle is now a mass of ruins. Pickering forest was an appurtenance to the castle, and was very extensive. There is here a subscription library, and an endowed free school. The town has an ancient honour court for the recovery of debts, and the trial of actions, where the matter in dispute does not exceed the value of 40s."<sup>1</sup>

Mention of this castle and forest is frequently made in ancient English records. In "Syllabus of Rymer's Fœdera," Vol. I. p. 67, is the following: "Henry III., Aug. 8, 1261, B. abp. of Canterbury sends a copy of a bull of pope Alex. (IV.) by which he excommunicates Hugh le Bigod, unless he gives up the castles of Scarboro' and Pickering." On page 184, the name is again mentioned: "Oct. 6, 1314, commission to Robert de Pickeryng, dean of York and others, to treat with the ambassadors of Robert de Brus, respecting a truce."

It seems highly probable that the Pickering family derived its name

<sup>1</sup> A New and Complete History of the County of York, by Thomas Allen, Vol. 6, pp. 262-264.

from this town of Pickering; perhaps it originated here. However this may be, Pickering is certainly a name of great antiquity, and was borne by a family whose services and alliances were most important. Like most surnames, it has been variously spelled, but rarely, if ever, in such a way that it could be mistaken for any other name. In early works the "c" is generally omitted, and the name is commonly written Pikering, Pykering, Pykeryng, or something resembling one of these three.

Many publications of the Public Record Office of Great Britain have been examined, and it is found that in most of them the name appears to be both that of a place and of an individual.

It is unnecessary for our purpose to give all the passages where the name occurs, but a few are cited.

In 1203, Robert de Pickering appears in the Charter Rolls.

"*Abbreviatio Rotulorum Originalium*," (Edw. I.) Vol. I. p. 133, gives Magr Wills de Pykering, and in the second volume of the same work several others of the name appear.

"*Taxatio Ecclesiastica*," taken about 1291; "*Rotuli Litterarum Patentium*" (Edw. I.); and the Hundred Rolls (Edw. I.) abound in the name.

Thomas de Pikering, Chivaler, is found in "*Calendarium Inquisitionum Post Mortem*" (Edw. III.); and the name of Pickering occurs in many other places in the various records of this character. In one of these works, "*The Parliamentary Writs*," under the head of Alphabetical Digest, Vol. I. p. 782, and Vol. II. pp. 1290-1291, we find several persons of the name, viz. :

1324. Adam de Pikering, Bailiff of the Liberty of Scarborough. 17 Ed. II.

1311. John de Pikering, Citizen returned for Canterbury-Parliament at London.

1313. John Pikering Manuceptor of Johannes de Vyuonia, Knt of the Shire, ret'd for Wilts, 6 Ed. II.

1313. John de Pikering obtains a pardon, as an adherent of the Earl of Lancaster for his participation in the death of Gavaston and the disturbance occasioned thereby. Tested at Westm' 16 Oct. 7 Ed. II.

1316. Richard de Pikering . . . certified, pursuant to writ tested at Clipston, 5 March, as one of the Lords of the Township of Oswald Kirk and Lord of Ampleforth, in the County of York 9 Ed. II.

1314. Roger de Pikering, Burgess returned to Parliament for Leicester.

1318. Roger de Pikering as one of the adherents of Thomas, Earl of Lancaster,

obtains a pardon for all felonies and trespasses committed by him up to the 7th August then last. Tested at York I Nov. 12. Ed. II.

1301, 2, 5, 7. William de Pikering summoned to Parliament.

1307. Ambassador to Rome; canon of Cathedral of Lincoln.

1294. Thomas de Pikering, Assessor and Collector in the County of Westmorland;

1300. Returned from the Wapentake of Herthill in the county of York, as holding lands or rents either in Capite or otherwise to the amount of £40 yearly value, and upwards, and as such summoned under the general writ to perform military service against the Scots.

1309. Commanded to repair to his demesnes in the Marches in order to defend the same against the Scots.

1312. Summoned to appear before the King at York to treat upon certain arduous affairs.

1312. Summoned to meet the King at Pontbell or Battle Bridge to do and perform what should be then and there enjoined.

1316. Certified as one of the Lords of the Township of Ellerton<sup>1</sup> in the County of York.

Robert de Pikering (Magister Robertus de Pikering, Pykering, Pykeryngg) was summoned to Parliament from the year 1301 to 1325, almost continuously. In 1302, March 18, he was summoned to give counsel on the King's affairs.

1305. "One of the Canons of the Cathedral of York . . . the King addresses a writ to the Chapter, requesting that he may be excused from residence whilst attending the 'Council' in London." The same year summoned to appear at the Exchequer at York prepared and ready to proceed as the King's Ambassador to the Court of Rome.

1307. One of the Canons of the Cathedral of Lincoln, appears as the Procurator of the Chapter at Parliament at Carlisle.

1322. Robert de Pikering, a townsman of Cambridge charged with having joined in the great riot against the University. Special commission of oyer and terminer issued for trying him. Tested at York 18 May, 15 Ed. II.

From these sources and the county histories it would appear that the name of Pickering at this early period was confined to the northern counties. In fact, at no time have we found the name prevailing in the south of England.

The following accounts are extracts from the county histories of England.

<sup>1</sup> In 1419, the family seat was still at Ellerton, for Thomas Palmes, Esq., in that year married a daughter of John Pickering, Esq., of Ellerton. (Burke's Commoners, Vol. I. p. 612.)

THE RUINS OF PICKERING CASTLE,  
YORKSHIRE, ENGLAND.



The History of Westmorland and Cumberland states that,—

“Killington and Firbank were anciently one manor. The latter was not so-called as having heretofore been planted with fir-trees; for the ancient name of it universally was Frithbank.”

“In the reign of king Edward the first we find one William de Frithbank a juror on several inquisitions *post mortem* of the Talebois family: But the manor at the same time was in the name and family of Pickering. The first of the name of Pickering that came to Killington, was William de Pykeringe, son of Thomas, in the reign of king Henry the third. For in the 44th year of that king, Peter de Brus the third, grants to William de Pykeringe the manor of Killington: To hold to the said William and his heirs and to his assigns (except Jews and religious persons), of him the said Peter and his heirs in fee with all the game thereof and other appurtenances whatsoever. Saving to him the said Peter, during his life, freedom of chase for himself or his men, at their pleasure, within the boundaries of the said manor; yet so, that neither he nor any for him shall have entry into the inclosed grounds to make chase. Rendering for the same yearly a pair of gilt spurs, or sixpence, at the Feast of Pentecost; and doing service of the 20th part of one knight's fee when occasion shall be, for all services, suits of court, and other customs. He grants moreover to the said William, his heirs and assigns, that they shall have the same liberty in pursuing the game out of the boundaries of Killington as far as the limits of that part of the forest of the Hay, which belongs to Walter de Lindesay and in driving back the same with their men and dogs, which he, the said Peter himself, had: So nevertheless that they shall claim no such liberty in the said Peter's part of the forest of the Hay.”

Then follows a genealogy of the Pickering family. The Pickering arms are given as ermine, a lion rampant azure, crowned or.<sup>1</sup>

The following condensed account is taken from the History of Northamptonshire:<sup>2</sup>

William Earl of Worcester in seventh year of Edward VI. having obtained a fresh grant of the manor of Tichmersh sold it with the advowsons of Tichmersh and Aldwinckle to Gilbert Pickering, and to John, James, and Boniface, sons of the said Gilbert. In the thirty-third year of Queen Elizabeth died John Pickering, Esq.

<sup>1</sup> The History and Antiquities of the Counties of Westmorland and Cumberland, by Joseph Nicolson, Esq., and Richard Burn, LL.D. Vol. I. pp. 261–263. Page 498 gives an account of the Pickering family of Crosby.

<sup>2</sup> The History and Antiquities of Northamptonshire, compiled from the manuscript collection of the late learned antiquary, John Bridges, Esq., by the Rev. Peter Whalley. Vol. II. pp. 383–387.

Gilbert Pickering descended from an ancient and respectable family in the county of Westmorland. He was second son to John Pickering of Gretton in this county, second son of Sir James Pickering of Wynunderwater, Knt.

Gilbert Pickering held employment under the Lord Treasurer Burleigh.

On the north side of the chancel of the church of Tichmersh the principal burial place of the Pickerings, are several monumental inscriptions to members of the family. Against the north wall is a monument to Sir John Pickering, of Tichmersh, Knt. who died in the year 1627 on which it says "Here are also interred diverse of the lineal ancestors of the first named Sir John." "This monument was erected in the year 1698 by the last named Sir John Pykering in memory of his pious ancestors and relations who (according to the direction of the Holy Apostle) were rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate. St. Paul to Timothy." There is also a monument "In memory of the late Reverend and Learned Theophilus Pickering, D.D." who died 20 March 1710. It bears a long inscription, setting forth his good works. He was son of Sir Gilbert Pickering, Bart.<sup>1</sup>

The following account is taken from "The Topographer and Genealogist" from which it appears that a family of Pickerings located at Charleston, S. C., were descended from the occupants of Thelwall Manor.

"The Pickerings who were next in possession of the manor of Thelwall were of a very ancient descent in the county of Chester, and appear to have been from time immemorial landed proprietors in that palatinate. In the reign of Queen Elizabeth they were settled at Walford in the parish of Runcorn which had long been the seat of their ancestors, and the names of members of the family for successive generations will be found in the early registers at Daresbury."

After reciting the pedigree at length, the account goes on :—

"John Pickering, Esq., elder son and heir was born in 1645 and was entered a student of Gray's Inn, anno 1664. He was shortly after called to the Bar by that Society, but succeeding to an ample fortune did not long continue in practice."

"His third son was Danby of London, merchant and had numerous issue."

A foot-note adds the following account of Danby's children :—

"Several of his sons went out in early life and settled in North America. One of them, Samuel Pickering, died a merchant at Charlestown, South Carolina, in 1737.

<sup>1</sup> See a pedigree of the family of Gilbert Pickering in A Genealogical and Heraldic History of the Commoners of Great Britain and Ireland by John Burke. Vol. II. pp. 191-195.

Another member of the same branch of this family, Joseph Pickering, Esq. died shortly after his return from South Carolina in 1757. There is the following memorial to him in Whippingham church-yard near East Cowes, Isle of Wight: 'Here rest the remains of Mr. Joseph Pickering, merchant, who died at Southampton, 21st July, 1757, aged 36 years. And was interred at this place, at his own request, a few weeks after his arrival from Charlestown, South Carolina, where many years he conducted business with credit to himself, integrity to his friends and emolument to his family. In remembrance of his social and domestic virtues this stone is inscribed by his afflicted widow.' The last survivor of this branch of the family was Michael Pickering of Stepney, brother of the last named Joseph."<sup>1</sup>

From Smith's "Old Yorkshire" we make the following abstract: —

About half way between Leeds and Dewsbury, Yorkshire, stands Tingley Hall. Just beyond the fence wall separating the Park from the road is Tingley Burial Ground, which more than two centuries ago belonged to a small body of Congregational Dissenters or Independents who worshipped in a chapel at Topcliffe. The chapel was built and given to the Independents by Mr. John Pickering, son of Captain Thomas Pickering, an old Republican officer who lived in the neighborhood. In addition to the gift of the chapel it is said that Mr. Pickering gave a handsome piece of ground at Tingley for a burial place, and had wholly, or partly, built a wall round it at his own expense. The church records connected with the Independents at Topcliffe are preserved in manuscript and commence Feb. 5, 1658, evidently indicating the society's origin.

Among the chief heads of families of the society at Topcliffe, of which there were about thirty, was Captain John Pickering, whose death is thus recorded in the Register of Topcliffe as quoted in "Old Yorkshire."

"1699. Our hond. elder Mr. John Pickering (who built the burying place) dyed about 4 in ye afternoon and was buried in the 75th year of his age. — Apl. 22."

"Thoresby in his diary records: — 'Pastor Elston was married in 1685 to Miss Mary Pickering, grand-daughter of Captain Thomas Pickering, an old Republican Officer.'<sup>2</sup>

From "The Registers of Topcliffe and Morley" we make the following quotations: —

"The Church met for worship in Topcliffe Hall, then inhabited by Captain Pickering, a person in whom Cromwell expressed great confidence."

"Here lyeth interred the bodi of Captain John Pickering who died the 18th of April, 1699, in the year of his age 75, and also of Deborah his wife who died Novem-

<sup>1</sup> The Topographer and Genealogist, Vol. I. pp. 441-453, by John Gough Nichols.

<sup>2</sup> Old Yorkshire, edited by William Smith, Vol. I. pp. 106, 108.

ber 5th, 1698 in the 70 year of her age, daughter to Horatio Eure, Esquire, and sister to the Right Honourable Lords G. and R. Eure.' (The fine parchment pedigree of the Lords Eure, with special reference to the Pickerings of Tingley, the Heskeths, and the Swaines, is preserved at Brabounef Manor, Guildford.)"

"Here lyeth interred the body of Robert Pickeringe Preacher of the Gospell att Morley who accounted himself the meanest servant in the work of Christ, who departed this life October the 11th 1680. Master of Art, Sidney College, Cambridge.'"<sup>1</sup>

It would be natural to look for scions of so prolific a stock in London; and we find that it flourished there at least one hundred years before the emigration to New England; also, at that period and later, the name frequently appears in the parish registers of London, printed by the Harleian Society. The Visitation of London gives a brief pedigree of one branch of the family.

The following abstracts of English Wills are interesting, one of which gives three well-known Salem names, and the other shows that there was an Edward Pickering in London who was interested in New England, and who had a son John Pickering whose birth must have taken place about the time of our John Pickering's birth, which was in 1615.

"Thomas Gardener, citizen and grocer of London; 28 Aug. 1590, proved 24 Oct. 1590; wife Katherine, cosen John Gardener, sons Thomas, Christopher and Jeremy, cosen Richard Grafton, Henry Pickering and others. Drury L. 69."<sup>2</sup>

"EDWARD PICKERINGE, 1 July 1623, proved 26 August 1623. To my loving and dear wife Mary Pickeringe eight hundred pounds. To my dear and tender father John Pickeringe one hundred and fifty pounds, to be kept in the hands of my executors &c. and disposed of for his benefit. I give unto my dear child John Pickeringe, my first born son, three hundred pounds. Similiar bequests to daughters Sinseare and Mary Pickeringe. To Francis Stubb my brother in law fifty pounds.

"Item, I giue unto that hopefull worke begunn in Newe England, to be employed and layed out for the benefitt and helpinge ouer those Englishe people whoe dwell in Laydon thether with the first fittie poundes.' To Randall Thickers, my loving friend, ten pounds. To certain friends here in London ten pounds (if the accounts prove overplus). The residue to be divided equally into five equal portions to be distributed between my wife, my father and my three children. I appoint my friends

<sup>1</sup> The Registers of Topcliffe and Morley, in the West Riding of the County of York, edited by William Smith, pp. 4, 6, 50.

<sup>2</sup> Gleaning from English Records, by Emmerton and Waters, Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. XVII. p. 40.

Mr. James Sherley and Mr. Richard Androwes for executors and my good friend and brother Mr. Thomas White and Mr. John Stubbe for overseers. Swann, 86.”<sup>1</sup>

At the present time, the name in England seems to be widely spread. The London Directory for 1885 gives forty-one persons of the name of Pickering, twenty-eight under the head of “Commercial” and thirteen under the head of “Court.” The Boston Directory for 1892 gives thirty-seven persons of the name.

The return for 1872 and 1873 of the owners of land in England and Wales,<sup>2</sup> a work intended to show the number and names of owners of land, whether built upon or not, in each county, with the estimated acreage and annual gross estimated rental of the property belonging to each owner, etc., contains the names of eighty-four landholders by the name of Pickering in England and Wales; also two in Scotland, and three in Ireland.

None of these are large landholders, the largest owning four hundred and forty-five acres, and the smallest, one acre.

It is an interesting fact that the northern counties, as in ancient times, continue to be the home of the name; for there are none mentioned in this work who hold land in Cornwall, Devon, Dorset, Essex, Hereford, Kent, Monmouth, Salop, Somerset, Surrey, Sussex, Wilts, or Worcester. Yorkshire heads the list with twenty-eight proprietors.

<sup>1</sup> The New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol. XLIX. pp. 369-370.

<sup>2</sup> Return of Owners of Land in England and Wales [exclusive of the Metropolis], Vols. I. and II.; Vol. III. Scotland; Vol. IV. Ireland.

## PICKERING COATS OF ARMS IN ENGLAND AND AMERICA.

THE first approach to heraldry that we have been able to find in the Pickering family of Salem, is on the will of John Pickering [1-70. III. 1], a grandson of the original settler. His will was proved July 19, 1722, and is signed and sealed by him. The impression of the seal is an excellent one, and shows a lion rampant, the well-known device of the Pickerings. The heliotype here given, was taken from the original will which is on file among the Essex County Probate Records in Salem. No impression of a date earlier than 1722 has been found, which may be explained by the scarcity of original papers on which a seal would be used, and therefore we cannot determine whether it belonged to a former generation or not.

The next knowledge we have on this subject is from a correspondence between Colonel Timothy Pickering [58. V. 24] and the Rev. Joseph Pickering, of Wickham, near Fareham, Hampshire, England, in which the latter inquired whether their ancestry was the same, and whether they bore the same arms and crest. Colonel Pickering replied to this letter as follows:—

“Theophilus<sup>1</sup> lived a bachelor and died in 1747, when I was two years old. He was critically exact in all his affairs and notices of things. He left (I believe his own drawing) what have been considered the family arms, — a lion rampant, in a field ermine, with a helmet for a crest. Such is my recollection of the arms; for the drawing remains at Salem. We pay little regard to these matters which are of no use amongst us, unless to trace family connections and distinguish seals. There has been a tradition in the family that our first American ancestor came from Yorkshire. Perhaps this circumstance with the detail I have given, may enable you to communicate more accurate information of my ancestry than, in this country, we have the power to acquire.”

<sup>1</sup> For an account of Theophilus [48. IV. 8], see p. 75 of this work.

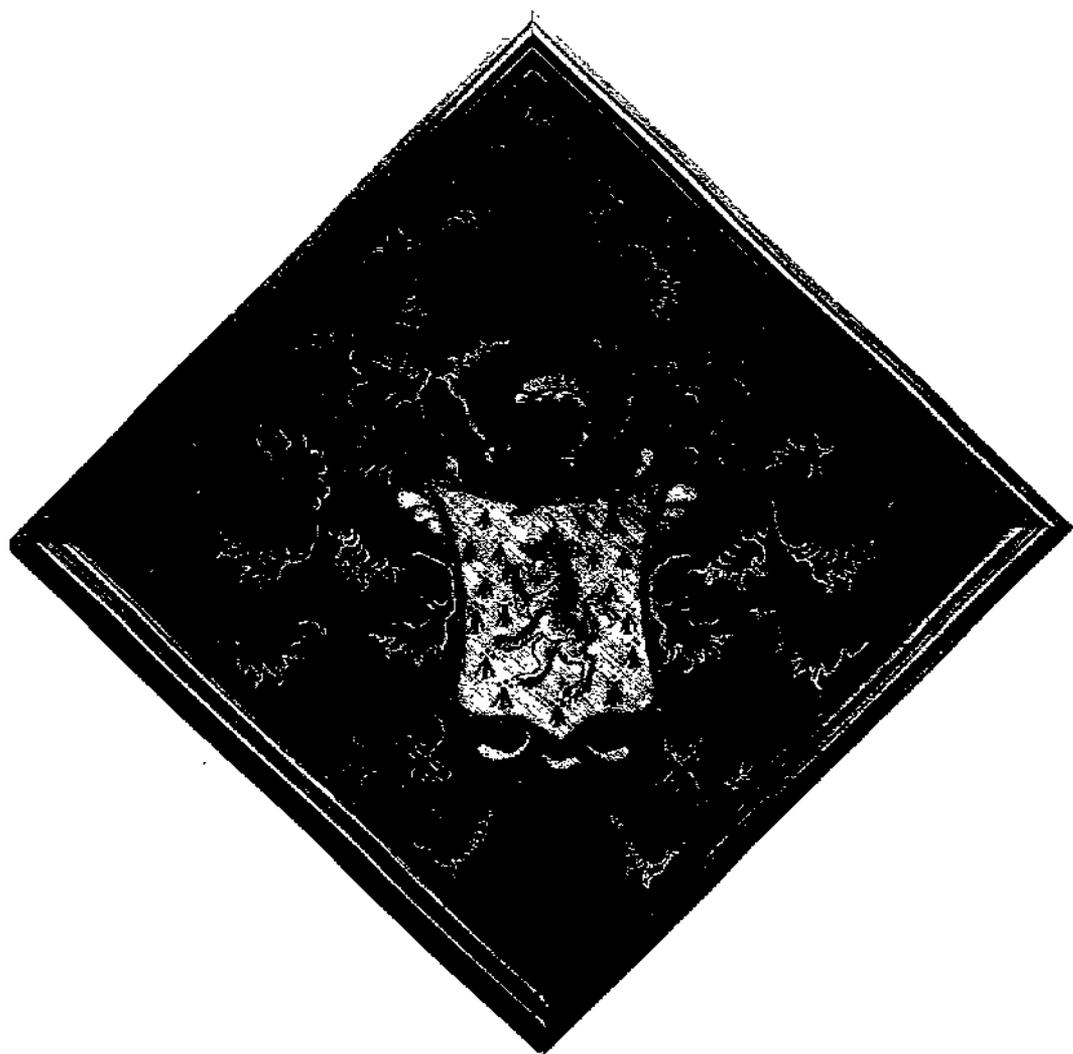
THE SEAL OF JOHN PICKERING.

[1-70. III. 1.]

FROM HIS ORIGINAL WILL IN THE ESSEX COUNTY PROBATE RECORD OFFICE,  
SALEM, MASS.

In this my will  
I constitute my Executors  
to be my Executors  
I do hereby give  
my Will and Testament  
the year of our Lord  
This Will was signed sealed  
and declared by John Pickett  
Last Will and Testament, In presence of  
Joshua Hich's  
Robert Peaves  
Thomas Rich  
John Pickett

Witness my hand  
this 15th day of November In  
the year of our Lord  
1785



THE PICKERING COAT OF ARMS.

FROM AN EMBROIDERY WROUGHT BY SARAH PICKERING [48. V. 17], IN  
1755, NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF JOHN PICKERING, ESQ., SALEM, MASS.

In his reply of June 30, 1797, the Rev. Mr. Pickering wrote as follows:—

“Your arms and mine are exactly similar, and that circumstance I consider proof enough. Our Crests are different, but that is not material, since crests, the heralds tell us, are mere matters of caprice and fancy and may be varied at pleasure, and therefore are never allowed to be of any weight in the tracing of pedigrees.”<sup>1</sup>

The Rev. Mr. Pickering was right in his remarks upon crests; but Colonel Pickering fell into an error when he called the helmet on his shield a crest. The helmet is not a crest. Its use is entirely optional, and it should never be mentioned in a blazon of arms. Its place is between the shield and the crest, resting upon the shield. In early times, before the general use of crests, the shield was usually surmounted by a helmet.

The next example, which is reproduced here, bears the date of 1753. It is a Pickering coat of arms embroidered by Sarah (Pickering) Clarke [48. V. 17], a niece of the Rev. Theophilus Pickering. Possibly this piece of work was made by her from the drawing before mentioned. Her name, with the date of 1753, is embroidered beneath the shield. No crest is given. This coat of arms is still hanging in the entry of the old Pickering house in Salem. There is still another example of these arms, in the form of a hatchment, which was probably worked by Abigail (Pickering) Baldwin [70. V. 32], a cousin of Sarah Pickering, and from whom it descended to her niece Hannah (Pickering) Simonds [69. VI. 141], and from her to her daughter Hannah M. (Simonds) Clark, of Lynn, in whose possession it was a few years ago.

There are also several seals engraved, with arms and crests, now in the possession of Henry Pickering [58. VII. 334], of Boston. The oldest of these, which from its antique and quaint design may antedate the embroideries, is a silver seal engraved ermine, a lion rampant, crest a demi-lion. This seal is attached by a ribbon to a silver watch which belonged to Henry Pickering's grandfather, Colonel Timothy Pickering. It was used by Colonel Pickering to seal his letters, and impressions from it are still on the letters addressed to his wife. This watch is in fine order, and on the inside of it is engraved the maker's name:—“Pitt, London, No. 946.” A heliotype of the watch and seal is here given.

<sup>1</sup> For this correspondence, see *The Life of Timothy Pickering*, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. III. pp. 303-306.

Another of the seals is of carnelian set in gold, and bears the crest a demi-lion, under which is the monogram of Henry Pickering [58. VI. 111]. Another carnelian seal set in gold is cut with the Pickering arms quartering those of White, and with both the Pickering and White crests. A later carnelian seal set in gold bears the crest a demi-lion, and the monogram of Octavius Pickering, Henry Pickering's father.

John Pickering [58. VI. 109] had his bookplates engraved ermine, a lion rampant, while his brother Henry Pickering had for his bookplate a crest of a demi-lion, with his name underneath. Several of these last plates are owned by Henry Pickering [58. VII. 334], and books containing the bookplates of John Pickering are now in possession of the latter's son, Henry White Pickering, of Boston.

The numerous Pickering coats of arms which appear in Burke's General Armory<sup>1</sup> are given below : —

“PICKERING (Tichmarsh, co. Northampton; descended from Gilbert Pickering, esq., who purchased the manor of Tichmarsh, *temp.* Elizabeth, from William, Earl of Worcester. Gilbert, who was son of John Pickering, of Gretton, and grandson, by Margaret his wife, dau. and heir of Lascells of Esrick, co. York, of James Pickering of Winderwath, co. Westmoreland, *m.* Elizabeth, dau. of John Stanbank, and was great-grandfather of Sir Gilbert Pickering, of Tichmarsh, created a Baronet of Nova Scotia). Quarterly, first and fourth, erm. a lion ramp. az. crowned or, for PICKERING; second and third, ar. three chaplets gu. for *Lascells*. *Crest* — a lion's gamb erect and erased az. armed or.

“PICKERING. (Old Lodge and Clapham, co. Surrey; as borne by EDWARD ROWLAND PICKERING, of Old Lodge, esq. son of the late Edward Lake Pickering, of the Exchequer Office, Temple, esq., by Mary his wife, only dau. and heir of William Umfreville, esq. a lineal descendant of the ancient baronial family of Umfreville). Erm. a lion ramp. az. armed gu. crowned or, quartering UMFREVILLE, MERES, and WELD. *Crest* — A lion's gamb erect and erased az.

“PICKERING. The same *Arms*. *Crest*, A lion's gamb coupéd az.

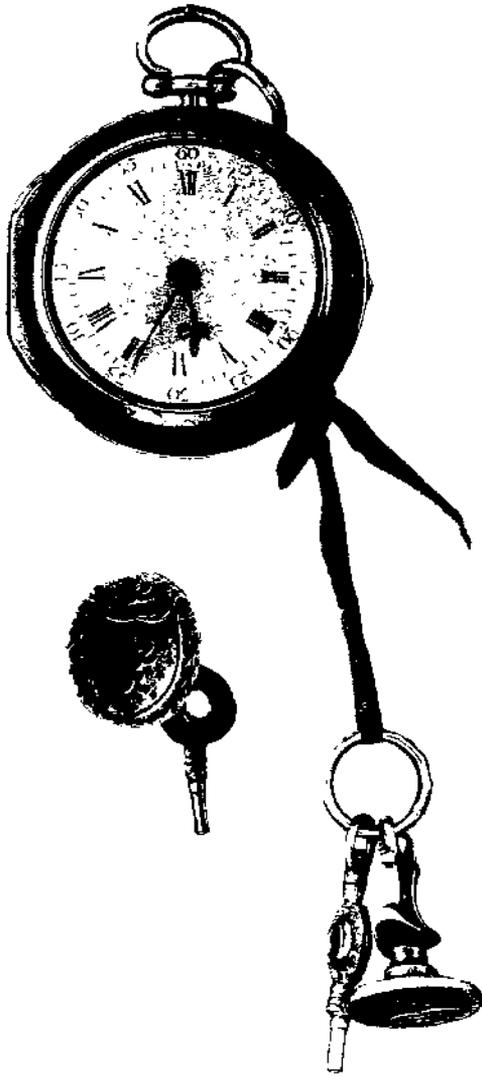
“PICKERING (Wailford, co. Chester). Erm. a lion ramp. az. crowned or, within a bordure of the second, charged with eight plates. *Crest* — A lion's gamb erect and erased az. enfiled with a ducal coronet or.

<sup>1</sup> Encyclopædia of Heraldry or General Armory of England, Scotland, and Ireland, by John Burke, Esq., and John Bernard Burke, Esq. Third Edition with a Supplement, London, 1844.

THE SILVER WATCH AND ARMORIAL SEAL OF  
TIMOTHY PICKERING.

[58. V. 24]

NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF HENRY PICKERING, ESQ., OF BOSTON.



"PICKERING (Cheshire and Yorkshire). Gu. a fesse ar. fretty az. betw. six annulets or.

"PICKERING (Paxton, co. Huntingdon). The same *Arms* as of Tichmarsh.

"PICKERING (Alkmonbery, co. Huntingdon). Gu. a fish naiant in fesse, betw. three annulets ar.

"PICKERING (Northamptonshire). Or, a fesse, per fesse crenellée, gu. and az. betw. three cock's heads erased vert, combed and wattled of the second.

"PICKERING (Nottingham). Gu. on a chev. betw. three fleurs-de-lis or, as many hurts.

"PICKERING (Nottinghamshire). Gu. on a chev. ar. betw. three fleurs-de-lis or, as many pellets. *Crest* — A leopard's head or.

"PICKERING (Tablehurst and East Grinstead, co. Sussex). The same *Arms* and *Crest*, as of Tichmarsh; on the arms a crescent on a crescent for diff.

"PICKERING (Whaddon, co. Cambridge; as borne by Sir HENRY PICKERING, who purchased the manor of Whaddon in 1648, and was created a Baronet 2 January, 1660-1). As PICKERING of Tichmarsh.

"PICKERING (Thorpe's Lodge, Yorkshire). Erm. a lion ramp. az. crowned or. *Crest* — A lion's gamb erased and erect az. armed or.

"PICKERING (Yorkshire). Gu. on a chev. betw. three fleurs-de-lis or, as many ogresses.

"PICKERING. Or. (another, ar.) a lion ramp. sa. within a bordure gu. bezantée.

"PICKERING. Gu. a chev. between three fleurs-de-lis or. *Crest* — A fleur-de-lis or.

"PICKERING (Threlkeld, co. Cumberland). Erm. a lion ramp. az.

"PICKERING (Hartford, near Northwich, co. Chester). Erm. a lion ramp. az. ducally crowned or. *Crest* — A demi-griffin sa. beaked and membered ar. grasping a wheat-sheaf or.

"PICKERING (Coram, in Coverdale, co. York; now represented by WILLIAM HENRY PICKERING, esq. Captain in the Royal Artillery). Gu. on a chev. betw. three fleurs-de-lis or, three annulets sa. *Crest* — A lion's gamb erect and erased az.

"PICKERING. Ar. a lion ramp. az. ducally crowned or. *Crest* — A sword erect ppr. hilt and pomel or, within two branches of laurel, disposed in orle, vert.

"PICKERING. Ar. a lion ramp. az. crowned or.

"PICKERING. Gu. a fesse ar. betw. six annulets or. (Another adds, on the fess an ogress.)

"PICKERING. Chequy ar. and gu. a bend sa.

"PICKERING. Gu. on a chev. ar. betw. three fleurs-de-lis or, as many hurts.

"PUCKERING (Weston, co. Hertford and Warwickshire), sa. a bend fusily cotised ar. *Crest* — A buck ramp. (another courant) or.

"PUCKERING (Flamborough, co. York; confirmed 26 June, 1579). Sa. a bend of lozenges betw. two bendlets ar.

"PUCKERING. Sa. five fusils in bend cotised ar."

## OTHER SETTLERS OF THE NAME OF PICKERING.

IT is well-known that the Salem family of Pickering was not the only one of that name to establish itself in this country. While John Pickering resided at Salem, another John Pickering was living in Portsmouth, N. H., of whose family the late Mr. R. H. Eddy printed a small and very incomplete genealogy, in which the opinion is given that they were in all probability cousins. We do not know the basis of his opinion, as he gives no reason for it. We have never met with any traditions or documents that indicate such a relationship. In that genealogy, it is stated that John Pickering came to Portsmouth from Massachusetts, in 1633. There was a John Pickering, of Cambridge, Mass., who by his wife Mary had a daughter Lydia, born Nov. 5, 1638; and also one John Pick who by his wife Mary had a daughter Abigail, born April 22, 1642. Pick and Pickering are thought to be different forms of the same name. Savage thinks that he was identical with John Pickering, of Portsmouth, who, he states, was in that town in 1635, and may have been there as early as 1630. This seems possible, as the name disappears from Cambridge after the birth of this child of 1642.

There was, in Watertown, a John Pickeram or Pickram, husband of Esther Pickeram, buried Dec. 10, 1630, aged 60, and Jane, daughter of the same, buried Dec. 13, 1630, and John, son of same, buried July 6, 1639. Esther Pickeram was a proprietor in 1636-7. George Pickeram was a proprietor in 1642. Sept. 1, 1646, George Pickeram, of Watertown, and Esther his mother, sold to Joshua Stubbs and Abigail Benjamin, his mother-in-law, a house and 16 acres, and other lots of land. They probably soon left Watertown, for their names were not found there in the division of land in 1652. Savage thinks this may be the same as Pickering, which seems

plausible.<sup>1</sup> Perhaps the John Pickeram who died at Watertown, in December, 1630, was the same man who was sentenced, Sept. 28, 1630, to sit in the stocks at Salem. In 1630, our John Pickering was but fifteen years old, and was probably still living in England; for he is not found here till 1634, when he was living in Ipswich, and appears not to have removed to Salem until 1637. The account of this case is as follows:—

“A Court of Assistants holden att Charlton 28<sup>th</sup> of Septemb<sup>r</sup>, 1630. It is ordered, that John Goulworth shalbe whipped, and afterwards sett in the stocks, for felony comitted by him, whereof hee is convicted by his owne confession; also, that Henry Lyn shalbe whipped for the like offence, & John Boggust & John Pickryn to sitt in the stocks 4 howers togeath<sup>r</sup>, att Salem, for being accessary therevnto.”<sup>2</sup>

These are the only instances of the name which we have found in New England at so early a period; and of these, apparently, John Pickering, of Portsmouth, and John Pickering, of Salem, were the only ones who founded permanent families.

In the Middle and Southern States, we find that the name existed at a somewhat later date. Sept. 17, 1689, a Charles Pickering, of Philadelphia, merchant, gave bond with Jane Bartholomew, widow and administratrix of George Bartholomew of Philadelphia.<sup>3</sup> One of the earliest attorneys of Philadelphia was a Pickering. In Charleston, South Carolina, as has been previously stated, there were Pickerings in the early part of the last century. In the island of Barbados, W. I., there was a family of the name of Pickering well settled in the parish of St. Lucy sometime before 1700. The name still exists in the West Indies. A descendant of this family, Rev. Joseph Pickering, of Wickham, Hampshire, England, corresponded with Colonel Timothy Pickering on the subject of family history, and claimed kinship when he found that the Salem family and his own used the same coat of arms.

<sup>1</sup> See the History of Cambridge, Mass., by Lucius R. Paige, p. 627; Genealogical Dictionary of New England, by James Savage; Genealogies of Watertown, by Henry Bond, p. 406.

<sup>2</sup> Records of the Governor and Company, of the Massachusetts Bay, in New England, 1628-1641, edited by Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, M.D., Vol. I., p. 77.

<sup>3</sup> The Bartholomew Genealogy, by G. W. Bartholomew, p. 426.

Of all the families mentioned, the two, originating at Portsmouth, and at Salem, have been the most prolific, the most important, and the most widely known. The Portsmouth family has been one of local importance for more than two centuries.

Although no relationship is known to exist between the two families, there was certainly a marked similarity in their names, their character, and their official and social standing.

The heads of the two families were both named John; both came to the towns of their choice at about the same time, and both acquired land by grant or purchase, part of which has continued in their families to the present day. Each had a son John who took a leading part in their respective towns. Both of these second Johns were officers in the militia and held a large number of town-offices by election of the citizens, while many of their descendants for several generations were noted for their strength of body and will, and for their remarkable longevity. The name of the Salem family has been given to Fort Pickering, Pickering School, and Pickering Street in Salem, and to Pickering Avenue and Pickering Place in Boston. There are several towns in the United States bearing this name, viz.: Pickering, Marshall Co., Iowa; Pickering, Nodaway Co., Missouri; Pickering, Chester Co., Pennsylvania; Pickerington, Fairfield Co., Ohio.

## FIRST GENERATION.

1-70. I. 1. **John Pickering**, the founder of the Pickering family in Salem, was born in England, in 1615, according to a record made in the family Bible of his grandson John Pickering. Tradition says that he came from Yorkshire, England. This is quite probable, but by no means certain. He is said to have been living in Ipswich, Mass., between 1634 and 1637. He was living in Salem in the early part of the year 1637, as we learn from the following entry in the Salem town records: "7 of 12 mo: 1636 [that is, Feb. 7, 1637] Jn<sup>o</sup>. Pickering, Carpenter granted to be inhabitant."<sup>1</sup> Shortly after this he was guilty of irregular action in fencing land without the consent of the authorities, as appears from the following: "17<sup>th</sup> of 2 mo: 1637 [April 17, 1637] That wheras Jn<sup>o</sup>. Pickering hath fensed in, a portion of the Towns Land [contrary] w<sup>th</sup>out Consent from y<sup>e</sup> Towne A fine of Twenty shillings therfore we think meet should be Levied vpon him, but being [a] full court [doth] not assent hearvnto: we therefore whose names ar[e here] vnderwrit doe ptest ageanst all disorderlie Lay[ing] out of Land in thes Limitts of Salem."<sup>2</sup> This method of acquiring land seems not to have been uncommon, for we find that other citizens, and even so prominent a man as Major William Hathorne, transgressed in the same way. At a town-meeting held in Salem on the 25th of the 10th month, 1637 [Dec. 25, 1637] it was agreed that the marsh and meadow land that had formerly laid in common to the town, should be appropriated to the inhabitants. John Pickering's name is in the list as the grantee of one-half an acre, and the number in his family is put down as two.<sup>3</sup> The 15th of the 3d month, 1639 [May 15, 1639], he requested a farm at the south end of the long pond, going to Lynn, which he received,<sup>4</sup> as the town records state that "8<sup>th</sup> of the 6<sup>th</sup> moneth 1639 [August 8, 1639] at a priuate towne meeting Graunted

<sup>1</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. IX. p. 35.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid. Vol. IX. p. 87.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. Vol. IX. p. 46.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. Vol. IX. pp. 61, 103.

to John Pickeringe 50 acres of land beyond the West pound lying next to Lin bownds to be layed out by the towne.”<sup>1</sup>

He had a grant of four poles of ground near his house the 29 of the 9th month, 1642 [Nov. 29, 1642],<sup>2</sup> and at a town-meeting held the 17th of the 10th month, 1649 [Dec. 17, 1649], it was ordered that: “Wheras good-man Pickerin left some pt of his ffarme by running of lin lyne it is ordered that the layers out shall lay out soe much as neare as they can adioyning to the rest of his land.”<sup>3</sup> He also acquired other land by purchase, as will appear later.

It has been seen that he was by trade a carpenter, which vocation he probably combined with agriculture. The only knowledge we have of his services as a builder is derived from the Salem town records, where we find a contract between him and the town for building a meeting-house in 1639. A facsimile of this contract is here given.

We suppose his work on the meeting-house was satisfactory, for we find him again employed by the town to keep the bridge in repair, as is shown in the following order:—

“At a generall Towne meeting held the XXV<sup>th</sup> of the first moneth 1644. [March 25, 1644.]

“It is ordered & agreed w<sup>th</sup> the consent of John Pickeringe that the Bridge shall be kept in repaire by John Pickeringe for sixteene yeares to come, for w<sup>ch</sup> the Towne is to giue him twentie shillings a yeare. excepting the finding of the planke or new planking thereof w<sup>ch</sup> is to be done at the chardge of the towne. but for the mending of any planks to sett in a plank twoe or three || as neede shall require ||, that is to be done at the chardge of John Pickeringe. And || it is ordered || that he shall be paid out of the rates yearly or allowed in his owne rate.”<sup>4</sup>

From the following it would seem that John Pickering did not always keep the bridge in a satisfactory state of repair.

“23 of the 11 mo 1645 [Jan. 23, 1646] Inioyned John Pickering forthw<sup>th</sup> to repayre the bridge.”<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. IX. p. 89.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. Vol. IX. p. 113.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. Vol. IX. p. 162.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid. Vol. IX. p. 127.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid. Vol. IX. p. 140.

THE AGREEMENT

MADE BETWEEN THE TOWN OF SALEM, MASS., AND JOHN PICKERING  
[1-70. I. I.] TO BUILD A MEETING-HOUSE.

FROM THE ORIGINAL TOWN RECORDS OF SALEM.

Agreement between the Town of Hoxton & Hoxton  
 the 4th day of the 12th January 1838.

That the said Town of Hoxton do hereby agree to build a meeting house of 25 feet long by 12 feet broad of the said building with a gallery adjoinable to the same. One altar & chimney of 12 feet long & 4 feet in height above the top of the building. The said meeting house is to be of brick or stone. The building is to have six sufficient windows. 2 on each side & 2 at the end. & a pair of stairs to ascend to the gallery adjoinable to the altar. The building is to be covered with iron & galvanized lead & the board you please to make use of. And all the work to be sufficiently finished with daubing & glazing & under-painting with stone or brick with paper & all things necessary by the said John Hoxton. In consideration whereof the said John Hoxton is to give 63<sup>l</sup> in money to be paid at 3 payments. The first payment 21<sup>l</sup> at the beginning of the work. The 2<sup>nd</sup> payment 21<sup>l</sup> when the frame is wanted. The 3<sup>rd</sup> payment 21<sup>l</sup> when it is to be paid at the finishing of the work. And it is agreed that if it be found by indifferent men that the said John Hoxton shall do or be found to do any thing contrary to the above said agreement or shall do or be found to do any thing which shall be to the detriment of the said meeting house or shall do or be found to do any thing which shall be to the detriment of the said town of Hoxton the said John Hoxton is to abate it. And the said John Hoxton is bound to finish it by the 15th day of the 4th month next ensuing the date hereof. In witness whereof the said John Hoxton has subscribed his name

John Hoxton

Jo: Endicott  
 Jo Woodbar  
 Will Hallam  
 Jameson Lynch  
 Peter & Smith

At a meeting held the 16th of the 12 month, 1645 [Feb. 16, 1646], it was generally agreed, "That the Timber bridge at the Townesend shalbe pulled downe, or so much of it as shall be needfull when the Causeway is begun to be made."<sup>1</sup> Probably the bridge was reconstructed, or a new one built, for on the 26th of the 8th month, 1646 [Oct. 26, 1646], the following order was passed: —

"It is ordered by the Towne that the eight pound & fowre shillings due from John Pickering in regard of his defect in building the old bridge & his agreemt vnder his hand to pay it to the building of the last bridge for w<sup>th</sup> hee hath giuen securitie A Bull & a Cow, The Towne doeth agree that the said Bull & Cow shall be sould forthwith || unless hee giue other satisfaction || to be prized by 3 indifferent men. The one to be chosen by the said Jo: Pickering & an other by the Towne & the third to be the marshall || to prize them. || & if the said Jo: Pickering refuseth to choose any, the Marshall is to choose one for him, & the Cattle to be deliuered into the hands of Mr. Garford & Mr ffogge.

"It is agreed that Thomas Wheeler shall worke at the bridge worke w<sup>th</sup> hee is contented to doe. & he is to haue 2<sup>s</sup> 6<sup>d</sup> a day till the bridge worke be ended if hee work so long. But the said Tho: Wheeler doeth binde himselfe to worke there 10 dayes together if wether will pmit & to begin vpon the sixth day of this weeke: & is to be paid in corne or cattle at the M<sup>c</sup>chants price."<sup>2</sup>

It would appear from the following extract from the memorandum-book of Colonel Timothy Pickering, that John Pickering at one time contemplated moving from Salem: —

"It rests on my mind, that when a boy my father told me that my first American ancestor (I mean the John Pickering who came from Old England) made a journey from Salem to Connecticut, with a view to find land for a plantation on which he might settle; but returning in the winter season, his feet and legs got frozen, which, rendering him a cripple for life, put an end to the project."<sup>3</sup>

The following statement in regard to the family estate is taken from the same memorandum-book: <sup>4</sup> —

<sup>1</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. IX. p. 141.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. Vol. IX. pp. 144-145.

<sup>3</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by his son Octavius Pickering, Vol. I. pp. 4-5.

<sup>4</sup> The following description of this memorandum-book is found on page 3 of the life of Colonel Timothy Pickering, by Octavius Pickering: "A brief account of the first settler and of his descendants, was collected by the subject of these Memoirs from various family

“The lot of land on which my brother [John Pickering] now dwells has for a long period belonged to the family.”<sup>1</sup>

Octavius Pickering, in the life of his father, Colonel Timothy Pickering, quotes the above passage from his memorandum-book, and adds the following foot-note:—

“It was purchased by the first settler (John Pickering) in 1642 who built upon it a wooden house, of which the frame is in part still standing and in a sound condition. J. P. It is now owned and occupied by John Pickering, a grandson of Colonel Pickering. O. P.”

This land was bought of Emanuel Downing. The original deed is still in possession of the Pickering family, and hangs in the old mansion. The heliotype which is here given, was taken directly from the deed. The story is told in Salem that the land was sold by Mr. Downing to pay for the Commencement Dinner of his son, Sir George Downing, who graduated

---

papers in the year 1793 and entered in a memorandum book kept by him.” This memorandum-book, or a copy of it, has been added to and annotated both by Colonel Pickering’s son Octavius, and his granddaughter Mary Orne Pickering. It is now at the old homestead in Salem. A copy has been made by Francis H. Lee [1. IX. 9], of Salem and annotated by him.

The original book is prefaced as follows:—

PHILADELPHIA, April 14, 1793.

“Family attachment, the interest we naturally take in Events relative to our ancestors — the curiosity (perhaps the vanity) we are disposed to indulge in tracing our descent, — and the gratification it may afford to my posterity, induce me to mark such simple facts relative to the family of which I am a member, as have come to my knowledge; though it will amount to little more than the noting of their births and deaths.

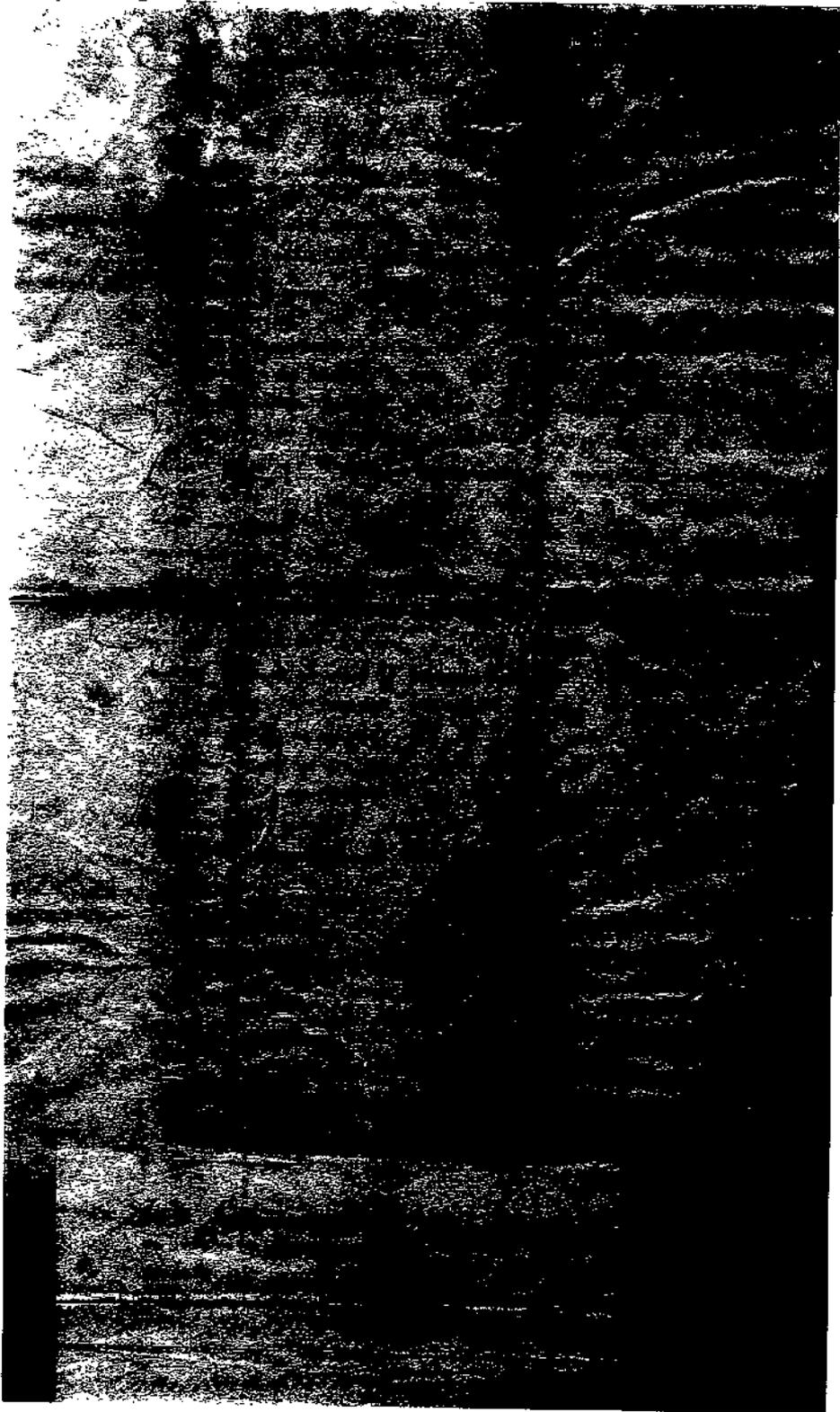
“TIMOTHY PICKERING.”

After a record of the births and deaths of John and Sarah (Burrill) Pickering’s children, it contains the following statement:—

“The preceding account of births marriages and deaths of my ancestors and their children I transcribed on the 24<sup>th</sup> of March 1763 on a loose paper from a manuscript of my uncle Theophilus Pickering who at the foot subjoined the following certificate ‘Copia Vera ab originalis bibliae patris inscripto a me Theophilo Pickering accurate deducta Septembris 23, 1719.’ From that loose paper I have taken the preceding account preserving accurately the dates.” See also Life of Timothy Pickering, by Octavius Pickering, Vol. I. p. 3.

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering by his son, Octavius Pickering, Vol. I. p. 5.

THE PICKERING DEED OF FEBRUARY 11, 1642-43.  
FROM THE ORIGINAL DEED, NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF JOHN PICKERING,  
ESQ., OF SALEM, MASS.



with the Class of 1642, the first class to graduate from Harvard College. The deed was not recorded till 1785.

The following account of the estate appears in a book of records which has been added to by several members of the family, and which is now in the possession of John Pickering [49. IX. 970], who occupies the Mansion.

“South of the Kitchen field and the Antrum lot, and fronting on Broad street from the land of Francis Lawes to Cotta's Lot, which was about two hundred feet west of Pickering street, was the homestead of John Pickering, of about five acres. The first house in which he lived when he bought the Broad field of Emanuel Downing, was near the site of the present dwelling, now occupied by John Pickering, Esq., his descendant in the seventh generation. This house now standing, is one of the most interesting relics of the past we have in the city, both from its having been always occupied by the same family, and on account of its well authenticated antiquity. The following is taken from an account of this house in a memorandum book, and was written by Col. Timothy Pickering, Dec. 3, 1828. After referring to another house, which his eldest sister, Sarah (Pickering) Clark, who died Nov. 21, 1826, in her 97th year, remembered as standing at a small distance eastward of the present house, Col. Pickering writes ‘I well remember that when I went to the woman's school, being then only six years old, my father raised the roof of the northern side of the present house and so made room for three chambers to accommodate his family, having then nine children. The roof according to the fashion of the time running down on the northern side so as to leave but one upright story. The windows were glazed with small panes, some diamond shaped, and the others small oblongs. These were all set in leaden strips, formed thin with grooves (by a machine made for the purpose) for the reception of the glass on which the lead was easily pressed close down. Where the lead crossed they were soldered together, and I perfectly remember seeing the glazier, Moore by name, setting the glass in the old windows in the manner here described. I remember hearing my father say, that when he made the alterations and repairs above mentioned, the eastern end of the house was one hundred years old, and the western end eighty years old, consequently the eastern end is now (Dec. 3, 1828) 177 years old; for I am 83 and was but six years old in July 1751, the year in which the alterations and repairs took place. I also remember hearing my father say, that, supposing the sills of the house must be decayed, he had provided new white oak timber to replace them; but that the carpenter when he ripped off the weather boards found the sills sound of swamp white oak; and the carpenter told him that they would last longer than any new sills that he could provide; and the same sills remain to this day.’

“At the southern side of broad field, a little eastward of the salt marsh, were many logs projecting beyond the low bank, manifestly the remains of a wharf, erected

when what is now the Mill Pond of the South Mills was a confluence of the South river.

“Jonathan Pickering, son of the first John conveyed in 1727 his portion of the homestead, being the eastern half part and consisting of an acre and a half, together with the dwelling house on it, in which he then lived, to his grand nephew Dea. Timothy Pickering. This house was no doubt the one remembered by Colonel Pickering’s sister Sarah. Deacon Timothy Pickering had five years before inherited the western part of the homestead, including the house now standing, from his father John, who was a grandson of the first John. There can be no doubt, therefore, that his statement of the age of the house was correct, according to which the eastern half of the house is now two hundred and eighteen years old, and the western part one hundred and ninety-eight years old. This is also confirmed by the records, particularly the commoners’ record, which shows that John Pickering was in 1714 allowed two rights ‘for his father’s house,’ that is the house in which his father had lived (the one now standing) was built before 1661. It also appears from the same record that Jonathan Pickering’s house (which stood to the east of the present house), was the same which one Deacon built before 1661.

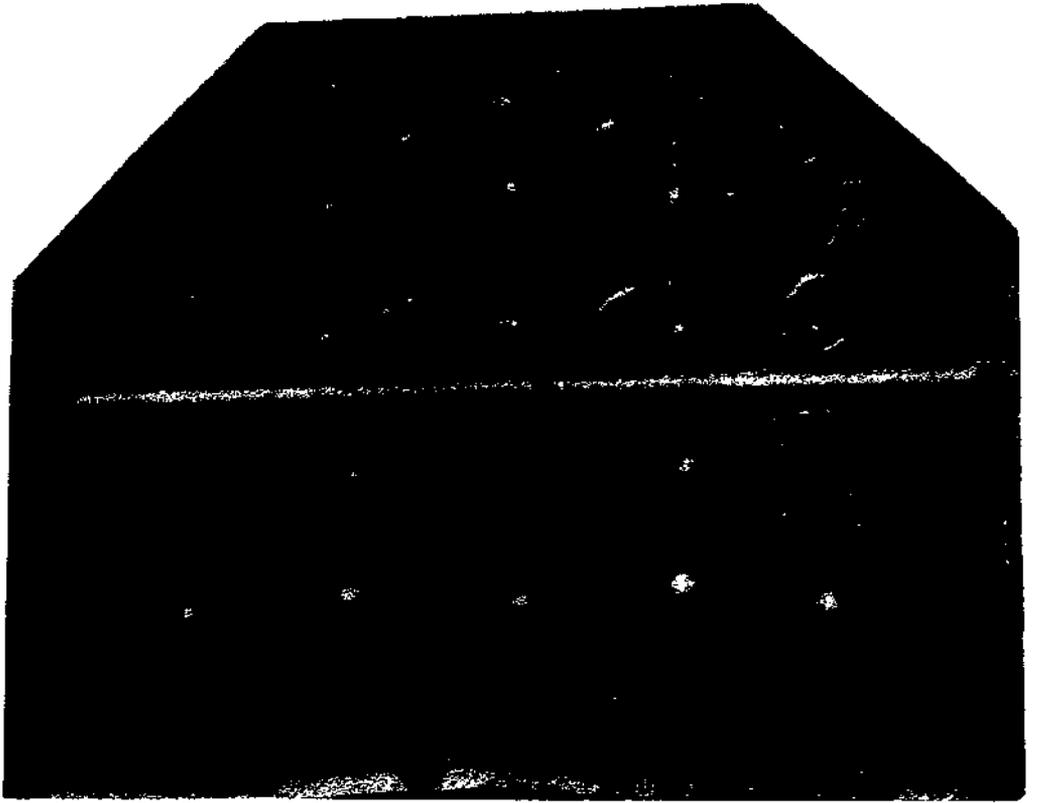
“The first John Pickering died in 1657, and his widow, Elizabeth, married John Deacon. The oldest son, John, remained in the house which his father built in 1651; while his mother and the younger son, Jonathan, removed to the new house which John Deacon built on that part of the homestead which was sett off to Jonathan. The mother died in 1662, and in 1671 the two brothers made a final settlement of the estate between them, at which time according to Deacon Pickering, the western part of the present house was built. In regard to the original house in which John Pickering lived previous to 1651, we have the following evidence in a deposition given by his grandson, showing that it was sold in 1663 or 1664 and removed to another place. On the Commoners’ Record for 1714, is entered one right to John Pickering ‘for his grandfather’s house,’ which shows that another house had stood on his land which had belonged to his grandfather, and was built before 1661. The following shows what became of it, and is also interesting in showing at what an early period houses were moved :

“‘The testimonie of John Pickering of full age saith to his certain knowledge the little house that was William Beenes was his father’s Cottage Right that is allowed to me.’

“‘He further saith that in the year 1663 or 1664 my father sold it to William Beens, and it was removed to that place with oxen. John Pickering.’

“William Beens lived where now is the corner of Boston street and the turnpike.

“Opposite the Pickering house and south of Broad street (which at first included the present cemetery and a strip of land west of it) was Broadfield, consisting of twenty acres, and extending from the Hathorne farm, the line of which corresponds



A PICKERING FIRE BACK.

FROM THE ORIGINAL ONE, FORMERLY BELONGING TO THE PICKERING HOUSE,  
AND NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF THE ESSEX INSTITUTE OF SALEM, MASS.

nearly with Phelps's Court, east and south to the South river, now the Mill Pond. This was at one time called the Governor's field. It was sold by Gov. Endicott to Emanuel Downing before 1640, as appears by a deed of mortgage on the Suffolk Records dated June 8, 1640, and acknowledged Dec. 20, 1644, by Emanuel Downing, of his mansion house at Salem with four acres more or less thereunto adjoining and twenty acres more purchased of Mr. Endicott lying upon South river.

"John Pickering subsequently came into possession of the Broadfield by virtue of a deed of indenture now in the possession of John Pickering, Esq., of which the following is a literal copy."

Then follows the copy, which we omit, and in its stead give a heliotype directly from the original deed, which is now in possession of John Pickering [49. IX. 970].

From the foregoing account, we get a very good idea of this ancient estate, the house of which was partly built in 1651, by John Pickering, and which was probably much larger and more comfortable than his previous dwelling, but which unhappily he lived to enjoy but a few years.

In this old house there were formerly two iron chimney-backs, one of which is still in the fire-place of the dining-room. The other is now at the Essex Institute, and it is from this that the heliotype here given was made. Both bear the date 1660, and the initial letters of John and Alice Pickering. These chimney-backs are thought by the family to have been cast at the foundery on the Saugus River in Lynn, which was the first foundery established in this country.<sup>1</sup>

The old mansion which at the present time (1894) is two hundred and forty-three years old, is among the most interesting relics of Salem architecture, and is still a comfortable and roomy dwelling, in excellent condition. In 1841, it underwent thorough repair and considerable alteration at the hands of John Pickering [58. VI. 109] of the sixth generation. He restored the former appearance of the roof, making changes in the ornamentation of the front and top of the roof.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See the History of Lynn, by Alonzo Lewis and James R. Newhall, p. 208.

<sup>2</sup> Joseph B. Felt, in his Annals of Salem, after describing several Salem houses of the same general character as the Pickering house, says: "Under the like class, we have the dwelling, situated in Broad street opposite to the western end of the burying hill. It occupies the pleasant premises, which once belonged to Emanuel Downing. It was built about 1650 by John Pickering who was its owner and whose descendants

The grounds now consist of about one and one-third acres of the original land, devoted to lawns and gardens, planted with shrubs and fine old trees, making it one of the most attractive residences in Salem. An additional charm to the place is the fact, that it has been continuously in the possession of the family from the first settler to the present John Pickering who is of the eighth generation in the male line and the ninth in the female line.

The interior is artistic in its furnishings, the walls being hung with old portraits of the family; and there is much antique furniture, a part of which was made by the Rev. Theophilus Pickering [48. IV. 8]. There is also an ancient oak table which is said to have been brought to this country by the first John Pickering. A heliotype of the East room is here given, showing this furniture.

The early death of John Pickering, in the year 1657, when he was little more than forty years old, leads us to suppose that his end was hastened by the injuries he sustained during his journey into Connecticut. His will is dated the 30th of the 5 mo. 1655 [July 30, 1655], and it was proved the 1st of the 5th mo. 1657 [July 1, 1657]. It reads as follows:—

In y<sup>e</sup> name of god Amen I Jn<sup>o</sup> Pickeringe of Salem beeing of pfect mind and memory doe make and Ordayne this my last will and Testament in man and forme followinge first I bequeath my soule to my lord god and sauour: and my body to the earth from whence it came.

Imp<sup>r</sup> I deuidd my estate into fiue pts: vidz: lands houses Cattell houshold goods e<sup>r</sup>:  
Ite I bequeath to my son Jn<sup>o</sup> Pickeringe two parts out of my estate as aboue mentioned at the age of one and twenty years

Ite I bequeath to my son Jn<sup>o</sup> than one part and halfe out of the estate of mine as aboue said at the age of twenty one years

Ite I bequeath the other pt & halfe to my wife Elizabeth for her mayntenance for her life: puided shes liue unmarried & if her part of my estate will not mayntaine her Comfortably that there shall be an allowance made to her out of my sons pt and accordinge to the pportōn of their legacies But if my said wife Elizabeth shall mary againe her next husband to be bound to returne to my

---

have ever since retained it in their possession. Its present proprietor, who bears his name, has, within a few years, restored two of the three peaks which formerly belonged to its front. We might speak particularly of others, as that of William Pickering at Wood's gate, another of the Pickering family facing Pine street."

AN INTERIOR VIEW OF THE EAST ROOM IN THE  
PICKERING HOUSE.

SHOWING THE TABLE WHICH WAS BROUGHT TO THIS COUNTRY BY JOHN  
PICKERING [1-70. I. 1.] AND THE CHAIRS WHICH WERE MADE BY  
THE REV. THEOPHILUS PICKERING [43. IV. 8.]



two soñs their hiers or administra<sup>r</sup> or assigns to be equally deuided the same pportion or value of goods or estate, that he shall haue with my said wife when he doth mary her if she died before him

Itē I giue to my soñ Jn<sup>o</sup> my musket and Armes complete and the choise of my foulinge peece.

Itē I giue to my son Jn<sup>athan</sup> my other foulinge peece and my Carbine  
Lastly my will is y<sup>t</sup> when my Children come to age to inioye their pcoñs : y<sup>t</sup> the increase or losse y<sup>t</sup> then shall be found to be in my estate more or less then was at my death shallbe borne by them.

It I make my beloued wife Elizabeth & my sons John and Jonathan my Executrix & Executors

It I apoynte & desire John Horne and Edmund Batter my overseers : to see the fulfillinge of this my Last will and I giue to each of them twenty shillings

dated 30<sup>th</sup> 5<sup>m</sup> 1655

Signed and Delided  
in the p<sup>r</sup>ence of vs  
Edmund Batter  
John Horne  
ffrancis . . . . .  
John Kitching

JOHN PICKERING

The original will is in Vol. III. p. 128, of Essex County Quarterly Court Papers. Endorsed on the back of the will is the following : —

“The Will of John pickering brought into Court 1 5mo. 57 proued by Mr Batter John Horne & Jn<sup>o</sup> Kitchin.”

“The Last Will & testam<sup>t</sup> of John Pickering brought into court also an Inventory of 137£ : 3s : 2d sworne to by the widdow pickerin allowed.”<sup>1</sup>

1-70. I. I. *Elizabeth* . . . . . the wife of John Pickering, probably died in Salem.

We have not been able to ascertain the full maiden name of John Pickering's wife, neither have we found the full date of their marriage, nor where it took place. The Bible of their grandson, John Pickering, according to the memorandum-book of Colonel Timothy Pickering, says that they were married in 1636 ; and if this is the case, we suppose it must have taken place in this country.

<sup>1</sup> Nathaniel I. Bowditch Record, p. 318.

Of their children, but four are known to us: John, and Jonathan, and two named Elizabeth. The daughters must have died young; for only two children, John and Jonathan, are named in John Pickering's will. The married life of John and Elizabeth Pickering lasted about twenty years; and it is highly probable that there were other children, who died young, for this would be an unusually small family for that period.

We do not know whether John Pickering was a church-member or not; and from the fact that we do not find that he took the freeman's oath, or that he ever held public office, we infer that he was not. His wife Elizabeth, however, joined the Salem church, for she with others "renewed y<sup>e</sup> covenant."<sup>1</sup> On the Church Records her name appears following the date "5 : 3 : 1639," in a catalogue of those persons who were joined in full communion.

She is undoubtedly the Elizabeth Pickering to whom John Alderman of Salem bequeathed by his will of July 3, 1657,<sup>2</sup> "one greene cloth suite," and he also made bequests to her sons John and Jonathan. Whether John Alderman was their relation, or only a friend, we are unable to say; but we are inclined to think that a relationship existed between them. Of John Alderman, Savage, in his *Genealogical Dictionary of New England*, says, that he lived in Dorchester, in 1634, but had moved to Salem in 1636, when Jane Alderman, probably his wife, was a member of the church. He had a grant of land in Salem in 1637, was made a freeman, May 22, 1639, and died in 1657. Elizabeth survived her husband John Pickering, and on Dec. 25, 1657, married John Deacon of Lynn. He removed to Salem, and built a house near that of her former husband, on land belonging to the Pickering estate. To this new dwelling she removed, leaving the old house in possession of her son John Pickering, who had married the same year. Savage gives the following account of her second husband: "John Deacon, Lynn, came in the Abigail, 1635, aged 25, with w. Alice, 30, who d. 27 July 1657, was a blacksmith; m. 25 Dec. 1657, Elizabeth, widow of John Pickering, rem.

<sup>1</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collection, Vol. I. p. 39; also Records of the First Church.

<sup>2</sup> Ipswich Records, Vol. 1, p. 197, in the Essex County Registry of Deeds.

to Boston, was of Mather's church in 1669." The History of Lynn<sup>1</sup> states that he was the first blacksmith in Lynn, and that, in 1638, he had twenty acres of land allotted to him.

From the following abstract of a conveyance,<sup>2</sup> he appears to have taken a third wife: John Deacon of Boston, blacksmith, for a valuable consideration sells to John Pickering, yeoman, of Salem a piece of salt marsh in Lynn, called Thorn's neck of about two acres, April 5, 1670, signed

JNO DEACON.

AN DEACON.

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{1}{4}$ .

<sup>1</sup> History of Lynn, Mass., by Alonzo Lewis and James R. Newhall, p. 153.

<sup>2</sup> Essex County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 3, p. 82.

---

NOTE.—When the greater part of this work had been finished, my attention was called to an entry in the Notarial Record Book of William Aspinwall, where John Pickering of Salem is shown to have possessed a house in Coventry, England. By the kindness of William H. Whitmore, Esq., who has made a copy of the entire book, and of Walter Kendall Watkins, Esq., I am enabled to give this entry, which is, as far as I know, the first substantial piece of evidence to show where the Salem Pickeringings had their origin.

William Aspinwall's Notarial Record Book, p. 298.

"25 (8) 1650. John Pickering of Salem did constitute Mr. Thomas Potter of Childsmore his Attorney for him & in his name & to his use to enter & take possession of a certaine house neere the Newgate in Coventry & the same to possesse & enjoy for the use of the s<sup>d</sup> John Pickering (being his pper possession) untill further order taken thereabout. Giving him power to comience and psecut any action at law against any that shall hinder or interrupt him in the possession of the s<sup>d</sup> house.  
Dat. 25 (8) 1650."

## SECOND GENERATION.

1-70. II. 1. **John Pickering** [John 1-70. I. 1], probably born in Salem, died in Salem. A farmer. Residence: Salem.

Lieutenant John Pickering and his wife were admitted to membership of the First Church in Salem in 1684, and he was admitted to full communion of the same on April 1, 1694.<sup>1</sup>

By inheritance and by purchase from the other heirs, he came into possession of the family mansion and estate, where he continued to reside, and which property he transmitted to his son John. He is best known to us in his connection with public affairs, and his continuous services prove that he was a capable, enterprising, and public-spirited man.<sup>2</sup> Confidence in his good judgment is shown by the frequent mention of his name in connection with the administration of estates, the taking of inventories, and as an overseer in wills. He was a selectman of the town several times, a constable in 1664, and one of those appointed to run the Lynn line in 1669. He also filled various other offices. One of these was in collecting the subscription money of Salem for the support of Harvard College, as appears from the following record:—

“April 5, 1680 Return was made to the Committee at Boston Concerning y<sup>e</sup> Colledge money. Leut. John Pickering chosen & sent for that end and purpose”

“May 11, 1686 Agreed with Lt. John Pickering, for thirty shillings in money to bee allowed for his paynes & troble in gathering; and journey Concerning the Subscription for the Colledge.”<sup>3</sup>

In 1668, his signature appears on a petition of two hundred and thirty-three inhabitants of Salem to the General Court against duties of 1 per cent on exports and imports, and 2*d.* on each bushel of grain.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Original records of The First Church of Salem, p. 111.

<sup>2</sup> See Annals of Salem, by Joseph B. Felt, p. 317.

<sup>3</sup> See the Town Records of Salem, also Annals of Salem, by Joseph B. Felt, Vol. I. p. 435.

<sup>4</sup> Massachusetts Archives, Vol. 60, pp. 41-42.

His prominence, however, is most fully brought out by the part he took in military affairs. In 1675, he was appointed ensign of the Salem militia, as is learned from the following order of the General Court: —

“It is ordered that Richard Leach be leftenant & John Pickering ensigne to the second foote company in Salem vnder the conduct of Capt John Coruin.”<sup>1</sup>

From the following record he appears to have refused to serve in this capacity: —

“May 30, 1679. The Court, being informed that John Pickering, of Salem, refuseth the place of ensigne, on a motion made, the Court appoints Nathaniel Felton to be ensigne to Capt Cornins compāy.”<sup>2</sup>

Before this last date he had certainly filled the office of lieutenant. He was generally known by this title, and had served in this capacity in the Indian war of 1675. He was present at the fight at Bloody Brook, near Deerfield, after the defeat of Captain Lothrop on Sept. 18, 1675. Captain Lothrop, who had been sent from Hadley to Deerfield to bring a large supply of wheat into a place of safety, fell into an ambuscade of Indians, and was slaughtered with nearly the whole of his party. Captain Mosely went from Deerfield to the relief of Captain Lothrop, and defeated the Indians. It is stated that his lieutenants, Savage and John Pickering, from Salem, often led the troops and distinguished themselves in a particular manner by their skill and persevering resolution.<sup>3</sup> Hubbard's version of this affair is as follows: —

“Capt. Mosely's men coming suddenly upon them when they were pillaging of the dead, fell upon them with such a smart assault, that they drove them presently into a swamp, following them so close, that for seven miles together they fought them upon a march, charging them through and through. Perez Savage and Lieutenant Pickering, his Lieutenants, deserving no little part of the honour of that days Service, being sometimes called to lead the Company in the Front.”<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, edited by Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, M.D., Vol. V. p. 33.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. Vol. V. p. 233.

<sup>3</sup> See Essex County and the Indians, by Robert Rantoul, Senr., in the Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. XIX. pp. 139-140.

<sup>4</sup> The Present State of New-England, Being A Narrative of the Trouble with the Indians in New-England by W. Hubbard, minister of Ipswich, London, 1677, p. 40.

In the article on "Soldiers in King Philip's War," by the Rev. George M. Bodge, printed in *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, in writing of Captain Samuel Mosely and his men, Mr. Bodge says: "Lieutenants Savage and Pickering especially distinguished themselves by their daring," and in a note says, "It seems the highest presumption to correct both Hubbard and Drake in one note; but Hull's Journal says that Pickering was Appleton's and not Mosely's Lieutenant."<sup>1</sup> In another volume of the same work, it says of Captain Appleton: "His Lieutenant John Pickering, and doubtless a part of his company, were with Capt. Mosely in the fight succeeding Lathrop's defeat."<sup>2</sup> This same volume<sup>3</sup> gives the sum of £4 5s. 10d. due John Pickering, Lt., as one of Captain Appleton's command.

John Pickering was one of thirteen men who petitioned to the General Court to grant them a plantation at the bottom of Casco Bay, on a river called Swegustagoe, &c. June 11, 1680, the Court granted the petitioners five miles square, to be allotted out for a township, and two islands adjacent to the place.<sup>4</sup> We suppose this grant was for military services.

In 1664, Lieutenant Pickering had a suit<sup>5</sup> with the owners of the "New Mill" on the South River, he being the owner of the land bounding on that river. Previous to 1663, Captain Trask's corn-mills on the North River were the only ones in town. Complaint arose as to grinding facilities, and on Nov. 9, 1663, Walter Price, Henry Bartholomew, and John and Samuel Gardner were given permission to put up a mill on the South River. When these men began their mill John and Jonathan Pickering pulled up their stakes and threw their shovels and wheelbarrows into the river, and further brought an action against them, "for damming up the Channel or river below their land, and hindering them from coming by water to said land, or improving of it for a building place for vessels." John Pickering also

<sup>1</sup> Vol. XXXVII. p. 178.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. XXXVIII. p. 430.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* p. 441.

<sup>4</sup> Records of the Governor and Company of the Mass. Bay in N. E. Edited by Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, M.D., Vol. V. p. 273.

<sup>5</sup> See the article relating to this suit by W. P. Upham, in the *Essex Institute Historical Collections*, Vol. VIII. pp. 21-28. In this article Mr. Upham calls both John and Jonathan Pickering, shipwrights. It is the only instance in which we have found John Pickering called a shipwright. His brother Jonathan, however, was a very active one.

brought an action for trespass, and the Proprietors brought an action against Pickering for damages to their work.

John Pickering relied on proving the land to the river to be his by deeds and possession, while the defendants relied on testimony going to show that the lots of which John Pickering's land was part, did not run to the river, but there was a space of two rods between the land and the river for a highway, and moreover that John Pickering had made an agreement with the town, on July 18, 1664, to receive £20 for damages. To this John Pickering seems to have anticipated his answer, by saying that land could not be alienated "except it be under hand and seal and delivered, acknowledged & recorded, and posesion given by turf & twig."

The suit ended in the following judgment: "March 28, 1665. John Pickering, plaintiff against Captain Walter Price, Mr. Henry Bartholmew, Mr. John and Samuel Gardner, defendants in an action of review. The jury found for the defendants, cost 37s."

Lieutenant Pickering was a legatee under the will of John Alderman, of Salem, July 3, 1657, as was his mother and his brother Jonathan. The bequest to him consisted of "one table, 2 stools, my cloke, a pair of cloth briches, a paier of worsted stockens & 2lb barley."

The day and month of his birth have not been ascertained, but 1637 was recorded as the year of his birth in the family Bible of his son John. It corresponds with the age given on his gravestone, the inscription of which is printed in the New England Historical and Genealogical Register, and is as follows: <sup>1</sup> —

"Here lyeth buried y<sup>e</sup> body of Leut. John Pickering. Dec'd. y<sup>e</sup> 5th of May, 1694, in y<sup>e</sup> 57th year of his age."

This stone, with other early gravestones of the family, stood on a part of the land of what is now called the Broad Street Burying Ground, the old "Burying Ground on the Hill." "The Hill" is opposite the present Pickering Estate, and was formerly known as Pickering Hill. When that part of the hill where these stones stood was dug away, the remains of the Pickerings and their gravestones were removed.

<sup>1</sup> Vol. III. p. 278.

The following account of this burial-place, in the handwriting of Mary Orne Pickering [49. VIII. 545], is taken from an old Family Bible, bearing the imprint of 1736, which belonged to Deacon Timothy Pickering [48-59. IV. 9]. The Bible is now in the possession of his great-great-grandson, John Pickering of Salem.

“A small private burying ground of the Pickering family existed for many years on the ‘Broadfield’ land abutting on that part of Summer Street which is the highest point, and east of the Public Cemetery. It was used as a burial place of the Pickering family, from the time of the earliest ancestors down to the time of Dea. Timothy Pickering, who died in 1778; whose remains were interred in the Public Burying Ground. In laying out Broadfield for building lots & extending Summer Street to the Mill Pond, it was necessary to provide a place of security for the relics existing in this ancient private burying ground. The graves of nineteen individuals, adults & children, were found. The graves-tones were of slate, and much worn; with inscriptions upon them, more or less legible. Among them was one to the memory of Lieut. John Pickering. All these headstones, and the few remaining relics of the early ancestors beneath them, were taken up and carefully deposited, in November 1847, in the Public Burying Ground, in the sealed vault, over which is the granite monument bearing the names of John Pickering and Sarah Pickering: ob: 1846.”

Lieutenant Pickering appears to have prospered in a worldly way, constantly adding to the paternal acres. He left to his family a good estate, as appears, by the following abstract of his will.

This will was dated May 3, 1694, and proved May 21, of the same year. He calls himself senior of Salem, and sick in body but of sound mind, and bequeaths his estate as follows:—

To my eldest son John Pickering, my homestead, where I now dwell, with the right of commonage; reserving to my wife, the use of part therein for her natural life. Also to my son John all my part of Broadfield by the Millpond, a piece of land formerly called Jeggels point in the Southfield, land at the glass house field, which I bought of Henry Reynolds and one-third part of land lying by land of George Darling deceased, within Lynn and Salem bounds.

To my sons Benjamin and William, to be equally divided between them, land where my son John now dwells, with the dwelling house and outhouses, which land I bought of Richard Adams, deceased, also land in the Southfield, which I purchased of the said Adams, and two-thirds of the land I purchased of George Darling in Salem and Lynn bounds.

To my son Benjamin, my piece of marsh at Forest river, consisting of about one acre, also my lot in the Southfield, formerly called More's lot, after my wife's decease or marriage, he paying to my executor within two years after my decease, £10 for my daughter, the same to be held in trust.

To my son William after my wife's decease or marriage, Archer's lot in the Southfield, he to pay, within two years after my decease £10 to my executor, John Pickering.

To my daughter Elizabeth, £40, to be paid to her one year after her marriage, provided she marries with the consent of her mother, but otherwise, to remain in my son John's hands, to relieve her in her necessity.

To my daughter Hannah, £40 to be paid one year after her marriage if she marries with the consent of her mother but otherwise it to remain in my son John's hands to relieve her in her necessity.

To my wife Alice Pickering, one-third of my moveable goods and household stuff, and the eastern part of my now dwelling to wit; the chamber garret and low room and half of the cellar, with the use of the oxen and well, also £4 per annum, one-half to be paid by each of my sons Benjamin and William. To her my negro girl called Maria, and, during her widowhood, two lots in the Southfield, formerly called More's and Archer's lots, and one-quarter part of the barn, and outhouses, also £3 per annum to be paid by my son John.

To my grandchildren, John and Hannah Buttolph £10 each, when they arrive at age or at marriage.

To each of my grandchildren, that are already born 12s, to buy a silver spoon when they arrive at age, or at marriage.

To my son John Pickering all the rest of my estate. My wife Alice and son John Pickering my executors.<sup>1</sup>

1-70. II. 1. *Alice Bullock*, the wife of John Pickering, probably born in England, died in Salem.

The records of the First Church of Salem show that at a church meeting held March 11, 1684, Alice Pickering, and others whose names are entered on the record, having stood propounded a month, with no exceptions, was admitted after the usual manner.

At the time the Pickering Sheets were printed, we did not know that Alice Flint had ever married before she married John Pickering; but from records since found, it appears that she had married as her first husband Henry Bullock, Jr., of Salem. By him she had two children, viz.: —

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 303, p. 208.

ELIZABETH BULLOCK, who probably died young.

JOHN BULLOCK, who married Aug. 3, 1681, Eliza Maverick, daughter of Moses Maverick of Marblehead, by whom he had two children, Elizabeth Bullock, born June 22, 1683, and John Bullock, born April 8, 1686. The latter married Mary Carrill, July 20, 1710.

John Bullock the son of Henry and Alice Bullock died in 1693. He is doubtless the same person who received the following grant at a meeting of the selectmen of Salem held Jan. 9, 1679-80:—

“Whereas John Bullock was Impressed into the Country Service against the Indians and was therein sorely wounded to the very greate hazerd of his liffe, and being thereby disabled from getting a lieulthood for himselfe much more for a ffamilye in any Labourious calling, hee still Remayning a creeple & vnder great & greuious Affliction by that meenes; the consideration whereof hath moued our harts not only to pittety him, butt also to consider of some way sutable for one in that distressed condition, whearby hee may be able to gitt a liueing, and not discourage him & others y<sup>t</sup> may bee called forth vpon services for there Country heereafter. Wee doe therefore grant him Liberty to sett vp & Keep a Cooks Shop in the towne, And likewise to draw wine &c if the Countye Courte shall see cause to aproue of and confirme him therein.”<sup>1</sup>

Henry Bullock, Jr., was the son of Henry Bullock and his wife Susan, and came with them in the Abigail from Essex, England, in 1635, when he was eight years old.<sup>2</sup>

Aug. 22, 1657, Alice Bullock, widow, with the consent of her father, William Flint, sold to Henry Cooke for seventy pounds to be paid yearly, according to the tenure of the bond her dwelling, out-houses and about twenty acres of land, the said house standing “neere unto the generall fence of the north neck, having Henry Bullock on the one side & William Robinson on y<sup>e</sup> other & the land adjoyning unto the sd house runneth from thence unto John Southwicks, excepting y<sup>e</sup> wood upon half an acre of land & the pond wch belongs unto Henry Bullock for the terme of his life, on paying 10<sup>s</sup> p annum during the term of his life unto the sd Henry Bullock” also all the land lying in Northfield formerly Henry Bullock’s dec’d, Also six acres in the broad meadow near John Hathorne’s old house.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Salem Records, Vol. 3, p. 309.

<sup>2</sup> See Genealogical Dictionary of New England by James Savage, Vol. I. p. 297.

<sup>3</sup> Essex County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 1, p. 39.

The name of Alice Flint appears on the Court Records as a transgressor of the law passed by the General Court to prevent excess of dress,<sup>1</sup> and is noticed by Felt as follows:—

<sup>1</sup> The following is the act against excess in dress which was passed Oct. 14, 1651, by the General Court of Massachusetts:—

“Although seuerall delectartjions and orders have binn made by this Courte against excesse in apparrell, both of men and weomen, which have not taken that effect as were to be desired, but, on the contrary, wee cannot but to our greife take notice that jutollerable excesse and bravery hath crept in vpon vs, and especially amongst people of meane condition, to the dishonour of god, the scandall of our profession, the consumption of estates, and altogether vnsuiteable to our ponertje; and although wee acknowledge it to be a matter of much difficultje, in regard of the blindnes of mens mindes and the stubbornes of their willes, to sett downe exact Rules to confjne all sortes of persons, yett wee cannot but account it our duty to comend vnto all sortes of persons the sober and moderate vse of those blessings which, beyond expectation, the lord hath bin pleased to affoord vnto vs in this wildernes, and also to declare our vtter detestation and dislike that men or weomen of meane condijon should take vpon them the garbe of gentlemen by wearing gold or silver lace or buttons, or points at their knees, or to walk in great bootes, or weomen of the same rancke to weare silke or tiffany hoodes or scarfes, which though allowable to persons of greater estate, or more liberall education, yett wee cannot but judge it intollerable in persons of such like Condition: Itt is therefore Ordered by this Courte, and the Authoritje thereof, that no person within this Jurisdiction, or any of their relations depending vpon them, whose visible estates, reall and personall, shall not exceede the true and Indifferent valew of two hundred pounds, shall weare any gold or silver lace, or gold and silver buttons, or any bone lace above two shillings  $\frac{3}{4}$  yard, or silk hoods or scarfes, vpon the penaltje of tenn shillings for euery such offence, and euery such delinquent to be presented by the grand Jury. And forasmuch as distinct and particular rules in this Case, suiteable to the estate or quallitje of each person, cannot easily be given, Itt is further Ordered by the Authoritje aforesajd, that the Selectmen of euery Toune, or the major part of them, are heereby enabled and required from tyme to tyme to have regard and take notice of Apparrell in any of the Inhabitants of their seuerall Townes respectively, and whosoeuer they shall Judge to exceede their rancke and abilitjes in the Costljnes or fashion of their apparrell in any Respect, especially in the wearing of ribbons or great bootes, (leather being so scarce a Comoditje in this Countrje,) lace pointes, &c, silke hoods or scarfes, the selectmen aforesajd shall have power to assesse such persons so offending in any of the particulars above mentioned in the Country rates at two hundred pounds estates, according to that proportion that such men vse to pay to whom such Apparrell is suiteable and allowed, provided this lawe shall not extend to the restraint of any magistrate or publicke officer of the Jurisdiction, their wives and children, who are left to their discretion in wearing of apparrell, or any settled military officer or souldjer in the tyme of millitary service, or any other whose education and imployments have binn above

"1652 Nov. 30<sup>th</sup> Alice Flint was presented for wearing a silk hood, but proving herself to be worth £200 she was excused."<sup>1</sup>

This Alice Flint is said to have been William Flint's daughter, who afterwards married John Pickering. This is hardly probable, for in 1652 she was a very young woman, not much above sixteen years old, and not likely to possess so large a sum as two hundred pounds. She has undoubtedly been confounded with her mother, for whom she was named, and who might well be able to indulge in such a luxury, as her husband, William Flint, was in all probability a well-to-do man. Nineteen years later his estate amounted to more than nine hundred pounds.

There is a plan, still extant, showing that William Flint owned the land from the corner of Flint and Essex streets, extending to Broad Street, and thence easterly. Flint Street is said to run through the land he once owned, and near where his dwelling stood. He was born about 1603, being called about fifty-eight years old in a deposition in Court, Dec. 10, 1661. He filled several town-offices: was overseer of fences in 1656; a surveyor of the Southfield fences in 1657; one of the perambulators of the Lynn line in 1658, and a surveyor of highways in the same year. In 1659, he was appointed to mend the foot-bridge, and he was chosen on the jury in 1656 and 1659.

William Flint died April 2, 1673. His will was dated Sept. 15, 1671, and was very unsatisfactory to his daughters, who succeeded in preventing the settlement of the estate till Feb. 26, 1695-96, when the whole property was equitably divided among the heirs. The inventory of it amounted to £911 15s. When the will was presented at Court to be proved, June 26, 1673, Mr. Edmund Batter testified that William Flint had intended to give his son, John Pickering, a piece of land, but company coming in, he was interrupted from so doing, and the next day, he was not well enough to be even spoken to. Upon this testimony,

---

the ordinary degree, or whose estates have binn Considerable, though now decayed." (Records of Massachusetts, Vol. IV. Part I. 1650-1660, p. 60-61). See also the Massachusetts Archives, Court Records, Vol. 4, pp. 57-59.

<sup>1</sup> Annals of Salem, by Joseph B. Felt, p. 188.

"Ye court doth order y<sup>t</sup> John Pickering shall have that pece of ground, which was intended by his father, as is declared by Mr. Hathorne."

William Flint's wife Alice survived him, dying Oct. 5, 1700. She must have been at least eighty years old at this time. From the following deed, it appears that she lived with her daughter Alice Pickering in her old age:

"22 Aug 1696. To all Christian People to whome These presents shall come I Alice Flintt relict widow of William Flintt late of Salem Deēd Send Greeting Know ye that I y<sup>e</sup> said Alice Flintt for the loue & affection that I y<sup>e</sup> said Alice flintt doe bear vnto my daughter Alice Pickering & more especialy for & in Consideration of her my said Dear daughters great Trouble cost & charge in keeping & maintaining me The s<sup>d</sup> Alice Flintt in my old age when I were not able to help my Selve & for my said Daughters obligacōn to me so to doe during my natural life I the said Alice Flintt haue giuen granted & confirmed & doe by these presents fully freely and absolutely giue grant & confirm vnto y<sup>e</sup> said Alice Pickering all and singular such Rents Arrearages of Rents goods Chattels personall Estate whatsoever vtencills household stuffe Implements and all things Whatsoever of what nature kind or property soeuer y<sup>e</sup> same be or can be found To Have & to Hold Levy vse dispose of take & enjoy & all my said good Chattels personall estate household stuffe and Implements &c & all other the premises aforesaid vnto my said daughter Alice Pickering her hiers Executors adm<sup>rs</sup> & assignes from henceforth & forever."<sup>1</sup>

Then is given a description of a five acre, a two acre, and a three acre lot of land in the Southfield which her husband William Flint died seized of.

Alice Pickering did not survive her mother many years. The wrong year is given in the Pickering Sheets as the year of her death. The mistake arose from the natural supposition that she must have died shortly before the administration on her estate, which was granted to her son-in-law, James Browne of Salem, husbandman, Jan. 6, 1723-24.<sup>2</sup> The exact date of her death has not been found; but the following deeds show that she must have died at some time between March 4, 1712-13, and May 13, 1713.

"To all People to whome this present deed of Gift shall come know yee that I Alice Pickering of Salem, in the County of Essex in New England, Widow, for & vpon Mature Considerations & other Good Causes me hereunto Justly mouing haue

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 14, p. 88.

<sup>2</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 314, p. 3.

Giuen Granted & do by these presents Giue Grant aliene set ouer & Confirme unto Jane King, Hannah Beadle, Lydia & Mary Palmer, all y<sup>e</sup> Children of my Daughter Hannah Palmer Late of Salem, dec<sup>d</sup> my five acres of Land Lying and being in y<sup>e</sup> Towne of Salem, in y<sup>e</sup> Southfeild so Called be y<sup>e</sup> same more or Less to be Equally diuided between them as they shall ariue at y<sup>e</sup> age of Eighteen yeares or marriage to be to them & their heirs foreuer, and y<sup>t</sup> my Son-in-Law Richard Palmer shall haue the vse of said Land Till y<sup>e</sup> said Children Come to age as aforesaid it being part of that Land giuen me by my Mother, a Deed of Gift may appeare. Item I giue unto my Daughter Elizabeth Browne wife of James Browne, my Two Siluer Cupps & one Siluer Spooone. Item I giue unto y<sup>e</sup> Children of my Daughter Browne & y<sup>e</sup> Children of my Daughter Palmer all my moueables to be equally diuided between them. Item I giue unto Hannah Osgood, wife of Nathaniel Osgood, one peare of Shets which she hath of mine in Witness hereof I haue hereunto set my hand & seale this 4th day of March 1712-13

“ Signed sealed & D.D.

in Pesence of us

“ Thomas Brewer

“ Frances Willoughby

“ Essex ss Att an Inferiour Court of pleas holden at Salem, December 29 1713 then M<sup>r</sup> Francis Willoughby & Thomas Brewer y<sup>e</sup> Two witnesses to this Deed or Instrument made Oath that they were present & saw M<sup>rs</sup> Alice Pickering, Decd sign seal & Deliuer this Instrument as her act & deed, and the s<sup>d</sup> deponents at y<sup>e</sup> same time subscribed as witnesses thereto. Sworne, attest Steph Sewall cler

“ ALICE G<sup>mark of</sup> PICKERING & a seale

Following the above deed is a release, dated May 13, 1713, in which John Pickering, yeoman, Benjamin Pickering, and William Pickering, mariners, sons of Mr. John and Mrs. Alice Pickering, both of Salem, deceased, give up all their rights in the above said five acres of land, to the children of their sister Hannah Palmer, late of Salem, deceased.<sup>1</sup>

Alice Pickering was a daughter of William and Alice Flint.

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{II}{I}$

1-70. II. 2. **Jonathan Pickering** [John 1-70. I. 1] born in Salem, probably died in Salem. A shipwright. Residence: Salem.

Jonathan Pickering was born in 1639, according to a memorandum of Henry Pickering [58. VI. 111]; and Benj. Ropes Nichols [44. VII. 218] says that he died in 1729, aged 90; but, in a deposition of Sept. 28, 1686, he calls himself about 44 years old, and in another of May 27, 1720, he

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 25, p. 225.

calls himself about 78 years old.<sup>1</sup> By both of these statements of his own he must have been born about 1642. In the old Family Bible, mentioned under the head of his brother, Lieutenant John Pickering, the pages of which were cut down when it was rebound, there is a mutilated record of what may be the birth of Jonathan Pickering, viz.: "J. Pickering was Born 10 of February 1043." This may have been Feb. 10 or 16, 1643. He was married to Jane Cromwell, March 19, 1665, according to the Salem records.

It has been seen in the account of his brother, John Pickering, that Jonathan joined with him in obstructing the building of the new mill on the South River, and that in 1664 an action was brought against the proprietors of the mill "for damming up the Channel or river below their land and hindering them from coming by water to said land or improving of it for a building place for vessels." Mr. Upham, in his account of this suit, after quoting as above, adds: "From this it appears that the business of ship building was carried on, before the Mill was erected, at that part of the South River which is now the Mill Pond."

Owing to the building of the mill, Jonathan Pickering was obliged to discontinue building vessels at this point, and to seek some other locality for the prosecution of his business. It appears from the town records that on the 19th of March, 1668-9, he was allowed "to build shipping next beyond the causeway at the end of the town if he do not incommode the highway, nor hinder cattle from coming to the salt water." Here, we suppose, he worked at his calling for some time; but the following grant from the town leads us to infer that the place was not altogether to his liking: —

"Att a Generall towne meeting held y<sup>e</sup> 23<sup>rd</sup> March 1674: — Voated y<sup>e</sup> Jonothan : pickering, hath graunted to him a Conueniant p<sup>ce</sup> of Land about Hardies Cone, for himself & heires foreuer, to build Vessells vpon and y<sup>e</sup> selectmen are appointed & Impowred to Lay out y<sup>e</sup> same, & this to bee full satisfaction, for y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>re</sup>judice done him, by stoping up y<sup>e</sup> riuier w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Milldam, Butt In case y<sup>e</sup> aboues<sup>d</sup> place, proves not see Conueniant for his Vse as hee expects, Its Left to y<sup>e</sup> selectmen to Vew some other place, & make returne thereof to y<sup>e</sup> towne."<sup>2</sup>

From the length of time since the first interruption of his business by the building of the mill-dam, and the above grant of the town, the inference

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 37, p. 126.

<sup>2</sup> Salem Records, Vol. 3, p. 254.

is that Pickering was a persevering man, and now, after some thirteen years, had brought the town to his own terms. We have not met with any agreements of his to build vessels, and therefore we do not know the names or sizes of the ships which he built, nor the parties with whom he contracted; but we judge that he carried on his business on a large scale, since he is mentioned among the four noted shipbuilders of Salem during the years 1659 to 1677.

In 1668, he signed a petition of two hundred and thirty-three inhabitants of Salem against a duty of 1 per cent on exports and imports and 2*d.* on each bushel of grain.<sup>1</sup>

By the will<sup>2</sup> of John Alderman of Salem, dated the 3d of the 5th month 1657, Jonathan Pickering received "my arnes and all my nursery of apples trees at my tenn acre lott."

May 18, 1671, he gave a receipt, stating that he had received full satisfaction from his brother John Pickering for his part given in his father's will.<sup>3</sup>

The following shows that he cared for his mother-in-law, Mrs. Ann Cromwell, in her old age:—

Jonathan Pickering of Salem, shipwright, for a valuable sum of money, viz: £5.17*s.* paid by Mr. Benjamin Browne of Salem, promises "to take care of provide for my mother Mrs. Ann Cromwell her full maintenance, as apparell, diett, washing, lodging &c., both in health and sickness, suitable for a wooman of her rank & quality, and all this during her natural life, so that the said Mr. Benjamin Browne and my brother in law David Phippen" shall be forever released, etc. Oct. 22, 1690.<sup>4</sup>

Jonathan and Jane (Cromwell) Pickering had the following children:—

JANE PICKERING,	born Nov. 27, 1667, baptized Sept. 7, 1671.
ELIZABETH PICKERING,	born June 2, 1669, baptized Sept. 7, 1671; married before 1697 Nathaniel Silsby.
MARY PICKERING,	born Dec. 1, 1670, baptized Sept. 7, 1671.
ANN PICKERING,	born Aug. 25, 1672.

<sup>1</sup> Massachusetts Archives, Vol. 60, pp. 40-41.

<sup>2</sup> Ipswich Records, Vol. 1, p. 197, in the Essex County Registry of Deeds.

<sup>3</sup> Essex County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 6, p. 118.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* Vol. 8, p. 171.

- JONATHAN PICKERING**, born May 11, 1674; banns published in Salem to Elizabeth Snow of Boston. They evidently settled in Boston, where children are found recorded to Jonathan and Elizabeth Pickering from Oct. 27, 1713, to April 29, 1717.
- SARAH PICKERING**, born Jan. 25, 1675-6, unmarried March 30, 1715.
- JOHN PICKERING**, baptized May 19, 1678.
- HANNAH PICKERING**, baptized May 28, 1682.
- SAMUEL PICKERING**, baptized Aug. 3, 1684.
- MERCY PICKERING**, baptized Feb. 11, 1710, at age; banns published to Benjamin Smith, April 4, 1713.

But three of the above children sign the following conveyance:—

Jonathan Pickering of Salem, shipwright, for £25. paid by Jonathan Glover of Salem, house carpenter sells him 10 full 16 parts of  $3\frac{1}{2}$  acres of upland in Southfield 30 March 1715.

We, the children, (to wit) y<sup>e</sup> sons and daughters of Jonathan and Jane Pickering, his wife, for £4 sell all our right in the above land conveyed by our father 30 March 1715. Signed, March 30, 1715, (all by mark), Nathaniel Silsby, Elizabeth Silsby, Sarah Pickering, Mercy Smith.<sup>1</sup>

1-70. II. 2. *Jane Cromwell*, the wife of Jonathan Pickering, perhaps born in England, probably died in Salem.

Jane Pickering was admitted to full communion of the First Church, Salem, Aug. 5, 1694.<sup>2</sup> She was a daughter of Thomas and Ann Cromwell of Salem. He was a brother of Philip Cromwell, a prosperous butcher or slaughterer of Salem, who was there as early as Aug. 9, 1647.<sup>3</sup>

In 1649, Philip Cromwell had a grant of one hundred acres, and the grant also allows him ten acres of meadow, if he can find it in the bounds. Philip Cromwell made his will March 2, 1687-8; and it was proved April 4, 1693. In it he calls himself ancient, but otherwise healthful in body, and of sound mind. Among others named in his will are his brother Thomas Cromwell, Jonathan Pickering, his now wife Margaret, and his son John Cromwell, who is his executor.<sup>4</sup> This John Cromwell lived in Salem, and he also was a butcher or slaughterer. He made his will Nov. 20, 1699; and it was proved Sept. 27, 1700. He willed a part of his property as follows:

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 29, p. 200.

<sup>2</sup> Records of the First Church, Salem, p. 111.

<sup>3</sup> Essex County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 1, p. 3.

<sup>4</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 303, p. 105.

To my wife Hannah I give one-half of my money, plate, and reading books, and my homestead ; I give £80 towards a writing and cyphering school, which shall be kept within a quarter of a mile of y<sup>e</sup> meeting house, by Mr. Walter Price in Salem. To my cousins, Ann Phipeny, wife of David Phipeny, and Jane Pickering, wife of Jonathan Pickering, I give the other half of my money, plate, and reading books, and all my writing books and writings ; and the residue of the estate left after my wife's decease, I give one-third to each of them, and the other third to be divided among their children. To Jonathan Pickering and to David Phipeny I give all the goods I have in my mother's hands, and all that I had in Florence Mecarty's hands, which are : "A cutting block, 2 axes, 2 cleavers, 2 pr. stilliards, 6 ropes, & y<sup>e</sup> pack saddles."

The inventory of the estate amounted to £556 13s. 2d. Jonathan Pickering was one of the executors.<sup>1</sup>

Savage states that Giles Cromwell of Newbury was the father of Philip and Thomas Cromwell of Salem, that Thomas was of Newbury in 1637, then twenty years old, and that he removed to Hampton in 1639, was a physician, and removed to Salem. Thomas is also called a doctor by James A. Emmerton.<sup>2</sup> The only Thomas Cromwell that we have found in Salem is called a "taylor" in a deed dated April 20, 1664.<sup>3</sup> In a deposition dated June 27, 1682, Thomas and John Cromwell stated that they were long inhabitants of Salem, County of Essex, and that they had known "Hugh Joanes as one coming from England in y<sup>e</sup> same ship with us in to the contry above thirty yeares agoe (& as wee understood aboard Mr. Strattons ship,)" etc.<sup>4</sup>

In his will of April 27, 1672, which was proved March 25, 1673, Giles Cromwell does not mention a son Thomas, but mentions a daughter Argentine, wife of Benjamin Cram, his executor, and speaks of his "son Philip Cromwell's eldest son that shall live and arrive at the age of one and twenty."

Philip Cromwell of Salem, at the time when this will was made, had a son John who was thirty-seven years old ; but this does not seem to be the grandson alluded to, for it is hardly probable that Giles Cromwell would have intimated that his grandson had not yet arrived at the age of twenty-one, when he was in reality thirty-seven. We are inclined to think that

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 307, pp. 111-112.

<sup>2</sup> See A Genealogical Account of Henry Silsbee and Some of his Descendants, p. 9.

<sup>3</sup> Essex County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 6, p. 97.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid. p. 28.

Giles was the brother, not the father, of Philip and Thomas Cromwell of Salem, and that Philip Cromwell of Dover, 1657-1674, who is mentioned by Savage, and who married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Loughton, was the "son Philip" mentioned in this will.

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{II}{2}$ .

1-70. II. 3. Elizabeth Pickering [John 1-70. I. 1], born in Salem, baptized there March 3, 1644, died in Salem.

1-70. II. 4. Elizabeth Pickering [John 1-70. I. 1], born in Salem, baptized there Aug. 31, 1645, died in Salem.

### THIRD GENERATION.

1-70. III. 1. **John Pickering** [John 1-70. II. 1], born in Salem, died in Salem. A farmer. Residence: Salem.

John Pickering was a member of the First Church of Salem, as appears by the following entry on the records: "16 Dec. 1688 Jn<sup>o</sup> Pickering, Jun<sup>r</sup> Admitted & baptized"

He inherited from his father the homestead and engaged in farming. He became a prominent citizen, filling the office of selectman in 1710, 1716, and 1717, and was a representative to the General Court in 1714 and 1716. He was also a prosperous man, adding to his patrimony, so that at his death he left a very respectable estate. Felt<sup>1</sup> says of him: "His death was a loss to the community." Deacon Timothy Pickering told his son, Colonel Timothy Pickering, that the death of his father, John Pickering, was caused by a cancer in the face. This statement is corroborated by Dr. Thomas Rodman's account, in which there is the following charge against John Pickering: —

"To my attendance in dressing his face canserated from y<sup>e</sup> 19<sup>th</sup> day of y<sup>e</sup> 3<sup>d</sup> mo<sup>th</sup> until y<sup>e</sup> 20<sup>th</sup> day of y<sup>e</sup> 6<sup>th</sup> mo<sup>th</sup> 1719 in which time I administered 41 doses of *£ Dolcis* with amputations & cauthorisings, diligently attending for which I desearve according to calculation £8.10." <sup>2</sup>

John Pickering's gravestone formerly stood in the private burial-ground of the Pickerings, on the Hill. The inscription on it has been printed in the *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*,<sup>3</sup> and reads as follows:—

"Here's interr'd y<sup>e</sup> body of Mr. John Pickering who died June 9th., A. Dom. 1732, *Ætatisq*; 64."

The date of his death, as printed, is certainly an error, and must have been made either by the printer, the transcriber, or the stone-cutter. The

<sup>1</sup> *Annals of Salem*, by Joseph B. Felt, p. 374.

<sup>2</sup> Note of Octavius Pickering in Colonel Timothy Pickering's Memorandum Book.

<sup>3</sup> Vol. III. p. 278.

exact date of his death was June 19, 1722. It is so given in the Salem records;<sup>1</sup> and the note-book of John Pickering's grandson, Colonel Timothy Pickering, contains the following:—

“My father informed me that my grandfather John Pickering died Tuesday, June 19, 1722.” This is signed “T. Pickering, Jr.”

Moreover, John Pickering's will was proved July 19, 1722; and in a deposition made by him May 27, 1720, he says he was at that time nearly sixty-two years old.

An abstract of his will, which was dated Nov. 20, 1721, and was proved July 19, 1722, is as follows:—

John Pickering of Salem, county of Essex under indisposition of body but of perfect mind and memory

To my elder son Theophilus Pickering (besides the expenses of his education) the house and land I bought of Timothy Lindall near the meeting house and my new house I built on same land with right of commonage; also one half of my pasture in the Southfield formerly called Jeggles Point, and if he is inclined to sell the same, his brother Timothy is to have the first offer; also one half of the land I bought of William Hardy, deceased, in the Southfield; also my land near James Darling's in Salem and Lynn bounds; also my part of the land I bought of John Woodwell, deceased, near the mill, to be in his full possession when he is twenty-two. To him my land in the Glass-house field after my wife's decease provided she doth not sell. To him the one-half of my pew in the meeting house, after my wife's decease, and also my silver tankard at her decease.

To my son Timothy Pickering all that was my father's homestead, viz, The dwelling house, barn, garden, orchard and all land adjoining; cider mill in the barn; all privileges belonging to said homestall; also my part of the Broadfield by the mill pond with the orchard and all the benefits; also land in the field that was Col. Hathorne's; also half of my pasture in the Southfield formerly known as Jeggles' Point, and if he is ever inclined to sell it, to give his brother Theophilus the first offer; also the other half of the land I bought of William Hardy, deceased, in the Southfield; also my part of More's lot in the Southfield; also my part of that land near Holme's, also that part of the same land which my father gave me as part of the real estate not specified in his will; also half of Harwoods lot so called in the Southfield; also I give him whatsoever of my grandfather Flint's estate doth or may of right belong unto me, and all common rights, except those two given Theophilus; only my wife shall have two common rights during her life, all of which shall remain in the hands of my execu-

<sup>1</sup> Vol. 2, p. 86.

tors, until he is twenty-two, then he to be in full possession. I also then give him my implements of husbandry. I give him my homestead where I now dwell after the decease of my wife, with the commonage thereof. I grant him liberty to improve one half of it when he comes to the age set, provided he lives here himself, either single or with family, but he shall not rent it in my wife's lifetime. I also give him the other half of my pew in the meeting house after my wife's decease.

To my daughter Lois Orne, one hundred poles of land I bought of Mr. Joseph Andrews, near the lower meeting house; also £30 more by my son Timothy, as is after mentioned, besides what I have already given her.

To my daughter Sarah Hardy the house and land I bought of Mr. Joseph Andrews, except what I have given to my daughter Lois Orne; she to have the use of said house and land during her natural life, and after her decease to be equally divided among her children by Joseph Hardy. I also give her, to make use of, all she hath of mine in her hands, for her life, then to be divided among her children.

To my daughter Eunice Pickering £170.

To my loving wife Sarah Pickering my homestead where I now dwell, with the right of commonage during her natural life, then to my son Timothy, (as was said). To her I give my negro girl Maria; also my pew in the meeting house during her natural life, then to be my two sons as aforesaid; also full power to make a legal sale of land in the Glass House field, but if it is unsold at her death, then to my son Theophilus; also power to sell house and land I bought of Daniel Webb, deceased; also I give her fire wood. I give to her all the rest of my estate to pay my lawful debts, funeral charges, and legacies, and for her comfortable maintainance, and she may dispose of personal estate as she will unto my children, and if any be left at her decease it shall be equally given unto my three daughters, Lois, Sarah, and Eunice. My son Timothy to pay my daughter Eunice £60 when twenty-five years of age and £20 more at or before my wife's decease, and to pay to my daughter Lois Orne £30 at my wife's decease, and I order him to provide fire wood for my wife while she is my widow. If either of my two sons Theophilus or Timothy die before twenty-two years of age, then his part to go to the survivor.

My wife Sarah Pickering and my son Theophilus Pickering to be my executors.<sup>1</sup>

This above will is signed and sealed by John Pickering. The seal is a lion rampant. A heliotype of it and the signature has been given facing page 10.

1-70. III. 1. *Sarah Burrill*, the wife of John Pickering, born in Lynn, died in Salem.

Mrs. Pickering is said, by her descendants, to have been a very sensible woman and possessed of considerable accomplishments for the time in

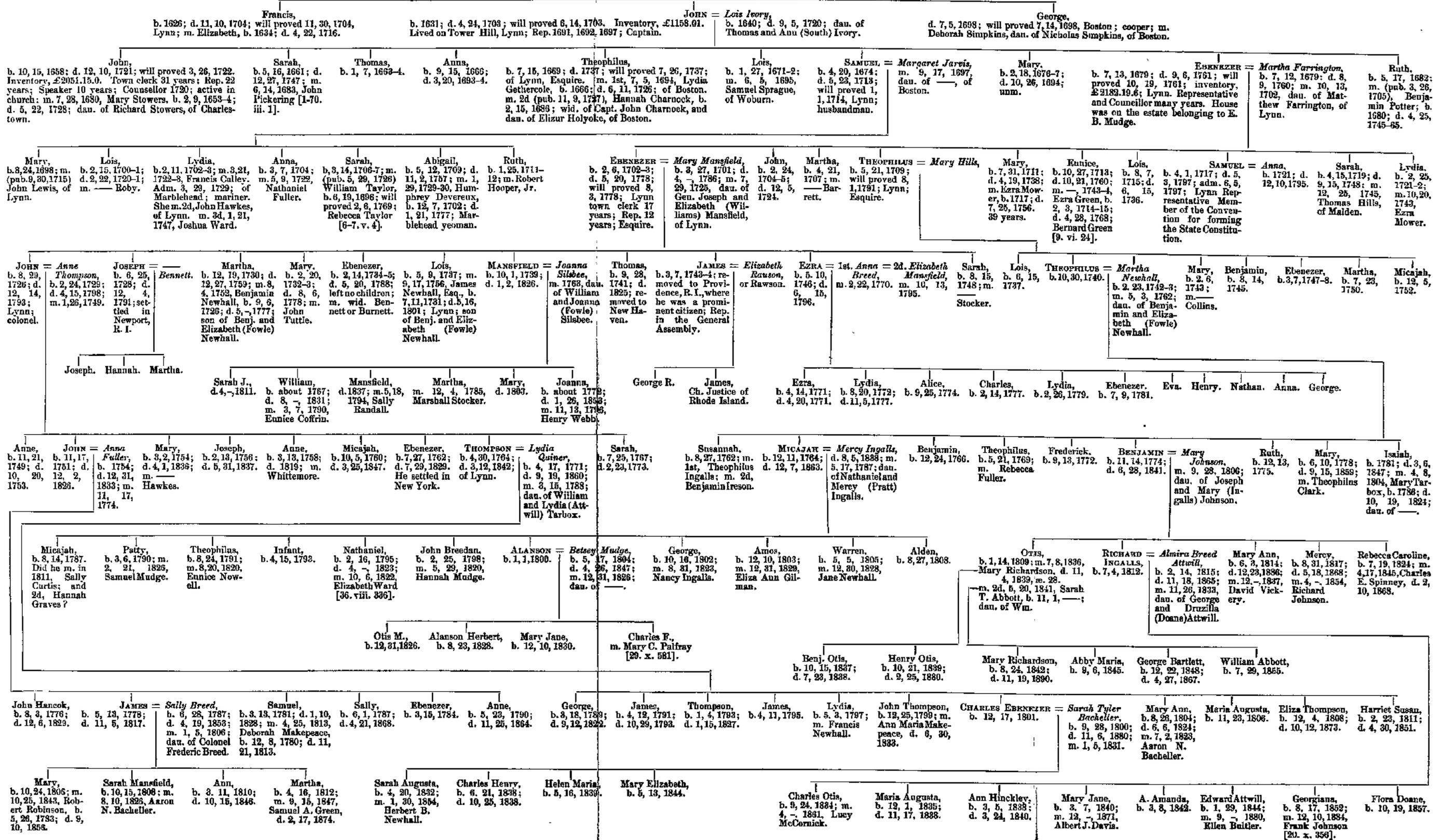
<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 313, pp. 476-479.

# PEDIGREE OF BURRILL OF LYNN.

**GEORGE BURRILL = MARY** ———

d. 1653; will dated Oct. 18, 1653; proved June —, 1654. Inventory, £348 10 s. One of the richest planters of Lynn, Mass. He lived on the west side of Tower Hill; the family was called the royal family of Lynn, owing to the number of famous persons connected with it.

d. 1653.



which she lived.<sup>1</sup> From the following account, we learn where she sat in meeting, and the importance attached to seating people in the place of public worship. It is also interesting as showing, to a certain extent, the social position of the Pickering family.

“Copy of note sent to Mrs. Mercy Marston about her setting in Mrs Osgood’s seat in y<sup>e</sup> 2<sup>d</sup> pew.

“1714.

“I am to Informe you y<sup>t</sup> the Wid<sup>o</sup> M<sup>rs</sup> Mary Gedney, Cap<sup>t</sup> Osgood’s wife, M<sup>r</sup> Keysor’s wife, Cap<sup>t</sup> Willard’s wife, M<sup>r</sup> Ju<sup>r</sup> Pickering’s wife, M<sup>r</sup> Tho. Flint’s wife, are Placed in the Second Pew in the meeting House w<sup>ch</sup> in The first Parrish in Salem & whereas you have Remoned M<sup>rs</sup> Osgood’s Chair & Seated yo-Self in her Place (you your Self having never been placed in S<sup>d</sup> pew) you are desired to refrain taking The Same place or any of the places of the psons Aboue mentioned for the future, it being Ill resented by all that observe the same & all psons ought to observe order in all things & places, Especially in the Church at the Publick Worship, w<sup>ch</sup> wee desire you will take notice of & Conform your Self accordingly.

“Per order of the Selectmen.

“WALTER PRICE, Town Cler.

“To Mrs Mercy Marston, Jun<sup>r</sup>.  
Salem, Aprill 10th, 1714.”<sup>2</sup>

Mrs. Pickering survived her husband a quarter of a century. The inscription upon her gravestone, which formerly stood with her husband’s in the private burying ground of the Pickerings, on the Hill, is printed in the New England Historical and Genealogical Register,<sup>3</sup> as follows: —

“Here lies buried y<sup>e</sup> body of Mrs. Sarah Pickering, widow of Mr. John Pickering. Died Dec<sup>r</sup> y<sup>e</sup> 27th. 1714.”

The date, as above printed, is wrong. The original memorandum-book of Colonel Timothy Pickering, in his own handwriting, says she died Dec. 27, 1747, in her eighty-sixth year, and several other authorities agree in this date. She was certainly alive Oct. 16, 1722, when she joined with Theophi-

<sup>1</sup> See the Gardner Family Record, now in possession of George A. Gardner [53. VIII. 614].

<sup>2</sup> See Gleaning from the files of the Court, printed in the Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. XI. p. 239.

<sup>3</sup> Vol. III. p. 278.

lus Burrill, Ebenezer Burrill, Benjamin Potter and wife Ruth, John Lewis and wife Mary, in releasing their right to a house and land in Boston, to Mary, widow of John Burrill, Esq.<sup>1</sup>

Mrs. Pickering belonged to an influential and well-known family, called the royal family of Lynn, on account of the many famous persons connected with it.<sup>2</sup> Her grandfather, George Burrill, came to Lynn soon after the first settlement, and was one of the richest planters in the town. He lived on the west side of Tower Hill, and owned two hundred acres of land. Her father, Lieutenant John Burrill, was a selectman, a representative in the General Court, and prominent in other ways. He bequeathed to her £120. Her mother was Lois, daughter of Thomas Ivory. Her brothers, Hon. John Burrill, the Speaker of the House of Representatives, and Hon. Ebenezer Burrill were very distinguished men. She is mentioned in both of their wills. Some old silver spoons which come from both the Burrill and the Pickering families were in the possession of the late Jonathan Goodhue in 1835, and are now owned by his granddaughter, Mrs. Percy Rivington King [19. IX. 279]. They are probably examples of the early manufacture of the country, for they are rudely made. They bear the following letters:—

	A B	S P	H
Reverse	{ P	I P	I M
	{ I S		

There are in the possession of the First Church of Lynn eight pieces of plate belonging to the communion service, four of which were presented by the Hon. John Burrill and four by Theophilus Burrill, Esq. Those of the former consist of a tankard and three cups, thus inscribed:—

The Gift of the Honorable  
John Burrill Esq<sup>r</sup>  
to the first Church in Lynn  
December the 10<sup>th</sup> 1721

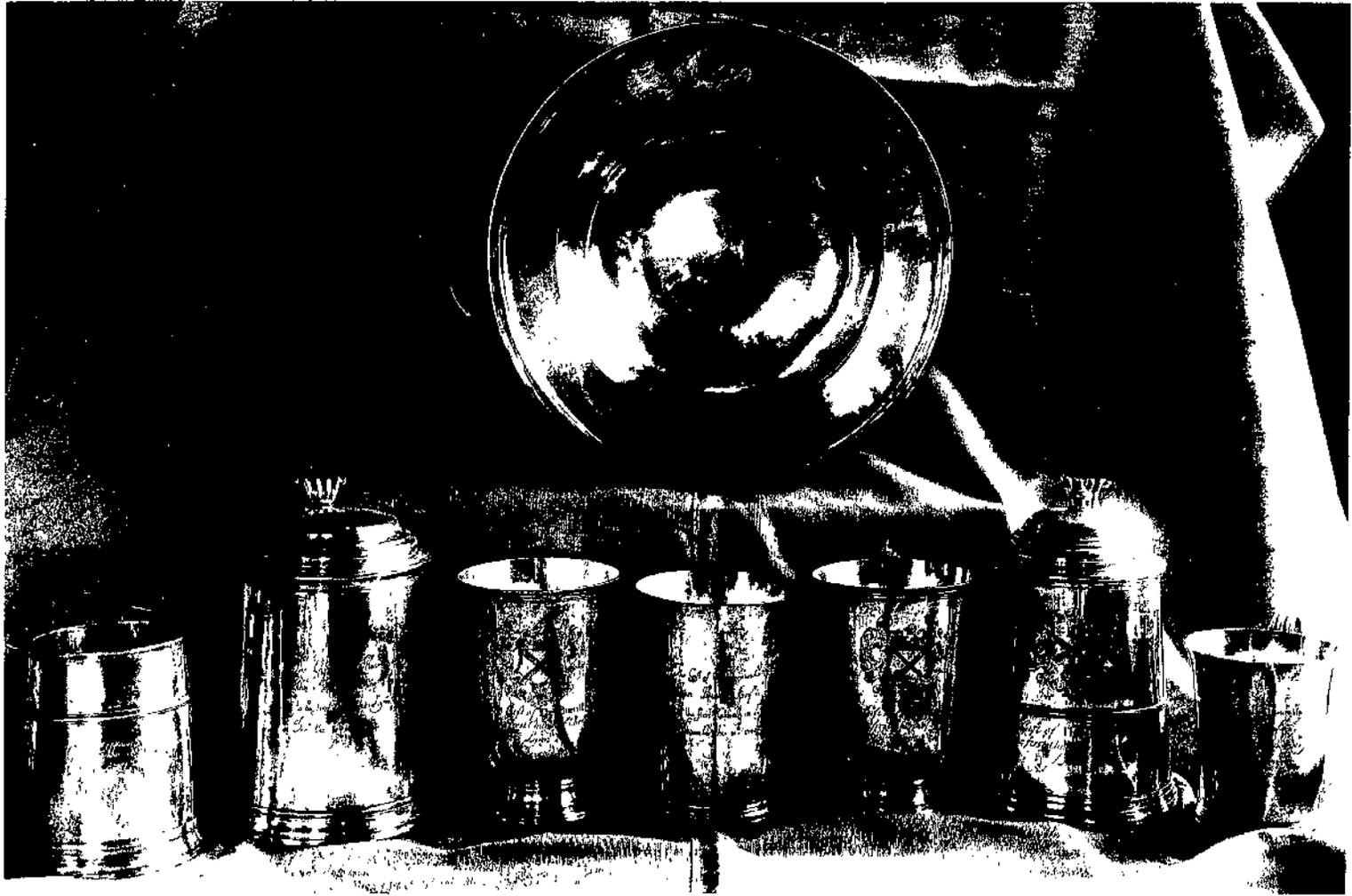
Those given by Theophilus Burrill consist of a baptismal basin, a tankard and two cups, all bearing the Burrill coat of arms and the following inscription:—

<sup>1</sup> Suffolk County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 37, p. 122.

<sup>2</sup> See the History of Lynn, by Alonzo Lewis and James R. Newhall, p. 116.

THE COMMUNION SERVICE GIVEN TO THE FIRST  
CHURCH IN LYNN, MASS.,

BY THE HON. JOHN BURRILL, ESQ., AND THEOPHILUS BURRILL, ESQ., OF  
LYNN, BROTHERS OF SARAH BURRILL [1-70. III. 1.].



The Gift of Theo. Burrill, Esq:  
to the first Church of Christ in  
Lynn.

A heliotype of this silver is here given. There is also in possession of Raymond Lee Ward, Esq., of New York, a silver can bearing the arms of Ward impaling Burrill; this can was handed down to Mr. Ward from Joshua Ward, who married, Jan. 21, 1747, Mrs. Lydia [Burrill] Hawks.

Mrs. Pickering was a daughter of John and Lois [Ivory] Burrill of Lynn. Her ancestry includes the following families: Burrill, Ivory, South. See ANCESTRY TABLES <sup>III</sup>.

1-70. III. 2. **Jonathan Pickering** [John 1-70. II. 1], born in Salem, Sept. 27, 1660, probably died young in Salem.

1-70. III. 3. **Joseph Pickering** [John 1-70. II. 1], born in Salem, Sept. 9, 1663, probably died young in Salem.

1-70. III. 4. **Benjamin Pickering** [John 1-70. II. 1], born in Salem, Jan. 15, 1665-6,<sup>1</sup> died before Nov. 6, 1718. A mariner. Residence: Salem.

It is probable that Benjamin Pickering was bred to the trade of a shipwright; but he was chiefly engaged in maritime pursuits, following the sea as a shipmaster. Perhaps, in 1702, he had given up going to sea, for, on June 22d of that year, he conveyed land to his brother William, and in the deed he is called "yeoman alias shipwright."<sup>2</sup> In deeds of 1695 and 1696, he is called "mariner," and in 1698, he is called "shipwright or mariner."<sup>3</sup>

He made an agreement with his brother William, July 26, 1701, to divide the property left them by their father. By this agreement he was to have the west part of the house with one of the ovens and half of the cellar, the eastern part of the great barn, one-third part of the north leanto and all the land to the westward. In this document he is called "yeoman or shipwright."<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> This is the date given in the Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. III. page 12. Savage gives Jan. 11 or 15, 1666, and Dr. Henry Wheatland gave this date as Jan. 11.

<sup>2</sup> Essex Registry of Deeds, Vol. 16, p. 85.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. Vol. 14, p. 176, Vol. 11, p. 135, and Vol. 13, p. 241.

<sup>4</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 307, p. 179.

It is evident that he took part in the Indian war, for July 24, 1676, £4 10s. was credited to "Benjamin Pickerin" for military service at the garrison at (Brookfield) Quaboge.<sup>1</sup>

Administration on his estate was granted to Jane Pickering, widow and relict, Nov. 12, 1718, Richard Palmer, trader, and Thomas Brewer, miller, both of Salem, giving bond.<sup>2</sup> On July 16, 1719, Mrs. Pickering exhibited an inventory of the estate which declared the property to amount to £274 10s. 6d. On Oct. 26, 1723, she rendered an account of her administration.<sup>3</sup>

Benjamin Pickering has more descendants who bear the name of Pickering than any of his brothers. His children were as follows:—

BENJAMIN PICKERING, born April 10, 1699, died before 1747.

WILLIAM PICKERING, [60-70. IV. 10<sup>a</sup>], born Aug. 3, 1700; died Feb. 17, 1765; married his cousin Eunice (Pickering) Neal [60-70. IV. 10] April 6, 1738.

EDWARD PICKERING, born Nov. 18, 1701, died in his 93d year. He married March 12, 1724, Hannah Gowing, of Lynn, and removed to Mendon, in which section his descendants are numerous.

ALICE PICKERING, born Nov. 19, 1703, married Sept. 29, 1726, Jonathan Gaskill. Their descendants in Vermont and New Hampshire are numerous. *Olive Buffum* [62. VI. 128], and *Olive Buffum* [68. VI. 138], were her granddaughter and great granddaughter.

JANE PICKERING, born Dec. 10, 1704, d. before 1747; married July 17, 1723, Samuel Aborne, and left descendants in Salem.

JOSEPH PICKERING, born in 1711, died March 8, 1790, aged 79; married first, June 14, 1733, Sarah Symonds. He married second, in 1758, Mary, widow of John Proctor of Salem. His descendants in and about Salem are numerous.

MARY PICKERING, married Jan. 16, 1734, William Reeves, who died Oct. 2, 1796, aged 86.

1-70. III. 4. *Jane Hobby*, the wife of Benjamin Pickering, was married April 27, 1693. She is said to have originally come from Plymouth, England.<sup>4</sup> Their marriage is recorded on the Salem record.<sup>5</sup> She survived

<sup>1</sup> See *Soldiers in King Philip's War*, by the Rev. George M. Bodge, printed in *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol. XXXVIII. p. 45.

<sup>2</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 312, p. 434.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* Vol. 313, pp. 22 and 718.

<sup>4</sup> *Nichols Family Record*; W. D. Pickman.

<sup>5</sup> Vol. 2, p. 39.

her husband thirty-two years. The following is an abstract of her will, which is dated July 20, 1747, and which was proved Feb. 25, 1750-51.

I Jane Pickering, of Salem county of Essex, widow, weak in body, but of sound mind.

To my two sons Edward and William Pickering I give all money I have by me, and all that is due me by bond, or otherwise, they paying my debts and the legacies I shall hereafter order them to pay.

To my son Joseph Pickering all my part of the dwelling house where I now dwell with all my part of the land adjoining thereto in Salem afores'd, also my warming pan and great pott.

To my daughter Mary Reeves, wife of William Reeves, one common right in the great pasture in Salem, also £100. in bills of old tenor to be paid her by my sons Edward and William Pickering.

To my daughter Alice Gaskill £10 in bills of old tenor, to be paid her by my son Joseph Pickering.

To my two grand sons Samuel & Joseph Aborne £5 each in bills of old tenor, to be paid them by my sons Edward and William Pickering. All the remainder of my movables to my two daughters Alice Gaskill and Mary Reeves.

My funeral charges to be paid by my son Joseph out of his part.

My son Joseph Pickering to be sole executor. her JANE PICKERING.<sup>1</sup>  
mark

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{III}{2}$ .

1-70. III. 5. Sarah Pickering (John 1-70, II. 1), born in Salem, Sept. 7, 1668,<sup>2</sup> died before 1692, as is shown by the fact that John Buttolph had a child in that year by his wife Priscilla.

Her children by John Buttolph were: —

JOHN BUTTOLPH, born July 1, 1688, died probably about 1739, since, Aug. 31 of that year, his wife administered on his estate. He removed to Boston where he was a wine-cooper, and there married, June 19, 1710, Mehitable Lord, who died Jan. 22, 1774. Eight of their children are recorded on the Boston records, some of whom married.

HANNAH BUTTOLPH, born Dec. 9, 1689, married March 27, 1710, Nathaniel Osgood of Salem, who was born Jan. 6, 1687, and died in 1756. They had eight children, and there are many descendants in Salem.

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 329, pp. 485-486.

<sup>2</sup> Salem Records, Vol. I. p. 57.

1-70. III. 5. *John Buttolph*, the husband of Sarah Pickering, probably born in Salem,<sup>1</sup> died in Salem May 10, 1713. A baker. Residence: Salem.

He was lieutenant of Captain John Higginson's company of Salem, in 1694, and is called by this title July 2, 1695, when land which had been granted to him was laid out to him by the town — "one pole Broad & one pole & a half long which is adjoining to y<sup>e</sup> land formerly M<sup>r</sup> peters, now in y<sup>e</sup> possession of Cap<sup>t</sup> George Corwin."<sup>2</sup> Either this is the same land, or a piece adjoining the land granted to his father, for the same records from which the above is quoted contain the following: —

March 3, 1661, John Buttolph had land granted to set vats to dress leather, adjoining Mr. Curwin's land which was sometime Mr. Peters.<sup>3</sup>

His occupation and parentage are learned from a deed, made Nov. 24, 1696, in which he styles himself baker, of Salem, eldest son of John Buttolph, late of Weathersfield, Conn., trader, deceased. By this deed he conveys, for £54, a brick building in Boston to Thomas Walker of Boston.<sup>4</sup>

On Sept. 28, 1705, he made the following conveyance, of which we give an abstract: —

John Buttolph, son and heir of John Buttolph, heretofore of Boston, late of Weathersfield, Conn. glover, deceased for £270 paid by Abraham Blish of Boston, hat-maker, with Priscilla my wife sell my brick messuage in Boston, in occupation of John Edwards, goldsmith, lying betwixt the messuage of Abraham Blish and the housing and land, belonging to the heirs of my late uncle Thomas Buttolph late of Boston, glover, deceased, in present possession of Mary Sweet widow and his son Nicholas Buttolph of Boston, bookseller.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Henry Wheatland gives the date of his birth as May 18, 1673; but this is really the date of his brother Samuel's birth. 1662 is the date derived from the inscription on his gravestone, but this is probably an error, for his father did not marry Hannah Gardner till Oct. 16, 1663, and their first child was John, b. April 11, 1664, whose death is recorded April 23, 1665. Are the records in error as to the name of the child whose death is thus given? The grantor of the deed cited above certainly calls himself the eldest child.

<sup>2</sup> Salem Records, Vol. 6, p. 26.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. Vol. 3, p. 29.

<sup>4</sup> Suffolk County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 17, p. 326.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid. Vol. 22, p. 338.

His gravestone, in the Charter Street burying-ground, Salem, is inscribed as follows:—

HERE LYES BURIED  
Y<sup>e</sup> BODY OF JOHN  
BUTTOLPH WHO DEPARTED THIS  
LIFE MAY Y<sup>e</sup> 10<sup>th</sup>  
1713 AGED  
51 YEARS.

Lieutenant Buttolph had a second wife named Priscilla, who administered upon his estate July 2, 1713,<sup>1</sup> and it proved that he had died insolvent. On July 25, 1722, Priscilla Buttolph married Deacon Simon Willard. She died June 21, 1731. By Lieutenant Buttolph she had three children:—

PRISCILLA BUTTOLPH, born July 31, 1692.  
SARAH BUTTOLPH, born Jan. 20, 1693.  
WILLIAM BUTTOLPH, born Sept. 7, 1695; died Sept. 23, 1720.

John Buttolph's father, as we have seen, was also named John. The elder John was born in Boston, and was a glover by trade; but he removed to Salem, where he married Hannah, daughter of George Gardner. Several of his children were born in Salem; but as early as 1669 he had gone back to Boston, for we find that his son David was born there in that year. Later on, several of his other children were born in Boston, the last recorded being Mercy, born in 1674. It was probably at about this time that he removed to Weathersfield, Conn. He may have been induced to go there by the fact that his wife's father, George Gardner, had removed from Salem to Hartford, Conn., where he afterwards died. He married again, and died in Weathersfield, leaving a large estate there and in Boston. His father, Thomas Buttolph, was also a glover living in Boston. In 1635, Thomas, at the age of thirty-two, came in "the Abigail" from London with his wife Ann, who was twenty-four years old. He joined the First Church in September, 1639, and there his children were baptized.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 311, p. 7; files No. 4,376.

<sup>2</sup> A Genealogical Dictionary of The First Settlers of New England, by James Savage, LL.D., Vol. I, p. 323.

The family name was kept alive in Boston by Buttolph Street from 1733 to 1855, when the name was changed to Irving Street. Irving Street leads from Cambridge Street to Myrtle Street.

John Buttolph's ancestry includes the following families: Buttolph, Gardner, Frier, Orne. See ANCESTRY TABLES III.

1-70. III. 6. **Edward Pickering** [John 1-70. II. 1], born in Salem, probably died in Salem.

Perhaps his place in the genealogy should be between William and Elizabeth rather than as here given.

1-70. III. 7. **William Pickering** [John 1-70. II. 1], born in Salem, Jan. 11, 1670-71. A shipmaster. Residence: Salem.

In many respects, Captain Pickering was the most distinguished member of the family in his generation. He followed the sea many years, both in a private and in a public capacity, making voyages to various foreign and domestic ports. We learn from his will that in 1701, he was "bound to Sea & desine to go to Bilboa in the Kingdom of Spaine."

He was engaged in commerce, as is learned from bills of lading and other papers. One of these, dated at Salem, Jan. 12, 1699-1700, shows that he shipped to Antigua, W. I., by the Ketch called the Lam, George Cox, master, "One Whightt Hors & too new water hogsetts." Another bill of lading, dated at Salem, Dec. 24, 1707, shows that he was interested with Samuel Browne, Philip English, Captain William Bowditch, and Samuel Wakefield in the shipment of merchandise in the sloop Mayflower, John Swasey, master, bound for Virginia or Maryland.<sup>1</sup>

He commanded the Province Galley for protecting the fisheries from the French and the Indians, and is said to have been a man of great firmness and courage.<sup>2</sup> The following interesting extract from the memorandum-book of Colonel Timothy Pickering gives a good idea of William Pickering's character:—

"He" (Lieutenant John Pickering) "had another son, named William, of whom I, when a boy, heard my father relate the following story: That in Queen Anne's war (at the beginning of the present century) he was the master, or skipper, of a fishing vessel;

<sup>1</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. I. pp. 97, 172.    <sup>2</sup> Ibid. Vol. VIII. p. 44.

that off Cape Breton, in calm weather he was attacked by a shallop containing about thirty Frenchmen. When the enemy approached, the crew were for surrendering being only six or seven in number; but as they had each a musket, and their vessel was fixed with *close quarters*, William Pickering, the master, told them, if they would only load the guns, he would fire them all himself. They did so. As the Frenchmen rowed up astern and came within musket shot, he began to fire out of the cabin windows. They rowed the faster, but he continued firing till they got up to the stern; then he shut fast the cabin windows, and they all ran forward to the fore-castle, in which were loopholes. By the time they had reached the fore-castle, the Frenchmen were climbing over the stern. He renewed his fire, and in the whole defence of his vessel, killed and wounded so many, that the survivors took to their shallop, and rowed off as expeditiously as possible. This signal act of bravery and good conduct procured him great applause, and occasioned his appointment to the command of the *Boston Galley*, a ship which had been provided and armed by the Province of Massachusetts for the protection of its commerce.”<sup>1</sup>

We have not ascertained the date when this exploit occurred, but suppose it was not long before the following commission and instructions were issued. They were both dated August 1, 1707. In the original papers the name of the vessel is not given, a blank space being left to be filled in. Whether it was the Province Galley, we cannot say, but it is certain from later papers in the Massachusetts Archives, as well as from his commission of 1709, that he commanded that vessel.

“ Commission and Instructions to Capt<sup>n</sup> W<sup>m</sup> Pickering.

“ Joseph Dudley Esq<sup>r</sup> Cap<sup>t</sup> Gen<sup>l</sup> & Gov<sup>r</sup> in Chief in and over Her Ma<sup>ty</sup>  
Province of the Massa. Bay in N. Engl<sup>d</sup> and Vice Admiral of the same  
To Cap<sup>t</sup> W<sup>m</sup> Pickering, Greeting.

“ Upon Application to me made by Major Steph<sup>n</sup> Sewall and Cap<sup>t</sup> Edw Brattle for themselves and others concern’d in the Fishery, for Licence, at their own charge to arme man and Equip in warlike manner the \_\_\_\_\_ whereof you are Commander, to attend and Guard their Fishing Vessells design’d to make Voyages in the Eastern parts at and about Cape Sables, ag<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Insults of Her Ma<sup>ty</sup>. Enemyes the French and y<sup>e</sup> Indian Enemy & Rebels. In virtue of the Power and Authority in and by Her Ma<sup>ty</sup> Royal Commission to me Granted, I do, by these presents, Reposing Special Trust and Confidence in yo<sup>r</sup> Loyalty courage & good Conduct, Licence you to arme and Equip the said Vessell accordingly, and do constitute & Appoint you the s<sup>d</sup> W<sup>m</sup> Pickering to be Captain of y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> \_\_\_\_\_ and of y<sup>e</sup> Comp<sup>s</sup> to her belonging, as well Saylours and Souldiers, and authorize you w<sup>th</sup> your s<sup>d</sup> Vessell & men to war fight

<sup>1</sup> See also the Life of Timothy Pickering, by Octavius Pickering, Vol. I. pp. 3-4.

Kill and Exercise all Acts of hostility upon and against her Ma<sup>ty</sup> said Enemies & Rebels, their Vessells Boates and Goods to take and make prize of. Willing you to keep yo<sup>r</sup> men in good order and Discipline; Hereby Commanding them to obey you as Their Captain, And you are to observe and follow the Orders and Instructions herewith given you and such other Orders as you shall receive from my Selfe for Her Maj<sup>ty</sup> Service. This Commission to continue in force by the space of four months next coming, If the War with france so long last. Given under my hand and Seal at armes at Boston the first day of August.

“By his Ex<sup>ty</sup> Command  
“I. ADDINGTON Sêcry.”

“Signed. J. DUDLEY.<sup>1</sup>”

“Province of the  
Massa. Bay.

“By his Excellency the Governo<sup>r</sup> &”

“Instructions to be Observed by Captain William Pickerin  
Commander of the

“In Pursuance of the Commission given you to arme man and Equip in warlike manner the s<sup>d</sup> at the charge of your Owners and other Employers to attend and Guard the Fishing Vessells, Design'd to make Voyages in the Eastern parts at and about Cape Sables, against the Insults of Her Maj<sup>ty</sup> Enemyes the French and the Indian Enemy & Rebels.

“I do hereby permit you to Entertain on board yo<sup>r</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Vessell such Saylours and Souldiers to the number of Twenty-five or thirty (not otherwise engaged) that shall voluntarily enter themselves & agree to Serve under yo<sup>r</sup> Command. whome you are to Govern well.

“You are from time to time to take under your care and convoy the Fishing Vessells, in a Fleet, both out and home and attend them on the Fishing Ground and in the harbours; Keeping them so near together as their Fishing may allow, that you may be the better able to cover and Protect them who are to be perfectly under your direction.

“And in case you meet with or be attacked by any of the Enemy, you may, upon such Exigence, take a man out of Each Vessell, further to reinforce you.

“You are to take Special care in the Executing of your Commission to Observe Her Maj<sup>ty</sup> Laws and Royal Proclamation relating to Sea Commissions and Letters of Marque; and not to Infringe or breake any of them. And to give me advise of all occurrents.

“Given under my hand at Boston the first day of August 1707. In the Sixth year of Her Maj<sup>ty</sup> Reign.

sign'd J. DUDLEY.”<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Massachusetts Archives, Vol. 63, p. 91.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. Vol. 63, p. 90.

Joseph Dudley Esq. Captain General and  
Lieut. Governour of Her Ma<sup>ty</sup>s Province of the Massachusetts  
and Vice Admiral of the Same. To Captain William Dummer  
Captain of Her Ma<sup>ty</sup>s Ship the Rowed Gallie *Questing*  
power & Authority in & by Her Ma<sup>ty</sup>s Royal Commission to me  
presents, Reposing special Trust and Confidence in your Loyalty  
Conduct, Constitution and appoint you to be Captain of Her Ma<sup>ty</sup>s  
Gallie, willing and requiring you to take upon you the Charge and  
Command of Captains hereof accordingly. And strictly Charging & Commanding all the Officers & Company  
belonging to Her Ma<sup>ty</sup>s Ship to behave them selves jointly and severally in their  
respective Employments with all due respect & Obedience to you their  
And you likewise to Obey and Execute all the  
as you shall from time to time receive from my self  
to the Trust reposed in you. Hereof you or any of you may not  
Answer the contrary at your peril.

Given under my hand & Seal at Arms at Boston the  
January 2 1709. In the Eighth Year of the  
Lady Anne Queen of Great Britain

By his Ex<sup>ty</sup>s Command  
J. Addington Secy.

WILLIAM PICKERING.

[1-70 III 7.]

COMMISSION OF CAPTAIN WILLIAM PICKERING AS COMMANDER OF THE  
PROVINCE GALLEY.

From other documents found among the Massachusetts Archives we learn that on February 26, 1708, a committee consisting of Captain Chambers, Mr. Baring, and Captain Hutchinson was appointed to agree with the Captain of the Province Galley for his victualling that ship. On June 14, 1709, she was one of fifteen vessels taken up as transports for the expedition against the French, and on the eighteenth of the same month she was ordered to be victualled for the proposed expedition. On August 23, 1710, she was one of fourteen vessels equipped and ready to receive the troops for the expedition. She is put down as carrying fifty men, besides her own, and at the bottom of the list of the vessels it is stated that they are all equipped, etc., except the Province Galley, which is not in port.<sup>1</sup> It is evident that Captain Pickering commanded the Province Galley at about this time, for his commission as "Captain of Her Majesty's ship the Province Galley" dated Jan. 17, 1709, and signed by Joseph Dudley, is among the Pickering papers at the Essex Institute. A heliotype of this commission is here given.

From these documents and others that follow, it is certain that the Province Galley joined the expedition, and left the fishing fleet without suitable protection from the enemy. It doubtless caused much anxiety among the owners of the vessels and their crews. This would appear from a petition on file from Salem, Marblehead, Gloucester, and other towns, asking protection for the fleet.<sup>2</sup> The General Court evidently realized the exigency of the case, for among the State Archives is the following:—

"In the House of Representatives.

"Aug<sup>th</sup> 24: 1710.

"In as much as the Province Galley is Taken of from Guarding the fishery by Her Majesty's Command to Assist in the present Expedition.

"Ordered That his Excellency & the Hon<sup>ble</sup> the Council of War be Desired to order some Suitable vessel from the Expedition frequently to visit & Guard the fishery at Cape Sables, which may also be very serviceable to the fleet for Intelligence.

"Read & Concurred,

"Is<sup>a</sup> ADDINGTON, Sec<sup>y</sup>.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See the Massachusetts Archives, Vol. 63, pp. 107, 111, 113, 165.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. Vol. 63, p. 167.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. Vol. 63, p. 168.

It appears from the following order, that for a short time Captain Pickering did not command the Province Galley; but it seems to have been decided, that he should resume command in order to guard the fishing fleet.

“ In the House of Representatives.

“ Mar : 16 : 1710.

“ Ordered That His Excellency the Govern<sup>r</sup> be Instructed to Restore Capt: W<sup>m</sup> Pickering to the Command of the Province Galley.

“ That he be allowed after the Rate of eight Pounds p month for the year curr<sup>t</sup> or for Such time thereof, as he shall bear that Command.

“ And that the Victualling of the s<sup>d</sup> Ship for the year curr<sup>t</sup>. be in the Proportions following vizt :

“ One Pound of Bread, Three Quarts of Beer, & halfe a Pint of Peas, to a man p Day.

“ And Two Messe Pieces of Meat, to five men p day.

“ Sent up for Concurrence

“ JOHN CLARK Speaker

“ In Council

“ Mar. 16<sup>th</sup> 1710/1.

“ Read and Concurred In<sup>o</sup> ADDINGTON Sēc<sup>y</sup>.”<sup>1</sup>

It may be that there was an intention of again taking the Province Galley away from her duties on the fishing grounds, or the following resolve may have been presented, so that there should be no possibility that the coast should be left unguarded.

“ Aug 24, 1711

“ Resolved That the Province Galley being built at the charge of this Province, and for the Defence of this Coast, and Security of Trade, cant be Employed for any other use, but by the Consent of the General Assembly.

“ Sent up for Concurrence

JOHN BURRILL, Speaker.

“ In Council.”<sup>2</sup>

An anecdote, which still further shows Captain Pickering's fortitude, is related by Colonel Timothy Pickering, who heard it from his father. In his memorandum-book, he says, “ Being afflicted with a corn on one of his toes, he went to a joiner's shop . . . put his foot on a block, and taking up a mallet and chisel, struck off the offending toe, an instance of hardihood extremely rare.”<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Massachusetts Archives, Vol. 63, p. 178.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. Vol. 63, p. 194.

<sup>3</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Octavius Pickering, Vol. I. p. 4, note.

After relinquishing the command of the Province Galley he appears to have given up going to sea for several years, and to have devoted his attention to his commercial interests. This we infer from various papers of a business character, and from the fact that for several years he was prominently engaged in town and church affairs. He was a selectman from 1714 to 1719, inclusive. He was also one of the founders and a prominent member of the East Church, and one of "A Committee Elected and appointed by a Considerable Number of y<sup>e</sup> Inhabitants of Salem, for y<sup>e</sup> Erecting and Building of a Meeting house for the public Worship of God, towards y<sup>e</sup> Lower or Eastern End of the Town." On Aug. 26, 1717, this committee bought land of Christopher Babbidge of Salem, cordwainer, for that purpose.<sup>1</sup>

In the spring of 1720 Captain Pickering sailed for Canso, Nova Scotia, and arrived there on the sixteenth of May, as is stated in a letter from him to his wife, dated at Canso, May 24, 1720. His object in making this voyage was evidently to extend his commercial relations to that section of the country. His business papers show that he had merchandise consigned to him there from Salem merchants. His enterprising spirit is still further shown in the fact that he established there a "Plantation or fishing Room" with the view of making a settlement. It appears that he sailed from Canso in the fall, bound for Salem, but he never arrived at his destination. All this appears in the following letter of his wife to the Governor of Nova Scotia, which is among the papers of his estate at the Essex Institute, Salem:—

Salem in

<sup>th</sup> April 1725

I hartily Reioyce to heare that yo<sup>r</sup> Honr. is comeing Leifft Gouver<sup>nr</sup> of Noua Scotia and Plasentia & am glad to here by the worshipfull Cap<sup>tn</sup> John Cally Esq<sup>r</sup> that so good a freind to justice as yor hon<sup>r</sup> is has the Gouverment of that People; my humble Requests to yor honr is that Justice may be done mee and my Deceasd husband Cap<sup>tn</sup> W<sup>m</sup> Pickering's fatherless Children In the first Place I Returne yor honr. hartly thanks for all kindness hertofore done by you for my Deceasd Husband and fatharless Children yor Honer is sensible that my sd Husband Cap<sup>tn</sup> Pickering was one of the first setlers in Canso Originally and that yor Honr assisted him in Laying out his Plantation or fishing Room; and there was Layd out by him some part of his

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 35, p. 1.

Estate for Clearing and setting said Plantation before he sailed from Canso in the fall bound for Salem Intending to Returne in the spring againe to his Plantation ; but he neuer ariued to this day and since there is one Mr Samull Green pretending frindship to me mitakeing care of the Plantation ; but Insteed thereof has proued an Enemy to me and the fatherless Children by obtaining in a clandestine maner a Patten from General Phillips for said Plantation which is not Just nor Right in the sight of God or man I humbly Request of yor honr to apear for the widdow and fatherless Children that Justice might be done for Elfs : our friend the worshipfull Cap<sup>tn</sup> John Calley Eqr is very well acquainted with the whole affairs and can give yor honr. a full acc<sup>ts</sup> of the whole matter I am also enformd that the abouesd Greene is Dead and that his Credettors is Indauering to get there Debts out of our Plantation I once more humbly Request of yor Hour to take pittty and Compassion on the widdow and fatherless and the abouesd Plantation may be further settled and Confirmed to me &x<sup>ts</sup> not Elfs but I pray God to Bless you and prosper you in yor Goverments God hath promised a blessing to those that shall apear in behalfe of the widdow and fatharless

I subscribe my self yor honrs Humble servant

HANNAH PICKERING Executrix

on Cap<sup>tn</sup> W<sup>m</sup> Pickering's Estate

At the time Captain Pickering went to Canso, and for several years afterwards, there was much trouble with the Indians in that section of the country. Many vessels were captured by them, and the officers and crews were held for ransom. It is very possible that Captain Pickering had the misfortune to be of this number, if we can believe the evidence of the following letter : —

MADOM PICEKERN

Avgst: 16<sup>th</sup> 1726

This Comes by y<sup>e</sup> post to In forme you abovt yovr hvsband y<sup>t</sup> was taken Att Canso one of y<sup>e</sup> men y<sup>t</sup> came from canedy saw M<sup>r</sup> William Pickern at a farmers hoves 5 miles above mount Riall and he had som talk w<sup>th</sup> him acoming home to his wife he is now A worken for money to bring him a Long this man y<sup>t</sup> saw him yovr husband wovld have him goe and trink att an En wth him and was a mind to send a Leter but this french man could not tarey so y<sup>t</sup> he had not opertvnety to send A leter by him This french man saw him 3 months A go and saith he know<sup>z</sup> him very wal and he saith y<sup>t</sup> their was two more yong men taken with yovr hvsband If yov are a mind to Ritt to yovr hvsband Rite by y<sup>e</sup> way of Albony and their yovr Leter will be cared In a short time madom I have no more to In forme yov with [ ]

Resp yovrs to sarve in w<sup>th</sup> I m<sup>ty</sup>

JAMES JOHNSTON.

We have found nothing further concerning the disappearance of Captain Pickering than is contained in these letters. The incomplete files of *The Boston News-Letter* and *The Boston Gazette*, which we have been able to examine, contain advices from Canso of many captures by the Indians, but they seldom give the names of the vessels, masters, or crew.

Captain Pickering was supposed to be dead, and his wife was granted administration on his estate April 3, 1723, when he was called Captain William Pickering, of Salem, mariner. William Bowditch, of Salem, mariner and merchant, and Miles Ward, Jr., gave bond.<sup>1</sup> On the eighteenth of the following July his will, which was dated Sept. 18, 1701, was admitted to probate. He gave his entire estate to his wife (who was made executrix) for life, and at her decease it was to be divided equally among his children. The inventory of May 17, 1723, was taken by William Bowditch, William Gerrish, and Miles Ward. It amounted to £1537 5s. 7d., and included the homestead, half a warehouse and press at Winter Island, a garden spot and wharf, one-half the house that Jane Pickering lives in, bills of credit, sundry goods in the shop, an Indian girl, 71½ ounces of plate, and "1 Scutchien & frame 3s."

After his wife's death administration on the estate was granted June 29, 1735, to Adoniram Collins. The inventory made on July 21 amounted to £1289 2s. 1d. The final account of the "estate of William Pickering late of Salem Dec<sup>d</sup> & Hannah Pickering Dec<sup>d</sup>" was rendered Feb 28, 1737-8.<sup>2</sup>

William and Hannah (Browne) Pickering had the following children:—

HANNAH PICKERING,	born Jan. 26, 1697-8, baptism recorded following the date Jan. 16, 1697-8, died Feb. 1697-8.
HANNAH PICKERING,	born July 6, 1699, baptism recorded following the date May 21, 1699, died in six weeks.
WILLIAM PICKERING,	born Aug. 3, 1700, died before 1737 s.p.
JAMES PICKERING,	born Feb. 24, 1701-2, baptized March 1, 1701-2; married Thankful Hill, who married, second, Rev. Joseph Champney of Beverly.
SARAH PICKERING,	born Jan. 23, 1703-4, baptism recorded following the date of Jan. 2, 1703-4, died May 3, 1711.

<sup>1</sup> It is probable that administration was granted on the supposition that he died intestate, and that afterwards a will was found.

<sup>2</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 313, pp. 595, 667-668; files, No. 21,823-4.

- HANNAH PICKERING, born July 8, 1708, baptized April 18, 1708; married Aug. 20, 1731, Adoniram Collins, who was born June 15, 1706.
- SARAH PICKERING, born June 4, 1711, baptized June 10, 1711.
- ELIZABETH PICKERING, born Jan. 5, 1712-13, baptized Jan. 11, 1712-13, died Oct. 11, 1797; married Abraham Watson, who died July 6, 1790, aged 78 years.
- MARY PICKERING, born Dec. 18, 1715, baptized Dec. 25, 1715, died Feb. 20, 1804; married, first, — Ellis; married, second, Nov. 2, 1747, Warwick Palfrey; married, third, Nov. 17, 1757, as his third wife, Jonathan Gardner.

1-70. III. 7. *Hannah Browne*, the wife of William Pickering, born in Salem, March 9, 1672-3; died before June, 1735.

Mrs. Pickering was admitted to the First Church, Salem, April 4, 1697. From the family papers it appears that she carried on her husband's business after his death. She was living as late as Nov. 20, 1734, as we learn from a letter of that date addressed to her from John Swinnerton of Boston.

They were married June 19, 1695. She was the daughter of James and Hannah (Bartholomew) Browne, and the granddaughter of Ruling Elder John Browne, an important man who conducted a large trade with Virginia and Maryland. Her father was a merchant trading with Maryland, where he was killed by a negro, his body being found Nov. 12, 1675. Her mother was a daughter of Henry Bartholomew, who owned a great deal of property, held town and colonial commissions and military appointments, and was a representative in the General Court. He died in 1692, at the age of ninety-two.<sup>1</sup> Hannah (Browne) Pickering's mother married for a second husband Dr. John Swinnerton. In her old age she lived with her daughter, Hannah Pickering; as can be seen from an agreement dated April 29, 1706, between herself and her son, William Pickering.<sup>2</sup> Hannah Pickering's brother, James Browne, married her husband's sister, Elizabeth (Pickering) Nichols.<sup>3</sup>

See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{III}{4}$ .

<sup>1</sup> The Record of the Bartholomew Family, by G. W. Bartholomew, p. 50.

<sup>2</sup> Essex County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 18, pp. 181 a, 182.

<sup>3</sup> Notices of Elder John Browne and some of his descendants in the Essex Institute Historical Collection, Vol. VIII. pp. 33, *et seq.*

1-70. III. 8. *Elizabeth Pickering* [John 1-70. II. 1], born in Salem, Sept. 7, 1674. She married Samuel Nichols before 1696; and afterwards married James Browne, Feb. 22, 1698-9. Except for her marriages, nothing of her history is known.

By Samuel Nichols, she had one child,

ELIZABETH NICHOLS, born June 17, 1696, who married, Dec. 8, 1715, Thomas Brewer, of Salem, a miller.

By her second husband, James Browne, she had the following children:

JAMES BROWNE, baptized July 9, 1704. A James Browne married July 22, 1724, Martha Parnell.

SAMUEL BROWNE, baptized Nov. 3, 1706, is said to have moved to Sutton, Mass.

JOHN BROWNE, married April 2, 1728, Susannah Masury.

WILLIAM BROWNE, m. Dec. 13, 1733, Mary Frost, who was born Dec. 2, 1713, and died April 11, 1794.

MARY BROWNE, married Aug. 20, 1728, Samuel King.

HANNAH BROWNE, is thought to have died young.

The descendants of the above children are numerous.

1-70. III. 8<sup>2</sup>. *Samuel Nichols*, the first husband of Elizabeth Pickering, of whom nothing has been learned, except that he probably died before Feb. 22, 1698-9.

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{III}{8}$ .

1-70. III. 8<sup>2</sup>. *James Browne*, the second husband of Elizabeth Pickering, born in Salem, May 23, 1675. Married, Feb. 22, 1698-9. Residence: Salem.

In early life he was a mariner, but in 1717, at the time when he purchased some land near Brown's Pond for £40 of George Trask, blacksmith, he was called a husbandman. On this land some of his descendants lived in 1866. The pond, which was once within the limits of Salem, but is now included in South Danvers, has been called Long Pond and Lindsey's Pond. Family tradition has it that Browne was captured by Captain Kidd, and escaped by swimming.<sup>1</sup> His sister Hannah married Captain William Pickering [1-70. III. 7].

<sup>1</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VIII. p. 45.

He was the son of James and Hannah (Bartholomew) Browne. See ANCESTRY TABLES III.

1-70. III. 9. **Hannah Pickering** [John 1-70. II. 1], born in Salem, July 2, 1677, died before July 29, 1714, the date of her third husband's second marriage. The following extracts from the Essex County Probate Records show that she was married three times:—

Dec. 4, 1707, Richard Palmer, of Salem, and Hannah his wife, formerly widow of Daniel King of Lynn, appointed guardians of Jane King, aged about nine years, daughter of Daniel King, late of Lynn, deceased.<sup>1</sup>

June 28, 1707, Richard Palmer of Salem and Hannah his now wife, formerly widow of Nathaniel Beadle, son of Samuel Beadle, late of Salem, deceased, appointed guardians unto Hannah Beadle, aged about five years, daughter of said Nathaniel Beadle, late of Salem, deceased.<sup>2</sup>

By her first husband, Daniel King, Hannah had:—

RALPH KING, born Dec. 9, 1695, who appears to have died before 1712.

JANE KING, born April 14, 1698, married Nov. 21, 1723, Benjamin Tout, a mariner of Boston. He made his will Oct. 11, 1731, being bound to sea, in favor of his wife Jane. Tho. Lee, Jr., Jn<sup>o</sup> Charnock, and Owen Harris witnessed it. Administration to his widow Jane was granted Aug. 16, 1743. Jane Tout married, Oct. 2, 1744, John Pimm of Boston.

By her second husband, Nathaniel Beadle, Hannah had:—

HANNAH BEADLE, baptized July 5, 1702. She is named in the will of her grandmother Hannah, widow of Samuel Beadle. The will, dated March 29, 1729, was proved July 25, 1736.

By her third husband Richard Palmer, Hannah had:—

MARY PALMER, baptized Oct. 5, 1707. She probably died young, as her sister Lydia is called eldest daughter in the division of her father's estate.

LYDIA PALMER, baptized at adult age, May 4, 1729, called eldest daughter in the division of Richard Palmer's estate. Banns published Oct. 7, 1732, of Lydia Palmer and Tobias Davis.

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 309, p. 271; files, No. 15,795.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. Vol. 309, p. 234; files, No. 2,168.

SARAH PALMER, baptized July 2, 1710. She probably died young, as she is not mentioned in the settlement of Richard Palmer's estate.

RICHARD PALMER, born in 1712, died in Salem Sept., 1796, aged 84 years. The records of the Episcopal church where his nine children were baptized, show that, aged 83, on sick bed, May 4, 1796, he was baptized. He married Mary Reeves. Their banns were published May 18, 1745.

MARY PALMER. She was called youngest daughter in the division of her father's estate. A Mary Palmer's banns were published to Samuel Cheever, Sept. 11, 1731.

1-70. III. 9<sup>1</sup>. *Daniel King*, the first husband of Hannah Pickering, born in Lynn, Oct. 1, 1669, died before 1701, in which year his widow married Nathaniel Beadle.

Mr. King belonged to a family of considerable importance in Lynn. He was the son of Captain Ralph and Elizabeth (Walker) King. His maternal grandfather, Captain Richard Walker, was a farmer, selectman, and a representative to the General Court, who lived on the West side of Saugus River, and was buried at the age of ninety-five years, May 16, 1687. His father, Captain Ralph King, was also a man of prominence and usefulness, who left an estate inventoried at £2365 4s. Captain King was the son of Mr. Daniel King, a large landholder in Lynn; but he is not named in his father's will, as Daniel King had before dying given him an estate.<sup>1</sup> His ancestry includes the following families: King, Guy (?), Walker, Talmage. See ANCESTRY TABLES III.

1-70. III. 9<sup>2</sup>. *Nathaniel Beadle*, the second husband of Hannah Pickering, born in Salem, March 29, 1669, married in 1701, died before Oct. 29, 1706, the date of Hannah Beadle's marriage to her third husband. Residence: Salem.

He was a son of Samuel and Hannah (Lemon) Beadle of Salem. Samuel Beadle served in the Indian wars, and was crippled. On this account, permission was granted him by the General Court to keep an inn. His mother was the daughter of Robert Lemon, whose widow Mary, married Philip Cromwell. Hannah (Lemon) Beadle's will was made March

<sup>1</sup> See Essex County Probate Records and Essex County Registry of Deeds; Lewis's History of Lynn; and Tabular Pedigree of Daniel King and his Descendants, by Rufus King of Yonkers, N. Y.

29, 1729, and proved July 25, 1736. In it she bequeathed to Hannah, the daughter of her son Nathaniel, 5s. besides what she had formerly given to said Nathaniel Beadle.<sup>1</sup>

See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{III}{6}$ .

1-70. III. 9<sup>3</sup>. *Richard Palmer*, the third husband of Hannah Pickering, born in Salem, Dec. 6, 1675, married Oct. 29, 1706, died probably about 1745-6. A shoreman. Residence: Salem.

On July 29, 1714, after the death of his wife Hannah, he married Mary Poulton, a widow. She was a daughter of Moses and Mary (Ormes) Voeden of Salem. Administration on his estate was granted to his son Richard, March 24, 1745-6. The inventory, of Aug. 7, 1746, amounted to £ 3991 11s. 5d. old tenor.<sup>2</sup>

The old Palmer house, which formerly stood in the rear of High Street Court, Salem, was built in 1674, and taken down in July, 1887. A photograph of it which was taken in June, 1886, is at the Essex Institute.

Richard Palmer was the son of Richard and Mary (Gilbert) Palmer of Salem. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{III}{6}$ .

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 320, pp. 326, 327; files, No. 2,169.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., Vol. 327, pp. 214, 215, Vol. 328, pp. 473-4; files, No. 20,446.



LOIS (PICKERING) ORNE.

[1-11. IV. 1.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF THE HEIRS OF THE LATE  
MRS. WILLIAM GURDON SALMONSFALL, OF BOSTON.

## FOURTH GENERATION.

1-11. IV. 1. **Lois Pickering** (John 1-70. III. 1), born in Salem, died in Salem.

Mrs. Orne was received into full communion with the First Church of Salem, Oct. 23, 1711.<sup>1</sup> By the will of her brother, the Rev. Theophilus Pickering, she received £1500 old tenor, and by her father's will one hundred poles of land, which he bought of Joseph Andrews, near the lower meeting-house; also £30 in addition to what he had already given her.<sup>2</sup>

Some of her silver plate is still owned by her descendants. Her great-great-granddaughter, Mrs. George W. Embree, of New York, has an old silver pepper-box, and another great-great-granddaughter, the late Miss Lucilla Orne Damon, had two other pieces of her silver, marked with the names of Timothy and Lois Orne.

Mrs. Orne's portrait, of which a heliotype is here given, is the earliest picture of any member of the Pickering family which we have discovered. It looks like the work of Greenwood, who painted portraits of some of the Salem people. It was handed down to her great-great-grandson, the late Joseph Sebastian Cabot, together with four other family portraits, all of which appear in this work. They were given by his widow to Mrs. Orne's great-great-great-granddaughter, the late Mrs. William G. Saltonstall, of Boston. They are now in the possession of Mrs. Saltonstall's children. The late Dr. William Mack, of Salem, said these pictures were formerly in the possession of his great-aunt, Esther (Orne) Clarke, by whom they were sent to her sister Rebecca (Orne) Cabot.

1-11. IV. 1. *Timothy Orne*, the husband of Lois Pickering, born in Salem, baptized there Sept. 22, 1683, died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.

<sup>1</sup> Records of the First Church, Salem, p. 126.

<sup>2</sup> See the will of John Pickering [1-70 III. 1]; and the will of Theophilus Pickering [48. IV. 8].

Mr. Orne owned the covenant at the First Church, Salem, Nov. 19, 1710, and his children were baptized the same day.<sup>1</sup>

Captain Orne, as he was called, was in early life a mariner, and is so termed in various recorded real estate transactions. On Nov. 4, 1724, he bought of Patience Marston, widow, Benjamin Marston, Esq., and Elizabeth Marston, spinster, all of Salem, a wharf with the warehouses thereon, situated in Salem, lying between the warehouse formerly of Mr. John Ruck, deceased, and the warehouse formerly of Mr. John Tawley.<sup>2</sup> Just how soon after this he gave up going to sea, we have not learned. He became extensively engaged in mercantile affairs, and was one of the foremost merchants of Salem. Several of his account-books are still preserved by his great-great-grandson, Mr. Francis H. Lee, of Salem. Three of these — a ledger, journal, and waste book — are neatly kept in an excellent plain hand, and the spelling is accurate. Each book has its title written upon it. One of them, for example, is entitled as follows: —

“ | Journal Book, | Number I. | Of me Timothy Orne | Merchant in Salem | New England | From the First of May | 1733 | .”

From these books we find that his commercial transactions were with many foreign ports, and that the articles dealt in were various. At the above date, May 1, 1733, he had in stock twenty hogsheads of wine, eighteen hogsheads of Virginia tobacco, thirty barrels of raisins, and fourteen pieces of broadcloth. He had factors in London, Aberdeen, Rochelle, Lisbon, Stockholm, Bordeaux, Amsterdam, etc., to whom he consigned various goods, and through whom he bought iron, wine, raisins, figs, wool, paper, linen, broadcloth, etc. He frequently insured the goods and vessels of other merchants.

He seems to have been fond of games of chance, for his books contain a “Wager Account,” in which there are frequent entries. On one occasion he bet on a horse-race, and won £15. But he was not always the winner. The amount of his wagers, from June to October, was £67. Sometimes, after entering an account, he would write underneath: “Observe. That

<sup>1</sup> Records of the First Church, Salem, p. 124.

<sup>2</sup> Essex County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 42, p. 273.

# PEDIGREE OF HORNE OR ORNE OF SALEM, MASS.

**JOHN HORNE** = 1st *ANN* = 2d *FRANCES*

b. about 1602; d. 11, —, 1684. Will dated 10, 8, 1679; codicil dated 2, 27, 1683-4; proved 11, 25, 1684; a house-carpenter. He came to Salem before 5, 18, 1631, being admitted as freeman at that time. He had a grant of 75 acres of land in 1636, and a grant of land for a wind-mill in 1637. He was agent for Rev. Hugh Peters in 1646, whose land near the meeting-house he bought, 72, 28, 1652. For more than fifty years he was a deacon of the First Church of Salem.

Probably his first wife. She joined the church before 1636. She died before 9, 13, 1665, as in a deed of that date his wife is called Frances.

Probably his second wife. She is called the wife of John Horne in deeds of 9, 13, 1665, and 12, 1, 1659, therefore she must have been the mother, at least, of his last two children.



a Learner may better understand the Rules of this art, I shall Point out several other ways that this transaction may be entered." Then follow the different ways in which the entry might be made. Aug. 29, 1733, he bought three-fifths of the ship Dragon of Aberdeen for £100. His house on Essex Street, Salem, is still standing, though very much changed by alterations.

In his Waste Book is the following, dated Aug. 29; 1733:—

"I have this Day by the death of D. M. my Uncle got a Legacy of an House in Broad Street worth £200. (after the following Legacy is paid) which has stood empty since Whit Sunday last.

"But I am by the said Will to pay a Legacy of £30 to Mr. Thomas Richman at Martinmas next."

Who this uncle was, we have not learned.

As to the spelling of his surname, Colonel Timothy Pickering wrote the following in his memorandum-book:—

"Of the children of my grandparents, Lois married Timothy Horne (His children wrote the name Orne) who died when I was a boy."

Timothy Orne himself certainly wrote his name Orne, for it so appears in his account-books. No doubt the name was really Horne. Several branches of the family which are descended from the original settler spell it so to this day. The aspiration of the "H" in English is comparatively modern; and from names which originally began with that letter, in many cases it has been dropped in the process of time.

He disposed of his property by his will, which was dated Jan. 29, 1753, and was proved March 5, 1753. The following is an abstract of it:

To my wife all household furniture and plate; also negro man Cesar, and negro woman Phillis, and £133 lawful money; also a third part of the annual income of all my estate as her dower during her natural life.

To my son Timothy Orne, Jr., my farm of one hundred and twenty-three acres of land with the buildings thereon with the stock of creatures and utensils in the district of Danvers in Salem; also three acres of salt marsh, in Lynn, half of four acres of upland and marsh, and twelve acres of land lying in Danvers, called Orne's Orchard, "about seven acres whereof I had of my honored father," and the other five of which I bought of Samuel Stone, and Samuel Stone, Jr.; also a piece of land lying in the Northfield in Salem called Massey's Orchard or Point, containing eleven acres;

also about two acres of land near the North river in Salem; also an old warehouse and the land which it stands upon, and a half part of my wharf lands; also two common rights and a half in the common lands of Salem.

To my son Samuel Orne a farm of one hundred and fifty acres in the north precinct of Lynn, with all the buildings appertaining; also five acres of salt marsh in Lynn town marsh; also the half part of the mansion house and land belonging to it, and the other buildings thereon, situated in Salem, on the Main street, containing about eighty square poles of land which I purchased of my brother Joseph Orne, deceased, and Saml. Fiske; also about seven acres of land lying in the Northfield in Salem; also half of four acres of land in Danvers; also half part of a new warehouse with the land under it, and a quarter part of my wharf lands; also two common rights and a half in the common lands in Salem.

To my son John Orne a farm in the north precinct of Lynn with all the buildings thereon containing one hundred and seventy acres; also the remaining half of my mansion house devised to son Samuel; also two acres in the Northfield; also about five acres of land in the said Northfield; also the remaining part of my new warehouse, and land under it, and the remaining quarter part of my wharf lands in Salem; also two common rights and a half in the common lands in Salem; also my negro boy Peter.

To my daughter Lois Lee, one quarter part of about twenty-six acres of woodland in Danvers; also £400 lawful money.

To my daughter Esther Gardner, the house warehouse and fifty poles of land in Danvers; also £267 lawful money.

To my daughter Mary Diman, one quarter part of twenty-six acres of woodland in Danvers; also £400 of lawful money.

After my funeral expenses are paid all the remainder of my estate to my six children: Timothy, Samuel, John, Lois, Esther and Mary. My sons John and Samuel to be my executors.<sup>1</sup>

Timothy Orne was the son of Joseph and Ann (Thompson) Orne of Salem. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{IV}{1}$ .

12-47. IV. 2. **Sarah Pickering** (John 1-70. III. 1), born in Salem, baptized there Feb. 6, 1688-9, died in Salem.<sup>2</sup>

She and her husband, Joseph Hardy, were among the thirty-six members of the First Church who formed the East Church, Nov. 14,

<sup>1</sup> Essex Probate Records, Vol. 331, pp. 182-187; files, No. 20,103.

<sup>2</sup> Sarah Pickering's marriage is given in the Nichols' record as July 17, 1707. The Salem Records give no date, but the marriage entry follows a previous entry with the date June 25, 1707. The Ropes Bible gives July, 1707, and Francis H. Lee's memorandum has Aug., 1707.

1718.<sup>1</sup> The following account of Mrs. Hardy is from the Journal of her grandson Jonathan Goodhue, of New York:—

“Sarah Hardy was the daughter of John and Sarah Pickering, and received by her father’s will dated Nov. 20, 1721, a gift of the house in which she was living, being the same which he bought of Joseph Andrews. It was situated in the south-eastern part of the town on the street now called Hardy Street, which runs from Derby street southwardly toward the harbor; and a pear tree is flourishing (1814) near which the house stood, and from which Martha Goodhue had mentioned gathering fruit when a girl. It is a very ancient tree.”

This is undoubtedly the same pear-tree which is still standing in the front yard of Mr. Charles H. Allen’s house, numbered twenty-four, and situated on the western side of Hardy Street, near the water. It is still (1893) in bearing condition. Dr. Bentley is said to have traced this tree back to 1639. It is supposed to have been one of the same lot imported from England, which included the Endicott pear-tree. It bears an orange pear, but the original fruit was the Button pear. It has been photographed by Cousins of Salem.

Mrs. Hardy’s brother, the Rev. Theophilus Pickering, left £1500 old tenor to her children. A silver porringer, which belonged to her, is now (1894), in the possession of her descendant, Mrs. George Amory Sargent [12. X. 161], to whom it has been handed down through several generations. There was in the possession of the late Dr. William Mack [6. VIII. 54], of Salem, an old thread-case, on which is written that it was given to his sister’s great-grandmother Clarke by her Aunt Hardy, in 1738, when the former was eight years old.

12-47. IV. 2. *Joseph Hardy*, the husband of Sarah Pickering, born in Salem, baptized there in July, 1682, died in Salem. A shipbuilder. Residence: Salem.

In an article printed in the Essex Institute Historical Collections,<sup>2</sup> he is spoken of as follows:—

<sup>1</sup> Records of the First Church, Salem, p. 143.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. V. p. 251.

“Joseph Hardy was a very successful builder about 1700 and onward. He lived on the west side of Hardy Street, near the water. The house was demolished in 1825. He left no sons but had six married daughters.”

The following account of Joseph Hardy's connection with shipbuilding, from which it appears that he was not always successful in his enterprises, is taken from an old Ropes Bible now in the possession of Mrs. Charles T. Ripley [12. X. 183].

“His shipyard was on the beach off Hardy Street. As he was on the eve of launching a ship, she fell over, which sad event took away all his property, and he never after did any more work, as he soon had the palsy.”

Another account of his misfortune is as follows:—

“He built a large ship at Haverhill, which fell over on account of the ground settling, and he could never get her off the ways. His affairs became thereby greatly embarrassed. He mortgaged a considerable estate in land which he owned in the east part of Salem, and never redeemed it. Tradition is that he was greatly wronged by the mortgagee.”

It is certain that he lived at one time in Haverhill, for in a deed of Jan. 11, 1714–15, in which he makes his wife Sarah his attorney, he is called Joseph Hardy of Haverhill, shipwright.<sup>1</sup> He was living there as late as 1716, for it is recorded on the Salem records that his son Joseph was born at Haverhill, Sept. 14, 1716. Perhaps his father, whose name he bore, once lived in Haverhill, for it seems that July 13, 1680, he bought of Jeremiah Belcher, two hundred and forty acres of land in that town on the north side of the Merrimac River. This piece of land was sold by his heirs, May 27, 1706, when Joseph Hardy, shipwright, son of Joseph Hardy, Jr., late of Salem deceased; Ebenezer Lambert, shipwright, and Mary his wife, daughter of said Joseph Hardy, Jr., and Seeth Hardy, singlewoman, all of Salem, only surviving heirs of said Joseph Hardy, Jr., late of Salem, deceased, sold it for £10, to John Higginson.<sup>2</sup>

It appears that Joseph Hardy was living in Boston in 1713, for it is recorded in a deed of June 27, 1713, that Joseph Hardy and his wife Sarah, late of Salem, now of Boston, shipwright, sold land to Captain William Bowditch, of Salem.<sup>3</sup> It would seem, however, that his residence in

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 29, p. 52.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* Vol. 25, p. 216.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* Vol. 18, p. 194.

these places was only for a brief period, and that most of his life was spent in Salem. The street on which he lived was named for the Hardy family, they being owners of most of the land on which it was located. Some of this property is still owned by Mr. Hardy's descendants, the Phippens. Hardy's Rock, in Salem Harbor, also perpetuates the family name.

There are no descendants of Joseph Hardy in the male line, and it seems probably from the annexed pedigree that there are no such descendants of his great-grandfather, John Hardy, the original settler. The descendants of Joseph Hardy's daughters, however, are very numerous, as this work shows. They must have had a great reverence for his name, as we find it repeatedly borne by their descendants. We find, for example : Joseph Hardy Prince [12. VIII. 151], Joseph Hardy Millet [15. VII. 100], Joseph Hardy Phippen [24. VIII. 247], Joseph Hardy Peirce [25-26. VII. 143], Joseph Hardy Henfield [29. VII. 157], and Joseph Hardy Ropes [12. IX. 175], and several others. Miss Sarah Prince [12. IX. 169], however, says she has heard that the love of this name existed from the fact that these daughters had a brother Joseph Hardy, who died when quite young, and of whom they were quite fond. This must have been the child who died from the effects of eating henbane.

There is a tradition among the descendants of these daughters concerning the origin of the peculiar name of Seeth, which occasionally appears amongst them. The following account of it is taken from the Ropes Bible :<sup>1</sup> "One of my female ancestors had a near relative at sea who was supposed to be lost, and was given up by his friends. Suddenly he appeared among them well, and their joy was so great that one of them exclaimed in the words of Scripture 'The Lord seeth not as man seeth and my child shall be named Seeth.' My mother's name was Seeth." This was recorded in the Ropes Bible by Henry Ropes [14. VIII. 162], whose mother was Seeth Millet [14. VII. 97]. The first appearance of this name we have met with among the ancestors of Joseph Hardy, was his grandmother, Seeth Grafton, the wife of Joseph Grafton, and daughter of Thomas Gardner. She was baptized in Salem, Dec. 25, 1636.

<sup>1</sup> The Ropes Bible, here and elsewhere quoted in this work, has the following :—

"Salem 1795 | George Ropes first | owner of Bible | 1826 | Henry Ropes. | "

Joseph Hardy was the son of Joseph and Mary (Grafton) Hardy, of Salem. His ancestry includes the following families: Hardy, Grafton, Gardner, Frier. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{IV}{2}$ .

48. IV. 3. **John Pickering** [John 1-70. III. 1], born in Salem, baptized there Feb. 6, 1688-9, died in Salem. A shipmaster. Residence: Salem.<sup>1</sup>

He was taken by the French, and thrown into prison, where he fell sick; but he died in Salem in the house opposite Dr. Prince's meeting-house.

48. IV. 7. **Lydia Pickering** [John 1-70. III. 1], born in Salem, died in Salem. The cause of her death is given in the memorandum-book of her nephew, Colonel Timothy Pickering, viz.:—

"She was drowned in a well which was afterward filled up by my grandfather Oct. 14, 1702."

The original coroner's inquest of her death, which is in the possession of Charles P. Bowditch [44. IX. 859], has been printed in the *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*.<sup>2</sup> It reads as follows:—

"Ess. sc. An Inquisition Indented Taken at Salem w<sup>th</sup> in y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> County of Essex y<sup>e</sup> 16<sup>th</sup> day of Octob Anno 1702. In y<sup>e</sup> first year of y<sup>e</sup> Reigne of ou<sup>r</sup> sovereign Lady Anne by y<sup>e</sup> grace of God of England Scotland France & Ireland Queen, defender of the Faith &c — Before Daniel Epes Gent. One of y<sup>e</sup> Coron<sup>m</sup> of our s<sup>d</sup> Lady y<sup>e</sup> Queen w<sup>th</sup>in y<sup>e</sup> County of Essex afores<sup>d</sup> — upon y<sup>e</sup> View of y<sup>e</sup> Body of Lydia Pickering Lying dead at y<sup>e</sup> house of m<sup>r</sup> Jn<sup>o</sup> Pickering in Salem afores<sup>d</sup> — By y<sup>e</sup> Oaths of — Edward Flint Sam<sup>el</sup> Phippen Stephen Ingolls Dan<sup>el</sup> Grant Jn<sup>o</sup> Orne Sam<sup>el</sup> Sibley Sam<sup>el</sup> West Jn<sup>o</sup> Cook Sam<sup>el</sup> Shattock Henry West Joseph Duglas W<sup>m</sup> Reeves Ephr. Kempton & Jn<sup>o</sup> Priest, Good & Lawfull men of Salem afores<sup>d</sup> w<sup>th</sup>in y<sup>e</sup> County afores<sup>d</sup>, Who being charged & Sworne To Inquire for our s<sup>d</sup> Lady y<sup>e</sup> Queen, w<sup>h</sup> by w<sup>t</sup> means & how Lydia Pickering came to her death Upon Their Oaths do say That she came to her End or death by falling into a well & being drowned & so came to her End by misfortune. — In Witnes whereof as well

<sup>1</sup> Some authorities give his birth as Oct. 28, 1688; but the Salem Records, Vol. 1, p. 85, settle the date as Oct. 8, as given on the Sheets. The record book of Samuel P. Gardner gives the date of death as Sept. 12, 1712; but the Salem Records, Vol. 1, p. 141, and other authorities state that he died on Sept. 10.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. XLVI. p. 179.

I y<sup>o</sup> Coron<sup>t</sup> afores<sup>d</sup> as y<sup>o</sup> Jurors afores<sup>d</sup> To this Inquisition have put our hands & seals y<sup>o</sup> Day & year aboves<sup>d</sup> —

The mark of Jn <sup>o</sup> × Cook	Dan <sup>d</sup> Epes Coron <sup>r</sup>
Sam <sup>d</sup> Shattock	Edward flint <small>Foreman</small>
Henry West	Samuel phippen
Joseph Duglas	Stephen Ingalls
William Reeves	Daniel grant
Ephraim: Kempton	John Orne
John Priest	Samuell Sibley
	Sam <sup>d</sup> West

Each of these names is followed by a red sealing-wax seal.

48. IV. 8. **Theophilus Pickering** [John 1-70. III. 1], born in Salem, baptized there Sept. 29, 1700, died in Essex. A minister. Residence: Chebacco, Ipswich.<sup>1</sup>

Theophilus Pickering, H. C., 1719, was called by the Chebacco parish to assist its minister, Rev. John Wise, in March, 1725. Authorities differ as to the date of his ordination.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Henry Wheatland in his Transcript of the Baptisms of the First Church in Salem, published in Essex, Inst. Hist. Coll., Vol. VII. p. 174, gives the date of baptism as Sept. 27, 1700; but this is an error, as the date given above is taken from the original records of the First Church.

Robert Crowell, in the History of the Town of Essex, Mass., page 166, gives the date of his death as Oct. 7, 1747, and on page 168 of the same work he prints the inscription from his gravestone as Sept. 19, 1747, and states, in a foot-note on page 166, that, "Both have been correctly copied." The History of Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton, by Joseph B. Felt, page 261, also states that he died Oct. 7, 1747. We have seen the gravestone at Essex, and find that it is inscribed Sept. 19, 1747, but the date from the Ipswich records must have been inaccurately copied, for Mr. Charles W. Bamford, town clerk of Ipswich, writes that the date of Mr. Pickering's death is recorded as Oct. 19, 1747, on page 327 of book 2 of the town records. This is undoubtedly the accurate date, for it is confirmed by his obituary, printed in The Boston Gazette or Weekly Journal of Tuesday, Nov. 10, 1747, as follows: "*Chebacco* in Ipswich, *October 21. 1747.* On Monday last died here of a Fever, and this Day was inter'd, the Rev. Mr. Theophilus Pickering, in the 47th. Year of his Age; and after he had been Pastor of the second Church in Ipswich 22 Years" etc. It is also confirmed by a memoranda of Henry Pickering [58. VI. 111], by Charles W. Upham, and by an old Orne record. His original will on file is dated Oct. 10, 1747, but the copy on the Probate Records is dated Oct. 4, 1747. It was proved Nov. 2, 1747.

<sup>2</sup> The History of Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton, by Joseph B. Felt, pp. 260-262, in a sketch of him says: —

The History of the Town of Essex, by Robert Crowell, has the following statement : —

“The precise time when the church and parish gave a call to Mr. Pickering to become their pastor, cannot now be ascertained. He accepted their invitation, however, on condition that the salary they had proposed to give him should be increased, giving his reasons for this in the following language : —

“Whereas our Lord Jesus has required of his people a suitable support for his ministers, as yourselves know and believe, and whereas it nearly concerns every minister upon settlement to see to it that he has a convenient maintenance, and as far as may be to prevent any after difficulties that might be prejudicial to the peace of the place and success of the ministry, I have, therefore, after due deliberation, thought it best that I should freely offer my thoughts unto you referring to this head of maintenance. We all know that a minister cannot live creditably without considerable expense, and we also know that what was wont to be a middling salary formerly, in a moderate value, is equivalent to £150 or £160 in our paper money. Indeed such a sum makes a great sound in a man's ears ; but ordinarily men don't seriously consider (unless it be in case of their own interest), how our Province bills are depreciated, nor how the price of goods and provisions rises, and for this reason salary men in many towns almost suffer for want. For my own part I cannot (and I think I ought not) be contented unless I have wherewithal conveniently to answer my duties and necessities, and to furnish me with such helps and advantages as whereby I might be enabled in my best manner to serve your true interests and maintain the character of a minister as it should be ; which to be sure will not be displeasing to any of you, for I am confident it would not offend you to have your minister a credit to you.’

“With these views the parish harmoniously concurred, and the result was that they agreed to give him the use of all the parsonage lands, they keeping the fences in repair, and £120 annually in semi-annual payments, to be increased or diminished in proportion to the value of money (silver) at 8s. per ounce troy weight ; and the avails of the customary contribution taken on the Sabbath. For a settlement they agreed to give him the buildings on the old parsonage, and £100 towards building a house for himself. The house which he built and lived in during his ministry was the one subsequently owned by the late Mrs. Mary Choate. The commoners also gave him the common land north of the meeting-house, being about three-fourths of an acre. The terms of settlement were agreed on in July, but the ordination was deferred to a season less busy for farmers. Accordingly on the 23d of October follow-

---

“March 29, 1725, he was invited to assist Mr. Wise who was sick. Having preached acceptably here, he was ordained Oct. 13th, 1727.”

The History of the Town of Essex gives the date of ordination as Oct. 23, 1725.

ing (1725), with the usual solemnities and interesting services, he was ordained in the new meeting-house to the work of the gospel ministry in this place."<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Pickering afterwards conveyed the lot given him by the commoners to the parish by deed. At a meeting in August they voted that, in consideration of their love and affection to the Rev. Theophilus Pickering, they convey to him the land and appurtenances on which his house stands. In this year (1734) they added fifty pounds to his salary on account of the depreciation of currency. They had been gradually increasing it years before, and continued to do so until his salary amounted to two hundred and thirty-two pounds.

In 1740, Mr. Whitefield visited New England, and revivals were frequent. To these Mr. Pickering was not unfriendly, but he objected to some of Mr. Whitefield's methods. In 1744, twenty-six members of Mr. Pickering's society presented their grievances to him, and afterwards to the church, charging him with not preaching the distinctive doctrines of the Bible, with want of interest in his work, with worldliness of spirit and conduct, and with opposition to revivals. The church declared these charges unsupported, and refused to join in calling a mutual council to consider them. But in 1745 the church offered to unite in calling such a council, which the aggrieved members in town refused. A little later it was agreed that Mr. Pickering should resign, if a majority of the church would consent, and if a purchaser could be found for his property; but this plan failed.

In January, 1746, sixteen members resolved to separate, and a "Separate Society" was organized. In May, the Separatists asked three Connecticut churches and the Boston "Separatist" church to unite and organize their church. But the Second Church (Mr. Pickering's) called a council in which the Separatists refused to join; they agreed, however, to submit their grievances to the members as private Christians. The majority of this Council, exonerated Mr. Pickering, except in some minor matters, while the minority thought the Separatists had some justification for their conduct. But the Separatists did not wait for the decision of the Council, but with the aid of one of the Connecticut churches, and of the

<sup>1</sup> History of the Town of Essex, Mass., by Robert Crowell, pp. 141-142.

Boston church, they constituted the "Fourth Church of Ipswich." Rev. Ebenezer Cleaveland, the first Preacher of this new society, was a brother of the Rev. *John Cleaveland* [60. V. 28<sup>2</sup>], who was ordained as pastor, in 1747, and who afterwards married Mrs. Eunice (Neal) Foster, Mr. Pickering's niece.

In 1747, shortly after Mr. Cleaveland's ordination, which he strenuously opposed, Mr. Pickering had published a pamphlet entitled : —

"A Bad Omen to the Churches in the instance of Mr. John Cleaveland's Ordination over a Separation in Chebacco Parish."

This was immediately answered by Mr. Cleaveland, in another pamphlet entitled : —

"A Plain Narrative of the Proceedings which caused a Separation of a Number of Aggrieved Brethren from the Second Church in Ipswich: or, a Relation of the Cause which produced the Effects that are exhibited in the Rev. Mr. Pickering's late Print, entitled 'A Bad Omen to the Churches.'"

Mr. Pickering did not live to complete his rejoinder; but his church published after his death: —

"An Answer to the Chebacco Brethren's Plain Narrative — the Pretended Narrative convicted of Fraud and Partiality; or a Letter from the Second Church in Ipswich to their Separated Brethren, in Defence of their deceased Pastor and Themselves against the Injurious Charges of the said Separated Brethren in a late Print of theirs, by giving a more Just and True account of the things that preceded the Separation."

A reply was made to this, supposed to have been written by Mr. Cleaveland, entitled : —

"Chebacco Narrative Rescued from the Charge of Falshood and Partiality."

These pamphlets are said to be written with great spirit, and show that the authors' minds were deeply stirred.<sup>1</sup>

The following analysis of Mr. Pickering's character is taken from the History of the Town of Essex : —

---

<sup>1</sup> The History of the Town of Essex, Mass., by Robert Crowell, pp. 151-152, 160-169.

“Theophilus graduated at Harvard University in 1719, and though he soon after came into the possession of considerable property at the death of his father, June 19, 1722, he determined to devote himself to the work of the ministry. He was laborious and successful in his pastoral office, and during his ministry about two hundred persons were admitted to the church. As a Christian man and teacher, he had the confidence of most of his brethren in the ministry, and there is no reason to doubt the conscientiousness of his opposition to the cause of the Separatists. The estimation in which he was held by his own church is plainly seen in the language used respecting him in the ‘Answer of the Second Church to the Chebacco Brethren’s Plain Narrative:’”

“‘We at Chebacco have (as we verily believe,) had among us a man of God, a learned, orthodox, prudent, faithful minister of Jesus Christ, though not without failings, even as others; one whom we heard teaching and preaching the truths of the Gospel, with pleasure, and we hope with profit; and whose memory will, we trust, be ever dear to us notwithstanding the reproaches that have been plentifully cast upon him.’”

“He was a diligent student, was well versed in theology, and, in the judgment of his contemporaries, was a man of vigorous intellect and of superior ability as a logician and a writer. From a list of his books which is preserved in a collateral branch of the family, it appears that he was possessed of a very valuable library.<sup>1</sup> His genius for mechanism was great. Many specimens of his mechanical labors still remain. As a testimony to his learning and abilities, it has been said to the author by some aged people who remembered him, that Whitfield after considerable debate with him on the cardinal points of Christianity, acknowledged that he was a man of great ingenuity, though he regretted the erroneousness of his views.”<sup>2</sup>

Colonel Timothy Pickering says of Theophilus, in his memorandum-book:<sup>3</sup> —

He “was remarkable for the moderation and coolness of his temper and his steadiness of conduct, when the country was running, with fanatic zeal, after the celebrated itinerant preacher, George Whitfield, whom and whose followers, in a pamphlet or two, he firmly opposed. He was also noted for his mechanic genius, and the nice order in which all his affairs were put and preserved.”

Some of the furniture which he made is now owned by John Pickering [49. IX. 970], who occupies the old Pickering Mansion in Salem. It con-

<sup>1</sup> In his library was a manuscript copy of a printed book in which the illustrations as well as the text are copied. This remarkable piece of penmanship is now in the possession of John Pickering [49. IX. 970]. Some of his books are in the possession of Francis H. Lee [1. IX. 9].

<sup>2</sup> The History of the Town of Essex, Mass., by Robert Crowell, p. 167.

<sup>3</sup> Quoted in The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Octavius Pickering, Vol. I. p. 5, note.

sists of a set of ten chairs, a desk, and a pair of bellows. A sofa which formerly belonged to the set of chairs is in the possession of Charles Pickering Putman [54 VIII. 645]. See the heliotype of the east room of the Pickering house facing p. 24.

The following is an abstract of his will, which was dated Oct. 10, 1747, and was proved Nov. 2, 1747:—

I Theophilus Pickering, of Ipswich, clerk suffering under sickness. To my sister Lois, wife of Timothy Orne of Salem £1500 old tenor. To her daughter Lois Lee, widow £300 old tenor. To the children of my sister Sarah Hardy, deceased £1500. old tenor, to be equally among them shared To my kinswoman widow Sarah Mansfield, over and above, a particular legacy of £400. old tenor. To my sister Eunice, wife of William Pickering, of Salem, £1500. old tenor. To her children by Joseph Neal, deceased, £300. old tenor, apiece and to her male children by her present husband, Pickering, £500 old tenor apiece. To Jonathan Cogswell, Esq., and wife, each, a funeral ring. To Mr. William Cogswell, and wife, each, a funeral ring. To Lucy Cogswell, and Mary and Sarah Appleton, daughters in said family £10. old tenor apiece. To Mr. Nathaniel Foster of Chebacco, all the effects he has of mine in his hands, provided he brings no account or debt against me. To Mrs. Elizabeth Parker, wife of Mr. Daniel Parker, Jr., of Boston, £500. old tenor. To my brother Timothy Pickering all the rest of my estate he paying legacies and funeral charges, and he to be my sole executor.<sup>1</sup>

The house which Mr. Pickering built is still standing, although several changes in the exterior have been made. It is said that the woodwork of the interior and the front door were the work of his hands. His name is perpetuated in the town by Pickering Street, which is a short distance from his dwelling.

His gravestone stands in the old graveyard in Essex, and the following inscription from it is printed in the history of that town:—

HERE LIES BURIED THE  
Body of y<sup>e</sup> Revd Mr  
THEOPHILUS PICKERING,  
WHO DEPARTED THIS LIFE  
Sept. y<sup>e</sup> 19<sup>th</sup>, 1747,  
AGED 47 YEARS.

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 327, pp. 411-413; files, No. 21,820.

48-59. IV. 9. Timothy Pickering [John 1-70. III. 1], born in Salem, baptized there Feb. 14, 1702-3, died in Salem. A farmer. Residence: Salem.

Timothy Pickering was a deacon of what is now called the Tabernacle Church, and as Deacon Pickering he was generally known. Of this church he was a prominent member, serving on various committees; and the business meetings of the church were frequently held at his house.

Deacon Pickering was formerly connected with the First Church over which the Rev. Samuel Fiske was settled Oct. 8, 1718. During his ministry Mr. Fiske introduced many new practices which created dissension among his parishioners. Finally April 18, 1735, he was dismissed, and then preached to those who went off with him. Deacon Pickering was of this number. Mr. Fiske was succeeded by the Rev. Dudley Leavitt, who afterwards married a daughter of Deacon Pickering. Both societies claimed to be the "First Church," and their records are so written. But in August, 1762, the difficulty was settled, and the society formed by Mr. Fiske adopted the name of the Third Church. Although it still claims to be the Third Church, it is called the Tabernacle Church.

As to his personal appearance, a private journal of Nov. 4, 1766, speaks of Deacon Pickering, foreman of one of the juries, as in appearance perfectly plain like a farmer. In deeds and other documents on record he is generally described as "gentleman." He was a man of great firmness of character, of decided convictions, and of great piety.

Deacon Pickering inherited the homestead, and there spent his life, living on the produce of his farm, as his ancestors had done before him. By a life of great industry and frugality he added to the paternal estate, and was enabled to decently educate his daughters, according to the custom of the time, and to give to his two sons a regular education at the Grammar School in Salem, and at Harvard College.<sup>1</sup>

Though he did not favor the separation of the Colonies from Great Britain, yet he did not approve of the conduct of the mother country towards them. This is shown by his communication, dated Oct. 21, 1765, addressed to Benjamin Lynde, moderator of the Salem town-meeting. In

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Octavius Pickering, Vol. I. p. 5.

this letter he deprecated the inconsiderate and violent proceedings against the Stamp Act. He adds, however, the following:—

“We would not be here understood, as though it was our principle, tamely to submit to every law made by lawful authority whether it be right or wrong, good or bad; for this would be to lower ourselves down into passive obedience, and non-resistance.”<sup>1</sup>

In May, 1770, he presided, as moderator, over the town-meeting which was held to discuss a non-importation agreement; and, in the following September, he presided over another meeting at which resolutions were passed against four persons who had violated the non-importation agreement. In July, 1776, he joined in a subscription to enable a committee to hire the soldiers who were to be levied in Salem to reinforce the northern army.<sup>2</sup>

The following is from his son Colonel Timothy Pickering’s Memorandum Book:—

“The tenor of my father’s life was directed by his opinions of *the equal rights of all mankind*. Hence the dishonest or improper conduct of the men possessed of power or wealth was censured without reserve, while he was disposed to apologize for the poor and uninformed. All his actions showed that he deemed *VIRTUE alone entitled to respect*. He used often to repeat the words of Solomon, — ‘*The fear of man bringeth a snare.*’

“Invincibly pursuing the calls of rigid justice, he always complained of the wrongs done to widows, and orphans, and salary-men, who were deeply injured by the depreciation of the paper money of the Province of Massachusetts; an injury which he thought the Province bound in justice to repair, and which he urged upon all who fell in his way, who had any influence in the affairs of government.

“The *emancipation of the enslaved Africans* was another favorite topic which he dwelt upon whilst he lived; and he lived long enough to see it beginning to take place, *in fact*, in the Province of Massachusetts, soon after the commencement of the late Revolution, which ended in the establishment of the Independence of the United States. It was not until the Constitution of Massachusetts was new modelled, in 1780, that in that State slavery was abolished, the judges of the Supreme Court pronouncing that all men held in slavery, dwelling within that State were by the Constitution made free; grounding their opinion on the first clause of the Declaration of Rights, — ‘*All men are born free and equal.*’”<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Octavius Pickering, Vol. I. p. 210, note.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. Vol. I. p. 211, note.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. Vol. I. pp. 5-6.

While Deacon Pickering's son Timothy was in his eighteenth year, and a member of the Senior class at Harvard College, he wrote a letter to his father from which it appears that some one had reported to the deacon that his son had been playing cards, which the boy denied, but at the same time attempted a defence of the practice. Deacon Pickering, in reply, wrote to his son the following characteristic letter:—

“DEAR SON: Serious men of large experience have apprehended that the diversion of playing at cards (all things considered) is not expedient. Pike and Hayward write upon it, as you may see, in their Cases of Conscience judiciously resolved. However pleasant the exercise may seem to be to many, yet it is found to be of enchanting nature. I hope, above all things, you will seek spiritual delights, for they are not only most ravishing, but also most essential. All mankind naturally most affect things of sense; but how amazing is it that rational creatures should so much affect earthly pleasures, and neglect the pursuit of those joys that are eternal! You know my mind. You have now a price in your hand to get wisdom. I hope God will give you an heart to improve it.

“We are all in health, through God's goodness, and hope these lines may find you so. Let us hear from you in convenient time.

“Your affectionate father,

“TIMOTHY PICKERING

“SALEM, February 18th, 1763.”<sup>1</sup>

Deacon Timothy Pickering died at the age of seventy-five years, and was buried in the “burying ground on the hill,” now called the Broad Street Ground, which is directly opposite the old family mansion. His gravestone, and that of his wife, Mary (Wingate) Pickering, were still standing in 1896. He “enjoyed almost uninterrupted health until about a year before his death, when he fell into a decline attended with a consumptive cough.”<sup>2</sup>

April 26, 1778, Colonel Pickering wrote of his father during his final sickness:—

“But I know his firmness of mind, his piety, his confidence in Heaven, and thence his entire resignation to the will of God; and that his anxiety is not to live long, but to live well.”<sup>3</sup>

On Sept. 11, 1778, after his father's death, Colonel Pickering wrote the following:—

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Octavius Pickering, Vol. I. p. 13.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. Vol. I. pp. 6-7.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. Vol. I. p. 214.

"He doubtless exchanged this life for a better, and in his last moments could look back with pleasure on a long life spent in the fear and service of God. His peculiarities rather deserve respect, because they were dictated by an upright heart, and were deemed erroneous only because they did not coincide with the *practices* or *fashions* of the world, which ever was, and is, too corrupt to be governed by principle founded solely on *love to God* and *love to man*."<sup>1</sup>

The Pickering family before the time of Deacon Pickering was not a long-lived race, the average age at death being under fifty years, so far as can be ascertained; but his marriage into the Wingate family, which was noted for its longevity, brought length of years to his descendants. The long life of Deacon Pickering's children is shown by the following extract from a newspaper:—

"Longevity. Col. Pickering of Salem has five sisters, and the sum of all their ages is 502; making the average age of each individual to be 88 2-3 years. Three others of the same family have died whose average age was 72."<sup>2</sup>

The following table in relation to the longevity of Deacon Pickering's family is taken from a manuscript book of records owned by Colonel Theodore Lyman [51. VIII. 577].

## CHILDREN OF TIMOTHY &amp; MARY PICKERING.

	Born O. S.	Lived Yrs. mos. days.	Died N. S.	Married to
SARAH	Jan'y 28, 1730	96. 9. 13	Nov'r 21, 1826	John Clark
MARY	March 29, 1733	71. 9. 21	Jan'y 30, 1805	1st. Rev. Dudley Leavitt, 2d, Judge Sargeant
LYDIA	Feb. 27, 1736	88. 7. 11	Oct. 21, 1824	George Williams
ELIZABETH	Nov. 12, 1737	85. 10. 19	Oct. 12, 1823	John Gardner
JOHN	March 2, 1740	71. 5. 7	Aug. 20, 1811	Not married
CHILDREN {	LOIS	April 19, 1742	Feb'y 4, 1815	John Gool
	EUNICE	" "	Jan'y 14, 1843	Her cousin Faine Wingate. He lived [over 89 yrs.
TIMOTHY	July 6, 1745	83. 6. 12	Jan. 29, 1829	Rebecca White
LUCIA	Nov'r 12, 1747	74. 11. 8	Oct. 31, 1822	Israel Dodge

All were born before the change of style (1751), therefore 11 days to be added to the birth of each to correspond with new style.

Aggregate nearly 746½ years.

Average nearly 88 years.

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Octavius Pickering, Vol. I. p. 236.

<sup>2</sup> Portsmouth, N. H., Journal quoted in the Salem Register of Nov. 2, 1822.

The following is an abstract of his will, which was dated Feb. 5, 1778, and was proved July 15, 1778:—

I Timothy Pickering of Salem, my just debts to be paid by my son John. I give to my seven daughters as follows to be paid them in sterling money to wit. Sarah Clarke £60; Mary Sargent £30; Lydia Williams £80; Elizabeth Gardner £5; Lois Gool £40; Eunice Wingate £40; Lucia Dodge £70. To Mary my wife all my household furniture. To my son Timothy Pickering one third of my real estate. To my son John Pickering the residue of my estate both real and personal he paying my debts and charges and the several legacies given to my daughters, and paying to my wife annually during her life such sums of money as they shall agree to be sufficient for her comfortable and handsome support which provision when assented to by her is to be in full of her right of dower in my Real Estate. Son John my executor.<sup>1</sup>

48-59. IV. 9. *Mary Wingate*, the wife of Timothy Pickering, born in Hampton, N. H., died in Salem.<sup>2</sup>

She and her husband first met at the house of Parson Balch in Wenham, at the wedding of her brother, Rev. Paine Wingate, and Mary Balch.<sup>3</sup> She is said to have been handsome when young, and to have retained her good looks until her death. Colonel Pickering writes of her, Feb. 5, 1785:—

“An aged person with her infirmities could not wish a continuance of life, and when an aged christian dies, the relatives cannot mourn.”<sup>4</sup>

A sampler marked “Mary Winget” is in the possession of her great-great-grandson, Mr. William E. Silsbee of Boston.

Her father, Colonel Joshua Wingate, was a valued citizen of Hampton, N. H. He was distinguished for both public and private virtues, and was entrusted by his fellow-citizens with positions of respectability and honor. He was colonel of the Hampton regiment, and was in command at the siege of Louisburg in 1745. He also represented Hampton in the Legisla-

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 353, pp. 176-177; files, No. 21,821.

<sup>2</sup> A copy of an entry in the family Bible, owned by Timothy Pickering, Jr. [58. VI. 110], gives June 14th as the date of her birth, and in this several other authorities agree; but still other authorities give the date as June 7th.

<sup>3</sup> Memorandum Book of Colonel Timothy Pickering.

<sup>4</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Octavius Pickering, Vol. I. p. 503.

ture. He married Mary, daughter of Henry Lunt of Newbury. They both lived to be ninety years old.<sup>1</sup>

In 1700, Colonel Wingate built the house which is still standing in Hampton, N. H., and which has always been in the possession of his descendants. It is now called the Old Toppan House, and is occupied by Mrs. Colonel Peter Sanborn. It is supposed that all Colonel Wingate's children were born in it.<sup>2</sup> Several of his daughters married professional men, and his son, Rev. Paine Wingate, was the father of the Hon. Paine Wingate who married Eunice Pickering [56-57. V. 23]. As to the spelling and pronouncing of Wingate, Colonel Timothy Pickering in his memorandum-book, under the head of "Maternal Relatives," writes as follows:—

"Instead of Wingate, the name was formerly written and pronounced *Winget*. Indeed, the people of Hampton and the neighboring towns at this day pronounce it *Winget*."

This is not the only form in which it has been written. In America it is found spelled *Wengett*, *Wendett*, *Windielt*, *Wendet*, etc., and in England *Wyngate*, *Windgate*, *Wyndegate*, etc.<sup>3</sup>

Mrs. Pickering's ancestry includes the following families: Wingate, Taylor, Lunt. See ANCESTRY TABLES IV.

60-70. IV. 10. **Eunice Pickering** [John 1-70. III. 1], born in Salem, baptized there in November, 1705, died in Salem.

She received a bequest of £1500 old tenor by the will of her brother Theophilus Pickering, who also left £300 old tenor, to each of her children by Joseph Neal, and £500 old tenor to each of her male children by William Pickering.

60-70. IV. 10<sup>1</sup>. **Joseph Neal**, her first husband, born in Salem. A fisherman. Residence: Salem.

Jan. 19, 1732, administration on his estate was granted to his widow

<sup>1</sup> See History of the Wingate Family, compiled by Charles E. L. Wingate [57. VIII. 706] pp. 36-41, for a more extended account.

<sup>2</sup> Letter of Joseph C. A. Wingate [57. VII. 331].

<sup>3</sup> See History of the Wingate Family, by Charles E. L. Wingate [57. VIII. 706] pp. 9-10.

Eunice, who gave bond with Timothy Pickering and Jeremiah Neal of Salem. The inventory was rendered March 5, 1732.<sup>1</sup>

He was a son of Joseph and Judith (Croade) Neal, and an uncle of *Benjamin Ropes* [41-47. V. 16]. His ancestry includes the following families: Neal, Lawes, Croade, Hersey. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{IV}{41}$ .

60-70. IV. 10<sup>2</sup>. *William Pickering*, the second husband of Eunice Pickering, born in Salem, died in Salem. Residence: Salem.

In deeds he is called a cordwainer; but in his will, which was dated Feb. 16, 1765, and proved March 18, 1765, he is otherwise described. An abstract of it here follows: —

I William Pickering of Salem, shoreman, sick in body but of perfect mind. To my two sons John Pickering, and William Pickering, all my real estate after their mother's decease, to be equally divided between them, and to William, my shoemaker's tools, and stock. To my two daughters Hannah Foster, and Abigail Scollay, besides what I have already given them, £25 each to be paid them by my two sons at their mother's decease. To my wife Eunice Pickering, the whole of my estate, real and personal, during her life then to return to my two sons. My household stuff I give to her to dispose of as she shall think proper. My wife and son John to be the executors.<sup>3</sup>

William Pickering was a son of Benjamin [1-70. III. 4] and Jane (Hobby) Pickering of Salem.

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 319, pp. 331-332, 447; files, No. 19,181.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, Vol. 342, pp. 68-69; files, No. 21,826.

## FIFTH GENERATION.

1-2. V. 2. **Lois Orne** [Lois 1-11. IV. 1], born in Salem, baptized there March 30, 1712, died in Salem.<sup>1</sup>

The Salem Gazette of Dec. 21, 1790, contains the following announcement of her death:—

“In Salem, Mrs. Lee, widow of the late Mr. Thomas Lee, 80.”

Mrs. Lee received under the will of her uncle, the Rev. Theophilus Pickering, £300 old tenor; and by the will of her brother, Timothy Orne, £12 per annum of lawful money.

1-2. V. 2. **Thomas Lee**, her husband, born in Boston, baptized there Sept. 5, 1703, died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Lee's father was a prosperous merchant of Boston. Thomas, his eldest son, was sent to Harvard College, where he graduated in 1722. Instead of studying for a profession, Mr. Lee entered upon a mercantile career. He carried on business in Boston, and lived on Bennett Street until 1733, when he removed to Salem. His father, Thomas Lee, sold this Bennett Street estate Aug. 22, 1734, and speaks of it as “the same that I purchas'd of my Son Thomas Lee.” In this deed he calls himself merchant, of Boston, and in earlier deeds he is called a block-maker.<sup>2</sup>

In Salem Mr. Lee was an active and influential citizen. He represented the town in the General Court, in the years 1739, 1740, and 1747, and while there served on important committees. Felt says of him: “He

<sup>1</sup> The date of her birth is given as March 16, 1711-12, on the Salem town records, and by other authorities; while it is given as March 12, 1712, in John Leigh of Agawam (Ipswich), Massachusetts, by William Lee, p. 47.

<sup>2</sup> Suffolk County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 51, p. 94; Vol. 26, pp. 266-7; Vol. 32, p. 27.

was entrusted with various duties in town, and represented it in the General Court."<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Lee's brother, Judge Joseph Lee, H. C. 1729, was a man of distinction. He was a loyalist, and in 1774 was compelled to resign his office with Judge Danforth and Judge Oliver. He married Rebecca Phips (their banns having been published Feb. 15, 1755), a daughter of Lieutenant-Governor Spencer Phips, and resided in the mansion-house which stood, until recently, on the corner of Brattle and Appleton streets, Cambridge.<sup>2</sup> This house was bought in 1860 by George Nichols [43. VIII. 452], and was occupied by his widow till her death.

The following obituary of Mr. Lee's father appeared in the Supplement to the Boston Gazette, of Monday, July 21, 1766: —

"Wednesday Morning died Mr. *Thomas Lee*, in the 94th year of his Age, who in the early and active Part of Life carried on a considerable Trade in this Town, tho' he deserves to be recorded, rather for the unblemished Integrity of his Dealings, and the exact Punctuality of his Payments, than for the Extent of his Trade, or the Length of his Life."

Mr. Lee married, for his first wife, Elizabeth Charnock, their banns having been published July 13, 1727. She was baptized Sept. 14, 1707, and was a daughter of Captain John Charnock, of Boston, by his wife Mary, daughter of Ralph King of Lynn, and sister of *Daniel King* [1-70. III. 9<sup>1</sup>].<sup>3</sup> By her he had the following children, born in Boston: —

MARTHA LEE, born May 27, 1728.

ELIZABETH LEE, born Feb. 19, 1729-30; died June 21, 1808. She married Andrew Newell of Boston, their banns having been published Aug. 8, 1759, and left issue. There is an interesting painting of a family group, in which Mrs. Newell appears, surrounded by her two cousins, the Misses Charnock, the two Misses Greenwood, and Mr. Green-

<sup>1</sup> Quoted in the Memorial of John Clarke Lee [1. VIII. 11], by the Rev. E. B. Willson, printed in the Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. XV. p. 52.

<sup>2</sup> See the History of Cambridge, Mass., by Lucius R. Paige, p. 168.

<sup>3</sup> See the Charnock Family, by Isaac J. Greenwood, printed in The Heraldic Journal, Vol. III. pp. 107-110. Captain Charnock's second wife, who was Hannah, daughter of Elizur Holyoke, of Boston, and sister of President Holyoke of Harvard College, became the second wife of Theophilus Burrill, Esq., of Lynn, Mass., who was a brother of Sarah, the wife of John Pickering. See the Burrill Pedigree facing p. 46.

wood, the artist who painted the picture. This painting is in the possession of Colonel Henry Lee, of Brookline, Mass., a great-grandson of Thomas Lee.

Thomas Lee and his wife were second cousins through the Flints.<sup>1</sup> Administration on his estate was granted to his widow Lois, Aug. 10, 1747. The inventory, which was rendered Dec. 31, 1756, amounted to £7039 8s. 4d. old tenor, and to £1759 17s. 1d. in new tenor.<sup>2</sup> It included a dwelling-house valued at £1000, an acre of land near Deacon Timothy Pickering's, a negro boy and girl, half of a warehouse and wharf with Benjamin Gerrish, Esq., valued at £150, one-quarter part of the Schooner Samuel valued at £1075, one-quarter part of the Snow Sea Horse, valued at £900, and a stock of English goods.

He was the son of Thomas and Deborah (Flint) Lee, of Boston. His ancestry includes the following families: Lee, Mellows, Flint, Hart. See ANCESTRY TABLES V.

3-5. V. 3. Esther Orne [Lois 1-11. IV. 1], born in Salem, baptized there Jan. 23, 1714-15, died in Salem.

Her portrait, painted in 1749, and here reproduced, is now in the possession of her great-granddaughter, Miss Fidelia Bridges, of Canaan, Conn.

The late Mrs. Alfred A. Abbott [3. IX. 39], of Peabody, Mass., among other portraits, had in her possession a picture of an old lady, which she said was that of the mother of Captain *Daniel Mackey* [3-5. VI. 4<sup>b</sup>]. Captain Mackey's portrait, and that of his wife, were also in her collection. In writing of these pictures, the late Mrs. Joel Blackmer [3. IX. 37], of Port Richmond, Staten Island, N. Y., said: "The oldest, the lady with the cap, and white handkerchief crossed over her dress, is our great-great-grandmother, Mrs. Samuel Gardner, née Esther Orne." The picture of the old lady, however, does not bear a resemblance to the picture here reproduced of Mrs. Gardner, and we are inclined to think that Mrs. Abbott was right in her statement, and that it is a picture of the mother of Captain Daniel Mackey. His mother, the wife of William Mackey, was the daughter of Daniel Epes of Salem.

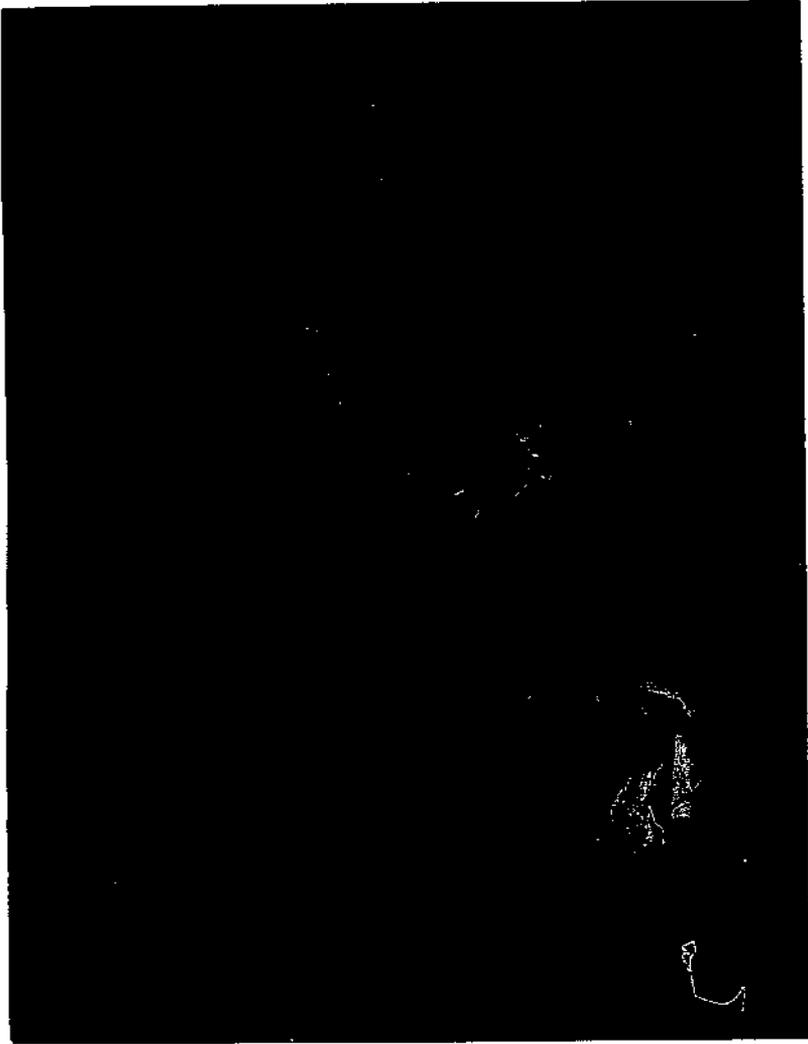
<sup>1</sup> See the Flint Pedigree, facing p. 33.

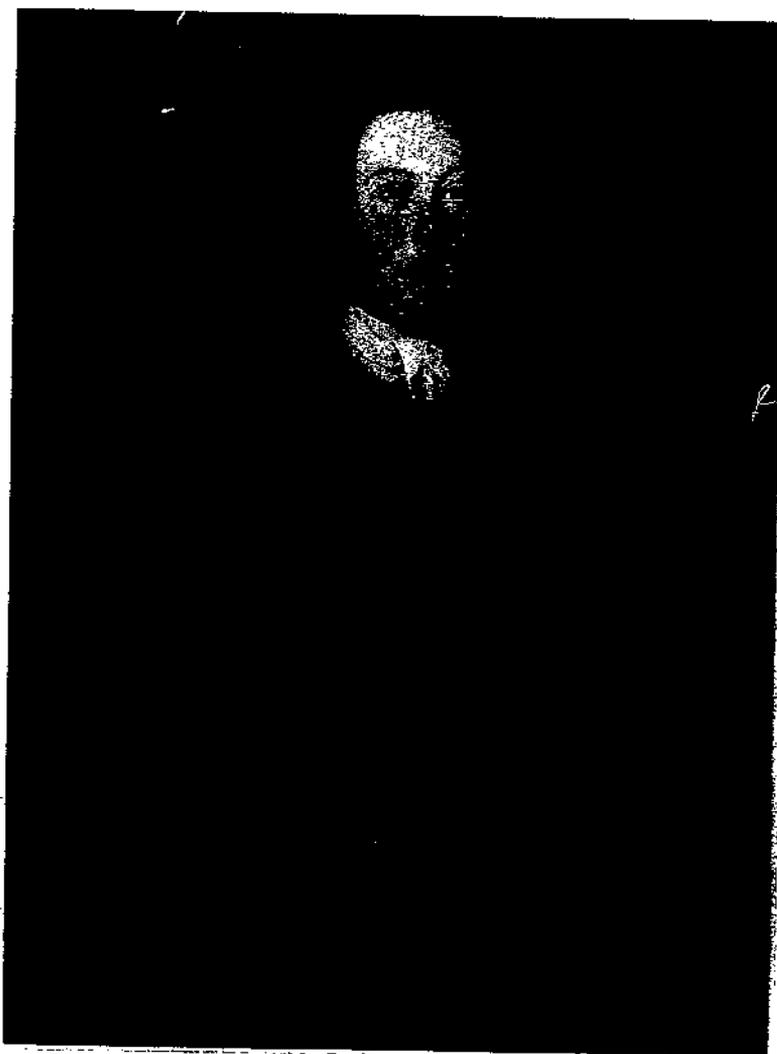
<sup>2</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 323, p. 264, and Vol. 334, pp. 202-204; files, No. 16,661.

ESTHER (ORNE) GARDNER.

[3-5 V. 3]

FROM THE PORTRAIT, PAINTED IN 1749, NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF MISS  
FIDELIA BRIDGES, OF CANAAN, CONN.





SAMUEL GARDNER.

[3-5. V. 3]

FROM THE PORTRAIT, PAINTED IN 1749, NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF MISS  
FIDELIA BRIDGES, OF CANAAN, CONN.

3-5. V. 3. *Samuel Gardner*, the husband of Esther Orne, born in Salem, baptized there Jan. 4, 1712-13, died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Gardner, H. C. 1732, studied no profession, but after graduation he entered upon mercantile pursuits, which he carried on with great success. He is said to have been the richest man in Salem at the time of his death and to have been worth one hundred thousand dollars. Lieutenant-Governor Gray, the eminent merchant, passed two years in his counting-room.<sup>2</sup> We had supposed that he was the same Samuel Gardner whose name appears on the Salem records as selectman and representative to the General Court, and that he was a magistrate, since he was called esquire. Moreover Samuel P. Gardner [53. VI. 101], in his record of the Gardner family, says: "Samuel Gardner held several of the most important town offices, and was a member of the General Court." On the other hand Colonel Benjamin Pickman in his account of the old houses of Essex Street, Salem, speaks of Mr. Gardner as having bought his house of Benjamin Marston, Esq., and that "He was one of the most accurate merchants in New England and acquired a very handsome estate. Extremely devoted to interest, [sic] and though every way qualified to serve his country, never intermingled in any public business."<sup>3</sup>

His great-granddaughter, Miss Fidelia Bridges, writes as follows about his residence: "The house of Samuel Gardner still stands on the corner of Essex and Cromby streets, Salem, afterwards called the Salem Hotel." Mr. Gardner's portrait, painted in 1749, and here reproduced, is now owned by Miss Bridges.

Mr. Gardner's second wife was Mrs. Elizabeth Winslow of Boston. She was a daughter of William and Hannah (Appleton) Clarke, of Bos-

<sup>1</sup> A paper in the possession of the late Mr. Alfred A. Abbott of Peabody, Mass., gives the date of birth as Jan. 4, 1712, meaning undoubtedly 1712-13. Various authorities give the following date as that of baptism, viz., Feb. 9, 1712, Aug. 4, 1712, Aug. 12, 1712, Aug. 14, 1712; but the "Baptisms of the First Church in Salem," by Dr. Henry Wheatland in the Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. p. 222, give the date as Jan. 4, 1712-13, and this is probably correct.

<sup>2</sup> Gardner Records.

<sup>3</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collection, Vol. VI. p. 107.

ton, and was born Nov. 13, 1716. Their marriage intention was published June 22, 1758. A copy of it which was in the possession of the late John L. Gardner [53. VII. 303] reads as follows:—

“I hereby certify that y<sup>e</sup> names of Samuel Gardner, Esq<sup>r</sup> of Salem & Mrs. Elizabeth Winslow of Boston, with their intention of marriage have been entered with me fifteen days, and that their said intention hath been by me posted at the Great Meeting House (so called) a publish place in said Salem more than fourteen days & nothing objected. Salem June 22<sup>nd</sup> 1758  
JOHN HIGGINSON, Town Clerk.”

She was the widow of William Winslow, to whom she was married Dec. 11, 1735. His estate was administered upon Oct. 27, 1746, by his brother Isaac Winslow, and in the administration papers he is called of Louisburg, Island of Cape Breton, merchant. William Winslow was in the Commissariat Department at the Siege of Louisburg, in 1745, as was his brother Samuel Winslow. They both died in that service. Their father was Colonel Edward Winslow, of Boston, Sheriff of Suffolk County, and Judge of the Court of Common Pleas. Mrs. Gardner's brother, Richard Clarke, was one of the consignees of the tea destroyed in Boston Harbor at the beginning of the Revolution. Her mother married for her second husband Hon. Josiah Willard, and is mentioned in Samuel Gardner's will. Mrs. Willard died July 28, 1766, at the age of eighty-one, having named her daughter Elizabeth Gardner, in her will.<sup>1</sup> After her second husband's death Mrs. Gardner took a third husband, Francis Cabot, she being his second wife. The following announcement of their marriage appeared in the Salem Gazette of Tuesday, April 26, 1770:—

“Last Thursday Francis Cabot, Esq., an Eminent Merchant of this Place was married to Mrs. Gardner the amiable and worthy Relict of the late Samuel Gardner, Esq.”

Mrs. Cabot died June 14, 1785, aged sixty-eight years. The following notice of Mr. Gardner's death appeared in the Essex Gazette of Tuesday April 11, 1769:—

“Last Friday Morning died after a long continued and tedious Indisposition, Samuel Gardner, Esq., an eminent Merchant of this Town, Fifty-seven Years of Age. His remains were decently interred last evening.”

<sup>1</sup> Suffolk County Probate Records, Vol. 65, p. 322; files, No. 8,588.

The following is an abstract of his will, which was dated Sept. 15, 1766, and which was proved May 1, 1769:—

I Samuel Gardner, of Salem, Esquire, of very infirm health. To my daughter Esther Mackey £1500 which, with what I advanced to her before her inter-marriage with Mr. Daniel Mackey, I judge to make £2000. I discharge her and the heirs of her husband Mr. Francis Higginson, with what I charged him in my books. To my daughter Lois Gardner £2000. To my daughter Elizabeth Gardner £2000 when she is twenty-one.

To my beloved wife Elizabeth Gardner £333.6.8; also the value of £100 more in household goods; also the household goods which belonged to her at our marriage, and all personal estate left to her by Madam Hannah Willard; also my negro boy Titus, for life; also my two-wheeled chaise and one of my chaise horses; also the right to sit in my pew in the Rev. Thomas Barnard's meeting house; also during her life the annuity and sum yearly of £160, all of which is in right of dower.

As my negro slave named Isaac has generally served me with great diligence and integrity, I give to the same Isaac £10 lawful money with his apparel, and his freedom. If he is unable to support himself, my sons George, Weld, and Henry, to support him.<sup>1</sup>

To my honored mother Elizabeth Gardner, an annuity of £30, on condition that it is in discharge of my part of the yearly payment to be made her by myself and others, by force of the will of my grandfather Captain Samuel Gardner.

I give to Mr. William Jeffrey £100, on condition that he shall then be employed or engaged in my business, as he now is, which is in testimony of the great regard I have for him, and the sense I have of his great faithfulness in my service.<sup>2</sup> To the Rev. Mr. Thomas Barnard £12.

<sup>1</sup> The Records of the First Church state that Cato, negro of Samuel Gardner, was baptized Isaac, owned the covenant May 28, 1749, and was admitted to the church Jan. 2, 1757.

The Salem Mercury of Tuesday, Nov. 6, 1787, has the following notice, "In this town Isaac Howard (an African) aged 60—formerly a domestick of the late Samuel Gardner, Esq. A 'good and faithful servant.'

"Honour and shame from no complection rise,  
Act well your part, there all the honour lies."

<sup>2</sup> Probably identical with William Jeffrey, Esq., Clerk of the Courts in Essex County, who married Sept. 21, 1766, Elizabeth, fifth child of Joseph Bowditch, Esq., who also was for many years clerk of the Courts of Essex County. She was born Feb. 8, 1734-5, and died in July, 1772. "1772 June 19th, Mr. Jeffrey was taken with Excessive Pain in his Bowels, 21st. Kept his bed, and Died ye 8th. July in ye 35th. year of his age." Their daughter Elizabeth Jeffrey, born Feb. 10, 1772, married in October, 1790, the Hon. Nathan Read, of Salem and Belfast, Maine, among whose papers was a Bowditch Record from which this note is made.

And to the end that the payment of the annuities and yearly payments aforesaid may be effectually secured, and the same duly paid, it is my will that £3600 of my personal estate shall not be received by my children until the same annuities and yearly payments be completed, or shall cease to become due, when the said £3600 shall be divided among my children as follows: To my daughter Lois Gardner, £335. To my daughter Elizabeth Gardner, £335, and the remainder to my three sons George, Weld, and Henry.

The residue of my estate both real and personal I give to my sons George, Weld, and Henry in equal shares and proportions. My brother Mr. John Gardner, and my friend Mr. Francis Cabot, to be my executors.

The inventory of the estate, of Aug. 7, 1769, amounted to £20,929 7s. 7d. It included two family pictures, and one coat of arms, one share in the Social Library, in Salem, and a negro man-servant named Jack, very infirm. Among sundry effects, put down as belonging to Mrs. Gardner before marriage, was one family picture.<sup>1</sup>

The heliotype of the Gardner coat of arms which is here given is taken from an embroidery now in the possession of the heirs of the late Alfred A. Abbott [3. IX. 39], of Peabody, Mass. The late Mrs. Joel Blackmer [3. IX. 37] wrote of this embroidery that: "Every stitch of it was worked by aunt Lois Barnard." Mrs. Abbott has some silver bearing the Gardner crest. Colonel Henry Lee [2. VIII. 15], of Brookline, Mass., has a beautiful silver tea-pot bearing the Gardner coat of arms, which probably belonged to Samuel Gardner.

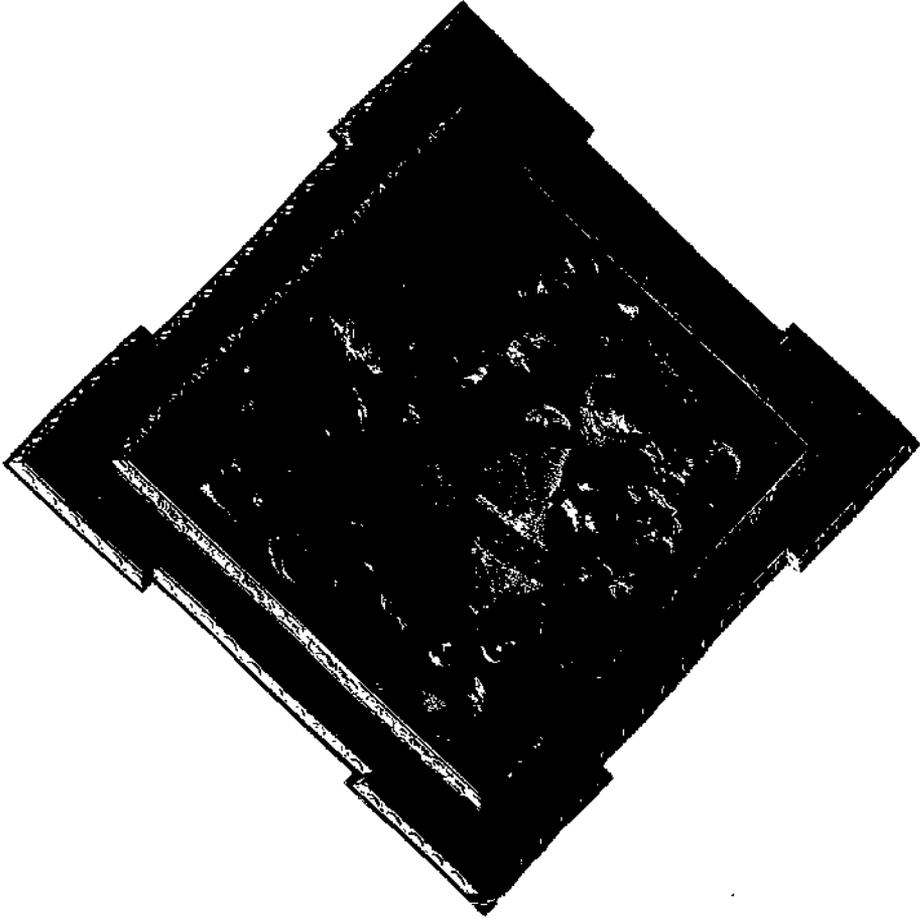
The Gardner family has been an important one in the annals of Salem. The founder, Mr. Thomas Gardner, overseer of the plantation at Cape Ann, who removed to Salem, had a large family of children whose descendants are very numerous. There are probably few, if any, of the Salem families who are not in some way connected with this ancient stock. A very large number of the Pickering descendants trace their descent to this family, through one or more branches, as is shown in the Ancestry Tables. In some cases as many as five lines of descents from it are shown, as is the case with the Bowditch descendants.<sup>2</sup>

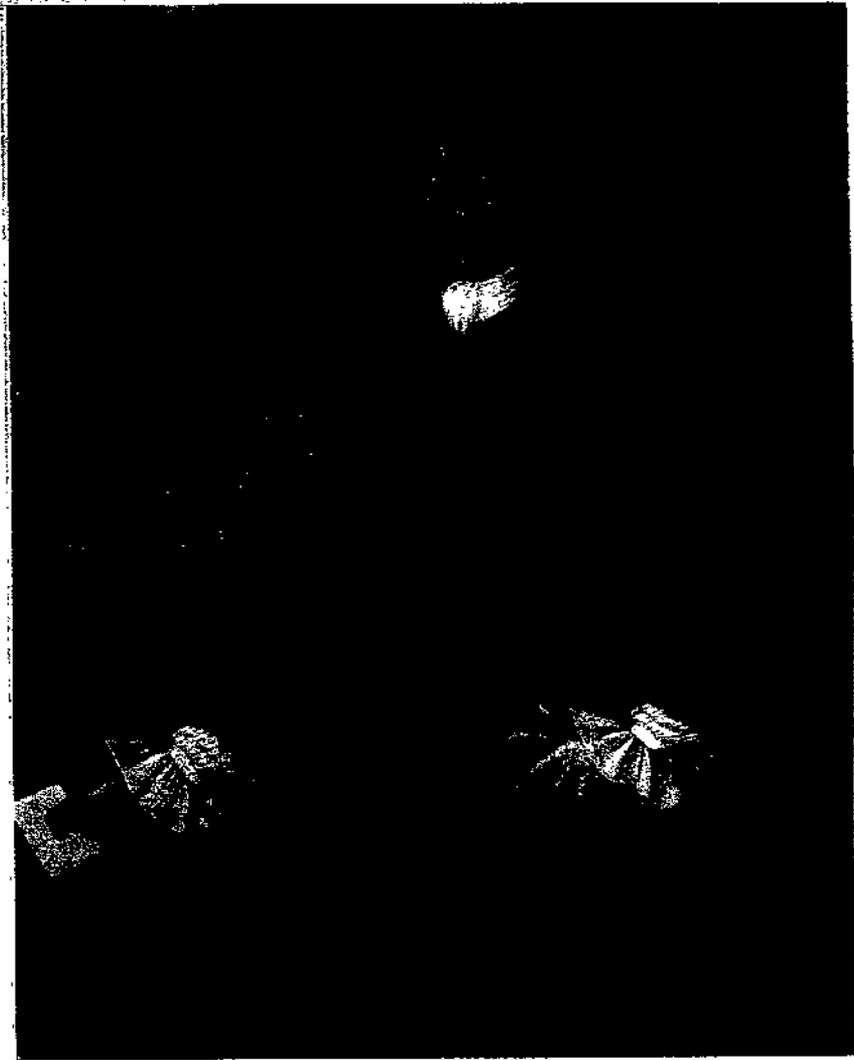
<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 345, pp. 337-343, 456-468; files, No. 10,659.

<sup>2</sup> For an interesting account of the Gardners, by Thomas C. Amory, see the New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol. XXV. pp. 48-50.

GARDNER COAT OF ARMS.

FROM AN EMBROIDERY NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF THE HEIRS OF THE LATE  
HON. ALFRED A. ABBOTT, OF PEABODY, MASS





TIMOTHY ORNE.

[6-7. V. 4]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY JOSEPH BADGER, PAINTED ABOUT 1758, NOW IN  
THE POSSESSION OF THE HEIRS OF THE LATE MRS. WILLIAM GURDON  
SALTONSTALL, OF BOSTON.

Samuel Gardner was a son of John and Elizabeth (Weld) Gardner, of Salem. His sister Bethiah Gardner was the grandmother of Nathaniel Bowditch, L.L.D.; *John Gardner* [53. V. 20] was his nephew, and *Charles Lemon* [36. VIII. 345] was his grandnephew. His ancestry includes the following families: Gardner, Frier, Orne, Browne, Weld, Clap, Mitchelson, Bushell. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{2}$ .

6-7. V. 4. Timothy Orne [Lois 1-11. IV. 1], born in Salem, died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Orne was admitted to the First Church, July 31, 1748. He was extensively engaged in foreign commerce, and accumulated a fortune. Some of his account-books, which give one an idea of his business transactions, are in the possession of his great-great-grandson Francis H. Lee, of Salem, who also possesses his Family Bible, which contains a family record. In an old memorandum-book written in 1757 there is the following entry: "Joseph Bagger<sup>1</sup> Faice painter Boston My picture £6. My wife's £6. pictures of my four children" Of these portraits four of them at least are in existence, viz.: The portraits of Mr. and Mrs. Orne, and two of their children, which are reproduced in this work. They are now in the possession of the children of Mr. Orne's great-great-granddaughter, the late Mrs. William G. Saltonstall, of Boston, who received them with the picture of Lois Pickering [1-11. IV. 1], from the widow of Joseph S. Cabot, Mr. Orne's great-grandson. The other two we have not been able to trace. These are probably the seven family pictures that are mentioned in the inventory of Mr. Orne's estate.

On the marriage of Mr. Orne's daughters, he gave them each a handsome outfit of silver, engraved with the Orne arms. Much of this silver is still preserved among their descendants. Mr. Orne's mansion-house on Essex Street, Salem, is at the present time (1894) in a fine state of preser-

<sup>1</sup> Joseph Badger, of Boston, painted in 1747, a portrait of James Bowdoin, 1676-1747. He is probably the same Joseph Badger of Boston, glazier, whose widow Katharine administered upon his estate Aug. 23, 1765. She returned the inventory Oct. 18, 1765. In it he is called Joseph Badger of Boston, painter. Joseph Badger, glazier, and Samuel Badger, tailor, both of Boston gave bond. In the inventory there is a coat of arms valued at six shillings. [Suffolk County Probate Records, Vol. 64, pp. 461, 532, and Vol. 67, p. 155.]

vation. It is owned by Mrs. John Hodges. A heliotype of it is here given. The staircase of this house is particularly fine.

The following is an abstract of Timothy Orne's will, which was dated May 28, 1767, and was proved Aug. 4, 1767:—

I Timothy Orne, of Salem, merchant, of sound mind and memory.

To my loving wife Rebecca Orne, all my household furniture and plate, my best horse and chaise, two cows, £800 in ready cash lawful money, the use of my mansion house I now live in, and one half of my barns, outhouses, and land adjoining, for her natural life; also the improvement of about twelve acres of land in Salem at a place called Massey's Point, Northfield, for and during the time that she remains my widow, fifteen common rights in the cow pasture, and thirty-four common rights in the sheep pasture in Salem; also £100. lawful money per. annum during the time that she continues to be my widow.

To my son Timothy Orne, Jr., the mansion house that was my late father's, Timothy Orne, now occupied by my brother Samuel Orne, and one half of all my land adjoining, which I purchased of my brothers Samuel, and John Orne, and Samuel Fisk; also one half of all the barns thereon, also my old warehouse, and one half of my wharf lands, and dockage adjoining; also one half of twelve acres of land in Northfield, Salem, also four common rights in the cow pasture, in Salem; also twenty common rights in the sheep pasture; about twelve acres of land in Danvers, called Orne's Orchard; also my farm called Cutler's, in Danvers, of one hundred and thirty acres, and all the buildings on it, stock of creatures, utensils, and eight acres of marsh in Lynn, called Pickering's Point, which marsh I purchased of my late mother Lois Orne, deceased, and of Joseph Gray; part of a piece of land near Northfield bridge, in Salem; also my share and interest in Union Wharf, Salem; one share in the Social Library in Salem and £3000 lawful money.

To my son Samuel Orne, my house, land and outbuildings in Salem, two acres of land in Salem, bounded on the North River, my warehouse, one half of all my wharf lands, and dockages adjoining it, half of twelve acres of land in Northfield, Salem, three common rights in the cow pasture, fourteen common rights in the sheep pasture, fifty acres of land in Danvers, about four acres of land in Danvers, about three acres of salt marsh in Lynn, one and a half acres of marsh in Lynn, one share in the Social Library in Salem, and £3000 lawful money.

To my daughter Rebecca Orne, one quarter part of the house I now live in; one eighth part of all my lands adjoining; one eighth part of my barn and outhouses; two common rights in Salem; also £1600 lawful money.

To my daughter Sarah Orne, the same as her sister, except that she have £1500 lawful money.

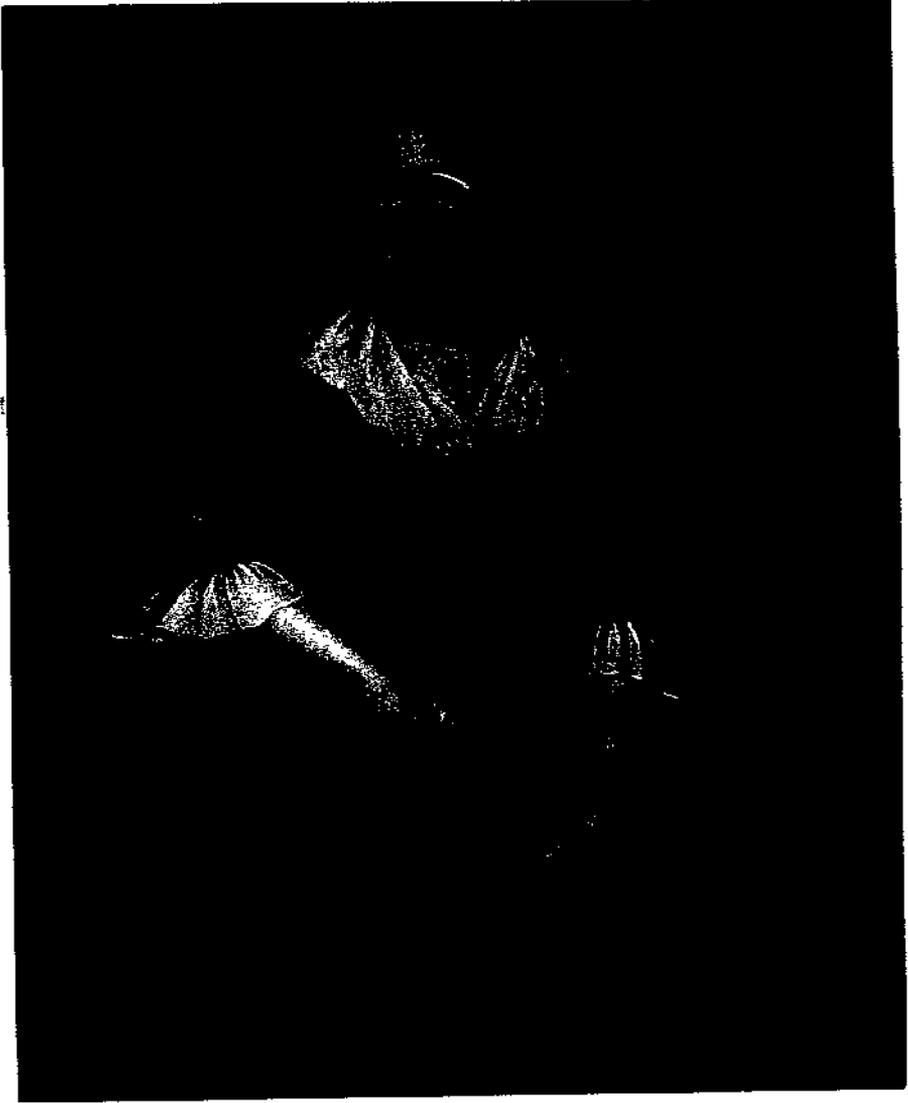
To my daughters Lois and Esther, each the same as Sarah.

To my sister Lois Lee, £12 lawful money, per. annum.

HOUSE OF TIMOTHY ORNE, SALEM, MASS.

[6-7. V. 4]





REBECCA (TAYLOR) ORNE.

[6-7. V. 4.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY JOSEPH BADGER, PAINTED ABOUT 1758, NOW IN  
THE POSSESSION OF THE HEIRS OF THE LATE MRS. WILLIAM GURDON  
SALTONSTALL, OF BOSTON.

To my executors £100 lawful money to be divided among them.

After the death of my wife Rebecca, and sister Lois, their interest to be divided among my children, and after debts and legacies are paid the remainder to be divided among my six children.

My Uncle Deacon Timothy Pickering, of Salem, and brother John Orne, of Lynn, to be my executors.

The inventory of March 7, 1768, amounted to £27,980 18s. 10½d., and included seven family portraits valued at £22 15s., and two coats of arms 30s.<sup>1</sup>

6-7. V. 4. *Rebecca Taylor*, the wife of Timothy Orne, born in Lynn, died in Salem.

Mrs. Orne was admitted to the First Church, Jan. 1, 1769. Her portrait, which is here reproduced, was painted by Joseph Badger. It is in the possession of the heirs of the late Mrs. William G. Saltonstall [1. IX. 12], of Boston.

Mrs. Orne's great-grandson, the late Dr. William Mack of Salem, had a remarkable piece of embroidery in the shape of a petticoat which was worked by her. On it is pinned a paper, upon which is written the following:—

“Linen petticoat | worked by Great Grandmother Orne | Rebecca (Taylor) Orne | wife of Timothy born in Lynn June 5, 1727 | died May 1771 | ”

This petticoat is one yard long, and three yards and nine inches around the bottom. It is so well embroidered that it looks like a piece of hand-painting, and the colors, which are very brilliant, are evidently as bright as they were at the time they were worked. As Mrs. Orne died one hundred and twenty-three years ago, it must be a very old piece of work. It is done in crewel or worsted, on heavy brown linen, and is made in two pieces. The lower piece is about nine inches deep, and is sewed on to the upper part. The design of this lower part is very elaborate, and consists of trees, shrubs, flowers, various animals, and birds. The upper portion is a very graceful pattern of scrolls, vines, and flowers.

Mrs. Orne's death is thus noticed in the *Essex Gazette* of Tuesday, May 7, 1771:—

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 344, pp. 153-157, 373-387; files, No. 20,104.

"Last Wednesday died here in the 44th year of her Age Mrs. Rebecca Orne, Relict of Mr. Timothy Orne, deceased, late an eminent Merchant in this Place. Her Remains were decently interred last Saturday."

Mr. and Mrs. Orne were second cousins, she being a daughter of William and Sarah (Burrill) Taylor of Lynn.<sup>1</sup> *Sarah Burrill* [1-70. III. 1] was her great-aunt. Her ancestry includes the following families: Taylor, Burrill, Ivory, South, Jarvis. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{v}{3}$ .

8. V. 5. **Samuel Orne** [Lois 1-11. IV. 1], born in Salem, died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Orne, H. C. 1740, became a merchant. By his father's will, of which he was one of the executors, he inherited a farm of one hundred and fifty acres in the north precinct of Lynn; five acres of salt marsh in Lynn town marsh; one half of his mansion-house on the Main Street in Salem; about seven acres of land in the Northfield, Salem; half of four acres of land in Danvers; also one half of his new warehouse and one-quarter part of his wharf lands, and two and a half common rights in the common lands of Salem. His estate was administered upon by John Pickering, Jr., Nov. 8, 1774. The inventory of Jan. 2, 1775, amounted to £1,785 14s. 6 $\frac{1}{2}$ d.<sup>2</sup>

8-9. V. 6. **Mary Orne** [Lois 1-11. IV. 1], born in Salem, died in Salem.<sup>3</sup>

She received by her father's will one-quarter part of twenty-six acres of land in Danvers; also £400 lawful money. The circumstances of her death, as recorded by Dr. Bentley, are as follows:—

"Dec. 14, 1787, Mary, w. of Rev'd James Diman aet 65 Swoon, died very suddenly. She has left 5 children, 2 sons."<sup>4</sup>

8-9. V. 6. **James Diman**, her husband, born on Long Island, died in Salem. A minister. Residence: Salem.

<sup>1</sup> See Pedigree of Burrill of Lynn, facing p. 46.

<sup>2</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 350, p. 517, Vol. 351, p. 79; files, No. 20,099.

<sup>3</sup> Mary Orne's marriage is given by Francis H. Lee [1. IX. 9] as both Dec. 16 and Dec. 18, 1743, and the former date is given by an old Orne record.

<sup>4</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. XIV. p. 134. Benjamin F. Browne, in *Ibid.* Vol. V. p. 197, gives the date of her death as Nov. 14, 1787.

HOUSE OF JAMES DIMAN, SALEM, MASS.

[8-9. V. 6.]



The Rev. James Diman, H. C. 1730, was the librarian of Harvard College for two years, from 1735 to 1737. He was settled over the East Church in Salem, and was ordained its pastor May 11, 1737. His colleague, the Rev. William Bentley, was ordained Sept. 24, 1783. They did not accord in their theological opinions, and the family of Mr. Diman would not hear Mr. Bentley preach. It is much to be regretted that the records of baptism of the East Church during Mr. Diman's ministry are lost. He lived in the house still standing on the west side of Hardy Street, Salem.<sup>1</sup> A heliotype of it is here given.

His granddaughter, the late Miss Priscilla Diman, of South Newmarket, N. H., wrote that she had in her possession the family papers, consisting of deeds, wills, and old sermons of her grandfather.

The following is an abstract of his will, which was dated Feb. 7, 1788, and was proved Jan. 10, 1789: —

I James Diman, of Salem, weak in body, but sound in mind. My just debts to be paid out of my estate.

To my eldest son James Diman, of Stratham, three lots of land in Bridgetown, county of Cumberland, with the after division of land there, and all my estate in that town which I purchased of Richard Peabody. To him my mowing field in the Northfield, Salem, containing nine acres, and my pasture in the Northfield, of about nine or ten acres.

To my daughters Mary Diman and Lois Diman, my orchard land adjoining to my garden, with the store and shop thereon. To my daughter Eunice Haraden, and my son-in-law Captain Jonathan Haraden, five and a half acres of land very advantageously situated for making fish in the Northfield.

To my son Timothy, about two acres of land in the Northfield, also my dwelling house and garden, barn and buildings, it to be under the friendly care of my executors, and to be by them occupied and used for his benefit and advantage, for so long a time as he shall continue unwell and incapable of taking due care thereof himself.

To my daughters Mary and Lois the household furniture belonging to the house, to be divided between them, hoping and trusting that they will use their utmost endeavor to render the life of their brother Timothy comfortable, as long as he remains unwell, and they are able to take care of him.

All the remainder of my estate both real and personal, to my children Mary

<sup>1</sup> See the Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. V. p. 197.

Diman, James Diman, Lois Diman, and Timothy Diman, to be equally divided among them.

My son James and my son-in-law Jonathan Haraden, together with the Rev. Thomas Barnard, to be my executors.<sup>1</sup>

The inventory of Sept. 7, 1790, amounted to £3,168 1s. 5d.

James Diman was a son of Thomas and Hannah (Finney) Diman, of Bristol, R. I. His ancestry includes the following families: Diman, Bradley, Brewster, Finney. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{4}$ .

10-11. V. 8. John Orne [Lois 1-11. IV. 1], born in Salem, died in Lynnfield, Mass. A farmer. Residence: Lynnfield.<sup>2</sup>

By his father's will, of which he was one of the executors, he received a farm in the northern part of Lynn, containing one hundred and seventy acres; also all the remaining half of his mansion-house, devised to his son Samuel; two acres of land in the Northfield; about five acres of land in the Northfield; also the remaining half of his new warehouse, and the remaining quarter part of his wharf lands, in Salem; two and a half common rights in the common lands of Salem; also his negro boy Peter.

The Lynn farm, on which he settled, is still owned by his descendants. It is known as the Orne Place, and is one of the finest estates in Lynnfield.

His will was made Nov. 5, 1784, and proved July 14, 1785. It gives all his estate to his wife Bridget. The inventory of Dec. 8, 1785, amounted to £3,943 15s.<sup>3</sup>

His gravestone in the Lynnfield Cemetery is thus inscribed:—

Sacred to the memory of  
M<sup>r</sup> JOHN ORNE  
whose remains are here deposited  
who departed this Life  
Feb, the 11<sup>th</sup> 1785  
Aged 53 Years  
Insidious grave how doth thou rend in sunder  
Whom love has knit & sympathy made one

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 360, pp. 22-23, Vol. 361, pp. 71-74, and files, No. 7,705.

<sup>2</sup> Another authority gives the date of birth of John Orne as 1734, and the date of his death as Feb. 11, 1784; but the dates as given on the Sheets are undoubtedly correct.

<sup>3</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 357, p. 524, Vol. 358, pp. 154-158; files, No. 20,065.

10-11. V. 8. *Bridget Parker*, the wife of John Orne, born in Reading, Mass., died in Lynnfield, Mass.

Her gravestone is standing in the Lynnfield graveyard. It bears the following inscription:—

SACRED  
to the memory of  
MRS BRIDGET ORNE  
widow of  
the late Mr. John Orne  
who died Oct. 27, 1826  
Æt 83

When Christ who is our life shall appear  
Then shall ye also appear with him in glory

Mrs. Orne was a daughter of John and Sarah (Lilley) Parker, of Reading. Her ancestry includes the following families: Parker, Kendall, Lilley. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{v}{f}$ .

12-16. V. 9. *Sarah Hardy* [Sarah 12-47. IV. 2], born in Salem, died in Salem.<sup>1</sup>

Her uncle, Theophilus Pickering, in his will leaves to his "kinswoman widow Sarah Mansfield, £400 old tenor."

12-16. V. 9. *Benjamin Mansfield*, her husband, probably born in Salem. Residence: Salem.

Nothing further has been learned about him. Although the births of most of his brothers and sisters are on record, we do not find his own; neither do we know the date of his death, nor even his occupation. His married life was short. So far as we know, he had only three children, the last born probably about 1738. His death must have occurred between this date and Dec. 29, 1742, the date of his father's will, which was proved July 12, 1744. In it he gives to "Benjamin, Sarah & Seeth Mansfield, the Children of my Son Benj<sup>s</sup> Mansfield dec<sup>d</sup> each of them five shillings."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The Salem Records, and several other authorities, give her birth as Feb 25, 1708-9, while Francis H. Lee [I. IX. 9] gives it as Feb. 5, 1708-9. The Salem Records, and other authorities, give her marriage as Feb. 21, 1733-34, while the Nichols Record gives it as Feb. 12, 1733.

<sup>2</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 326, pp. 196-198; files, No. 17,641.

Benjamin Mansfield was a son of Paul and Sarah (Carter) Mansfield, of Salem. His ancestry includes the following families: Mansfield, Carter. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{v}{8}$ .

17-19. V. 10. **Martha Hardy** [Sarah 12-47. IV. 2], born in Salem, died in Salem.

Her grandson, Jonathan Goodhue of New York, recorded the following account of her in his journal: —

“Mrs. Martha Goodhue died at Salem of consumption Saturday Sept. 9, 1769 at five o'clock in the morning, and was buried in the south-eastern quarter of the Burial Yard called Pickering Hill, where a marble head-stone marks her grave. She had several sisters who married at Salem & had families viz. Mrs. Henfield, Mansfield, Phippen, Peirce and Ropes, all women of intelligence, character and respectable in their families.”<sup>1</sup>

17-19. V. 10. **Benjamin Goodhue**, her husband, born in Ipswich, Mass., died in Salem.<sup>2</sup> A blacksmith. Residence: Salem.

Benjamin Goodhue subscribed to the covenant of the South Church, Salem, Feb. 14, 1775, was received into full communion March 7, 1775, and was chosen ruling elder Jan. 22, 1776.

The following account of Mr. Goodhue is taken from the journal of his grandson Jonathan Goodhue, of New York: —

“He was born at his father's house on the ancient Farm at Ipswich, July 11, 1707. He was the youngest child of his parents, and his father died when he had just completed his fifteenth year, soon after which he went to live at Salem where he settled & spent the remainder of his life. . . .

“Benjamin Goodhue was a second time married to Mrs. Ruth Putnam, daughter of Capt. John and Elizabeth Gardner. She survived her husband many years, & died in 1808, in her 92d year.

“Benjamin Goodhue's residence at Salem was in the western part of the town on Boston St. In 1737, he purchased from the proprietors of the ‘Common Lands,’ a lot a little farther up Boston St., on which he built a house where he spent the remainder of his days. It is still in good repair, (1828), and in the occupancy of the widow (Martha) and son (Benjamin) of his son Stephen.

<sup>1</sup> See letter of C. C. Goodhue [19. VIII. 207] to C. P. Bowditch [44. IX. 859], Jan., 1885.

<sup>2</sup> Several authorities give his death as Jan. 20, 1783, while the Nichols Record gives it as Jan. 13, 1783.

“He was one of the original Patentees of the township of New Salem in the County of Hampshire, and of Lyndeborough in the Province of New Hampshire, the Grants having been made by Massachusetts, but the latter territory having been found to lie within the jurisdiction of New Hampshire, the Patentees were compelled to make terms with the latter government.

“In his time it was customary for the principal people of the town to gather to discuss the news &c at the principal tavern in the town, as a sort of Exchange, and room No. 7, in which they assembled was a place of great note. The house stood in the main street, now Essex St., opposite the old First Church. Here he was a frequent visitor. He served in the Militia of the Province, & I have in my possession a Commission signed by Gov<sup>r</sup> Shirley, as Lieut. and another as Capt. in Col. Plaisted’s Regiment.

“In the controversy with the mother country which ended with the Revolution, he was early & ardently engaged on the popular side, though his advanced age prevented him from participating in the operations connected with it; but he continued to the last to feel a deep interest in the progress of events, & had the gratification to see the object of it in a near course of attainment, before his departure. He was through life a strict attendant upon public worship, and in much intercourse with the clergy, and his chief reading was on religious subjects. He was a most affectionate father and husband, and much beloved by his family, and universally respected in the community for his piety and integrity. He had a great respect for learning, and accordingly provided his sons with the best education the country afforded, and they were all entered at Cambridge, though the eldest, Stephen, did not stay to complete his course. He died of a gradual decline in the seventy-sixth year of his age, Jan. 20, 1783. His remains rest in the tomb erected by his son Benjamin on Pickering Hill. In person, he was of middle height, quite robust, and enjoyed a very good constitution. He left nine children, four of whom died unmarried.”<sup>1</sup>

The Salem Gazette of Jan. 23, 1783, has the following:—

“DIED Last Monday night aged 75 years Captain Benjamin Goodhue, a worthy and respectable inhabitant of this town. His remains are to be interred this afternoon.”

Of the death of Captain Goodhue’s second wife, the Salem Gazette of Tuesday, March 22, 1808, says:—

“In this town Mrs Ruth Goodhue widow of the late Mr. Benjamin Goodhue, aged 91—a truly worthy and christian character. Funeral this afternoon at 3 o’clock which her relatives and friends are desired to attend.”

<sup>1</sup> See letter of C. C. Goodhue [19. VIII. 207] to C. P. Bowditch [44. IX. 859], Jan., 1885.

She was the widow of Bartholomew Putman, by whom she had a family, among the descendants of which was *William Ward* (17. VII. 105), her grandson. The Ward family papers say: "Old and young were fond and pleased with grandmother Goodhue, and she was a christian."

Captain Goodhue's will was made Sept. 10, 1778, and it was proved July 9, 1783. An abstract of it is here given:—

I Benjamin Goodhue of Salem, give to my wife Ruth the improvement of my mansion house and homestead with the buildings thereon, and the improvement of three common rights in the horse pasture, during her natural life; also all the goods and household furniture she brought me, to dispose of as she pleases.

To my son Stephen my piece of land on Trask's plain, containing about one quarter of an acre; also my blacksmith's shop with the wharf adjoining said shop, with all my smiths tools; also my mansion house and homestead with the buildings thereon, after the decease of my wife, he then to pay to my grandson Thorndike Procter, one hundred silver dollars; to my grandson Robert Procter one hundred silver dollars, and to my granddaughter Martha Procter, one hundred silver dollars.

I give to my son Benjamin, my piece of land on the south side of Trask's plain containing about one acre, called the orchard; also about one quarter of an acre of land on the north side of Trask's plain; also three common rights in the horse pasture, after the decease of my wife, he then to pay to my grandson Joseph Holman, one hundred silver dollars; to my grandson John Holman one hundred silver dollars, and to my granddaughter Dorothy Goodhue one hundred silver dollars. Residue of my estate to my two sons Stephen, and Benjamin, to be equally divided between them. My son Benjamin to be my executor.

The inventory of Dec. 3, 1783, amounted to £1,197 4s. 2d. It included five hundred acres of land in New Salem, one hundred acres of land in Lyndeborough, and one hundred and ten acres of land in Lunenburg; also a coat of arms valued at 12s.<sup>1</sup>

Benjamin Goodhue was a son of William and Mary (Lowden) Goodhue, of Ipswich. His ancestry includes the following families: Goodhue, Watson, Whipple, Lowden. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{v}{7}$ .

20-24. V. 11. **Seeth Hardy** [Sarah 12-47. IV. 2], born in Salem, died in Salem.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 356, pp. 212-214, 369-370; files, No. 11,153.

<sup>2</sup> Several authorities give her birth as Feb. 17, 1712-13, while Dr. Henry Wheatland and Francis H. Lee give it as Feb. 7, 1712-13.

20-24. V. 11. *Nathaniel Phippen*, her husband, born in Salem, probably died in Salem. A cooper. Residence: Salem.

It is known that Nathaniel Phippen died before Feb. 18, 1755; for his father in his will of that date, and which was proved Oct. 18, 1756, makes the following bequest:—

“I having advanc'd to my son Nathanael in his lifetime one hundred pounds two shillings, being the Balance of his account with me; I hereby Give to Joshua, Hardy, Joseph & Seath, the Children and legal Representatives of the s<sup>d</sup> Nathanael, so much of my Estate as (the s<sup>d</sup> sum being accounted as part) will amount to One full seventh part of my whole Estate, and no more, to be equally Divided among them & their Heirs.”<sup>1</sup>

An account of the Phippen family by his great-grandson, the late Mr. George D. Phippen, of Salem, is recorded on the Salem Records. From this account the following extract is made:—

“The family name was anciently ‘Pen’ which afterwards became Fitz-pen, or son of Pen, and more recently taking its present form Phippen, perhaps not long before the settlement of New England.”

“David Phippen, a native of England, probably of Melcomb, in Dorsetshire, came to New England and began the settlement of Hingham, in Mass. colony, with thirty persons, among whom was their minister Rev. Peter Hobart, which persons drew their House Lots on 18th Sept. 1635. He married Sarah — and had eight sons and three daughters. He died in Boston about 1658.”<sup>2</sup>

Nathaniel Phippen was the son of Nathaniel and Margaret (Palfray) Phippen, of Salem. His ancestry includes the following families: Phippen, Wood, Guppy, Palfray, Manning, Calley. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{v}{8}$ .

25. V. 12. *Joseph Hardy* [Sarah 12-47. IV. 2], born in Haverhill, died in Salem.<sup>3</sup>

A memorandum made by John Pickering states that, “Joseph Hardy whose place in the order of births is not known, died of eating hen-bane

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 334, p. 104; files, No. 21,760.

<sup>2</sup> For an interesting account of this family, with its armorial bearings, by George D. Phippen, see the *Heraldic Journal*, Vol. IV. pp. 1-20.

<sup>3</sup> The Salem Records and authorities give his date of birth as Sept. 14, 1716, while the *Ropes Family Bible* gives it as Sept. 4, 1716.

at the age of eight years. His playmates said he had eaten berries, which from the description, were of the hen-bane, and his body had the appearance of being poisoned in the opinion of the physicans." Henry W. Pickering [49. VIII. 547], states that he "Died of poison from eating apple-fern seeds."

The Salem Records show that he was born Sept. 14, 1716, and died Sept. 3, 1718. This would make him two years old at death, while the above account says he was eight years old.

25-27. V. 14. **Mary Hardy** [Sarah 12-47. IV. 2], born in Salem, died in Boston.

The following announcement of her death appeared in the Massachusetts Gazette of April 3, 1786: —

"Died very suddenly on Thursday morning last in the 67 year of her age, Mrs. Mary Peirce, wife of Mr. Isaac Peirce of this town."

Mrs. Peirce was buried in the family tomb at Copp's Hill, Boston; but on the purchase of the tomb in the King's Chapel Burial Ground, by her son Captain Joseph Peirce, her remains, and those of all the other members of the family who had been buried at Copp's Hill, were transferred on Dec. 23, 1819, to the new tomb. The Peirce family records give the names of the members thus transferred.

25-27. V. 14. **Isaac Peirce**, her husband, born in Boston, baptized there Oct. 14, 1722, died in Boston. Residence: Boston.

Isaac Peirce is called in different documents on record a baker, a merchant, and a gentleman. He was an ardent patriot of the Revolution, and during the siege of Boston served on various committees, besides giving three of his sons to the army.<sup>1</sup> He was an excellent man, and was distinctly remembered by his great-granddaughter, the late Mrs. Laura P. Holland, of Chelsea, who used frequently to go with him on his morning walks.

His second wife, to whom he was married March 2, 1787, was Mrs. Joanna Harris. Mr. Peirce was her third husband, she having been

<sup>1</sup> See the Memorials of the Massachusetts Society of Cincinnati, p. 414.

ISAAC PEIRCE.

[25-27. V. 14]

FROM A WATER-COLOR, PAINTED ABOUT THE YEAR 1800, NOW IN THE  
POSSESSION OF THE HEIRS OF THE LATE GRENVILLE MELLETT PEIRCE,  
ESQ., OF BATON ROUGE, LA.



married, first, to William Abrahams of Charlestown, and, second, to Captain Josiah Harris of the same place. It is probable that her father was Captain Bartholomew Trow, of Charlestown.<sup>1</sup> She is named among those buried in the Peirce family tomb.

The original portrait of Isaac Peirce, here reproduced, is a small water-color painted in Boston about the year 1800, evidently by the same artist who painted the other members of his family which appear in this work. These pictures are now owned by the heirs of his great-great-grandson, Mr. Grenville Mellen Peirce, of Baton Rouge, La.

Mr. Peirce died at the house of his son Joseph Peirce, in Purchase Street, Boston, with whom he had lived from Dec. 21, 1802, to Dec. 20, 1811. He was buried in the family vault in the King's Chapel Burial Ground, Boston. Administration on the estate of Isaac Peirce, late of Boston, Gentleman, was granted to Joseph Peirce, of Boston, Esquire, Dec. 30, 1811. Joseph Peirce, Esquire, Nehemiah Somes, Gentleman, and John Dorr, all of Boston, gave bond in \$1000.<sup>2</sup>

Isaac Peirce was the son of Isaac and Grace (Tucker) Peirce of Boston. His ancestry includes the following families: Peirce, Cole, Bacon, Tucker. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{v}{3}$ .

28-40. V. 15. **Lydia Hardy** [Sarah 12-47. IV. 2], born in Salem, died in Salem.

The following account of her death appeared in the Salem Gazette of March 11, 1794:—

"In this town Mrs. Lydia Henfield, aged 71. This old lady bore her age remarkably well: last Tuesday morning she rose in usual good health, prepared and eat her breakfast and soon after, while playing with a young child, she was perceived to be falling, and a person present caught her, but she was instantly breathless having sunk gently into the arms of death without one struggle, groan or sigh."

Her great-grandson, the late Samuel Henfield Gooch, wrote:—

"I have her snuff box, with some of the snuff left in it a hundred years ago."

<sup>1</sup> See The Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, by Thomas B. Wyman, pp. 3 and 473.

<sup>2</sup> Suffolk County Probate Records, Vol. 202, p. 224; files, No. 23,886.

28-40. V. 15. *Edmund Henfield*, her husband, born in Salem, died in Salem. A cooper. Residence: Salem.

Administration on the estate of Edmund Henfield was granted, April 9, 1794, to Joseph Henfield, who gave bond with John and Jonathan Henfield as sureties. The inventory of July 11, 1794, amounted to £300 5s.<sup>1</sup>

There is an old coat of arms of the Henfield family in the possession of his great-great-granddaughter, Clara Henfield Haraden.

The Salem Observer of June 15, 1839, gives an account of the demolition of the old Henfield House, caused by the construction of the Eastern Railroad, and says:—

“A part of it is about 200 years old, and was a complete specimen of the dwelling-house architecture of olden times, huge oak beams, sharp roof and low stud the lower rooms being only 5 ft. 8 inches in the clear. We understand some curious relics have been found in the walls, among others an old sword, its history can be traced back to the old French war.”

Felt, in his *Annals of Salem*, having given a picture of the old Curwen house, and a description of it and several other ancient houses, says:—

“Another of similarly constructed mansions which invite our passing notice, is the Henfield house. This was situated on the East side of Washington street, near to and southward of the first church. It was formerly the residence of Hilliard Veren, and is supposed to have been built in 1650. A part of its first proportions, and much of its oak frame, remained till its subversion in 1839, to accommodate the Railroad.”<sup>2</sup>

Edmund Henfield was a son of Joseph and Lydia (Baston) Henfield. His father was a cooper of Salem. His ancestry includes the following families: Henfield, Grafton (?) Gardner, Frier, White, Herbert, Baston. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{17}$ .

41-47. V. 16. *Ruth Hardy* [Sarah 12-47. IV. 2], born in Salem, died in Salem.

The following announcement of her death is taken from the Salem Gazette of Tuesday, Dec. 8, 1795:—

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 363, p. 173, 292; files, No. 13,073.

<sup>2</sup> *Annals of Salem*, by Joseph B. Felt, Vol. 1, pp. 110-111.

“DIED].— In this town on Sunday last in the 70th. year of her age, Mrs. Ruth Ropes, relict of Benjamin Ropes, sen. Her funeral will be this afternoon, if the weather be fair — when her friends and relations are desired to attend.”

41-47. V. 16. *Benjamin Ropes*, her husband, born in Salem, baptized there March 25, 1722, died in Salem. A cooper. Residence: Salem.<sup>1</sup>

Benjamin Ropes was a prominent man in church affairs. On July 6, 1746, he was received into full communion by the Third or Tabernacle Church, which, up to 1762, claimed to be the First Church. The third of August of that year he was on a committee with Jacob Ashton, to make an end of the difficulties between it and the Rev. Thomas Barnard's church, which also claimed to be the First Church. The matter was ended by Mr. Barnard's church retaining the name of First Church, while they called themselves the Third Church. The plate, money, and land were divided between the two societies.<sup>2</sup>

Mr. Ropes was chosen an elder of his church Sept. 11, 1769, but Aug. 21, 1771, he declined to serve longer in that office. He was chosen treasurer of the society Nov. 26, 1770.

During the ministry of the Rev. Mr. Whittaker there was a division in the Third Church, owing to the pastor's pronounced Presbyterian views. He succeeded in changing the form of government of the church from the Congregational to the Presbyterian. Among the dissatisfied members were Benjamin Ropes and Colonel Timothy Pickering. They, with others, separated from the society and formed the one now known as the South Church. This claimed to be rightfully the Third Church, and so claims to be to this day. Several pamphlets have been printed in favor of both societies.

Of this new society Benjamin Ropes became a leading member. The records show that he was one of the original subscribers to the covenant

<sup>1</sup> The Salem Records, and other authorities, give his birth as Mar. 22, 1721-2, while the Nichols Family Record gives it as Mar. 2 (O. S.), 1722. The Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. XVIII. p. 175, gives the date of his marriage as Dec. 4, 1754, and of his death as Apr. 20, 1780, both of which are wrong. The Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. p. 152, and other authorities, gives these dates as Mar. 27, 1746, and Apr. 20, 1790, respectively.

<sup>2</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. pp. 152-153.

of Feb. 14, 1775. Many of the records are in his legible hand, as were those of the Tabernacle Church, he having been the scribe of both societies. From the South Church records the following entries are quoted:—

“April 10, 1775 Benjamin Ropes who was chosen some years since to succeed Mr. Jacob Ashton, dec'd as chh. Treasurer is the legal and proper Treasurer of this Chh. by virtue of the choice made some years since.”

“Jan. 22, 1776 Benjamin Ropes chosen scribe.” “Whereas our bro. Benj. Ropes at the time when Rev. John Huntington was Pastor of this chh. was chosen Deacon Voted we now renew our choice of him to that office in this chh.”

“Sept. 18, 1778 Voted That bro. Benjamin Ropes be an Elder to assist Elder Goodhue in that office”

“Aug. 4, 1782 Voted that according to the growing infirmities of Dea. Benj. Ropes, that choice be made of another Deacon.”

Mr. Ropes was Superintendent of the Poor of Salem, from May, 1775, to Oct., 1779. During the latter part of his life, he was afflicted with the palsy.

The old Ropes Bible, before mentioned, which is now in the possession of Mrs. Charles T. Ripley [12. X. 183], has the following memorandum concerning his house:—

“My grandfather Ropes house now stands at the eastern corner of Munroe and Essex street, but 't is much enlarged and renewed. He did own all the land through Munroe street to Federal street.”

This house has been remodelled, and is now owned by Mr. Ropes's granddaughter, Mrs. John Bertram.

Administration on his estate was granted April 12, 1792, to his son Samuel, who gave bond, with Jerathmeel Peirce and John Leach as sureties. The inventory of Feb. 14, 1796, amounted to \$1901.46, including a house and land.<sup>1</sup>

The Ropes family, of which Benjamin Ropes was a member, began with George Ropes,<sup>2</sup> a carpenter, who with his wife Mary joined the First

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 362, p. 49, Vol. 364, pp. 354, 529; files, No. 24,151.

<sup>2</sup> See Materials for a History of the Ropes Family, by E. S. W., in the Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. pp. 25, *et seq.*



HOUSE OF JOHN CLARKE, SALEM, MASS.

[48. V. 17.]

Church of Salem, March 15, 1642. Their descendants for more than two hundred and fifty years of Salem's history have been useful, respectable citizens, engaged in various vocations, and filling positions of trust and honor. It is one of Salem's best known names. John Ropes, their fifth child, married Lydia, daughter of Dr. Thomas Wells. Their descendant, the late Benjamin Ropes Nichols [44. VII. 218], had two silver spoons marked I. R. & L. R., which are supposed to have been theirs. Samuel Ropes, their son, was a member of the First Church, and one of those who caused the dismissal of its pastor, the Rev. Mr. Fiske. He was an uncle of Judge Nathaniel Ropes (H. C. 1745), and father of the subject of this sketch.

Benjamin Ropes was a son of Samuel and Lydia (Neal) Ropes of Salem. *Joseph Neal* [60-70. IV. 10<sup>2</sup>] was his uncle. His ancestry includes the following families: Ropes, Wells, Warner, Neal, Lawes, Croade, Hersey. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{II}$ .

48. V. 17. *Sarah Pickering* [Timothy 48-59. IV. 9], born in Salem, baptized there, Feb. 1, 1729-30, died in Salem.

Mrs. Clarke lived in the house still standing in Essex Street, Salem, half way between Beckford and Munroe streets, now numbered three hundred and fifty-eight. A heliotype of it is here given. She lived to be nearly ninety-seven years old, and though for several years before her death her step was infirm, her general health was good. Mrs. Clarke told her great-grandson, John Clarke Lee, who lived with her when a child, that she had seen some of the people who were tried for witchcraft in 1692.<sup>1</sup> She was a woman of large features and a strong face.<sup>2</sup>

Mrs. Clarke wrought in crewel the Pickering coat of arms, with her name and the date 1753 under it. It still hangs in the entry of the old Pickering House in Salem. A heliotype of it is given facing page 11. Other pieces of her needlework are in the possession of her descendants.

Mrs. Clarke made her will July 30, 1822. It was proved May 15, 1827. An abstract of it is here given.

To my grandson Charles Chauncy Clarke \$1000.

To my grandson Frederick Cabot, of Boston, merchant, and my aforesaid grandson Charles Chauncy Clarke, in trust the sum of \$1000 to invest and pay

<sup>1</sup> Francis H. Lee's Record, p. 190.

<sup>2</sup> Mrs. Thomas Donaldson.

over the income to Harriet Mack wife of Elisha Mack, Esq., and at her decease to her heirs.

To my daughter Esther Clarke, widow of my late son the Rev. John Clarke, my dwelling house in Essex street, Salem.

To my grandson Frederick Cabot, my lot of land in Warren street, Salem.

To my great-grandson John Clarke Lee \$500.

To my great-granddaughter Eliza Cabot Blanchard \$20.

To my great-grandson John Clarke Fillis \$500.

To my grandson Frederick Cabot, all the residue of my estate, in trust, to pay over the interest of one half of said residue to my other grandson John Higginson Cabot of Salem, merchant, and the interest of the other half for his own use, and at death of the said John Higginson Cabot, his interest to the said Frederick Cabot whom I appoint my executor. Inventory \$16,912.64.<sup>1</sup>

48. V. 17. *John Clarke*, the husband of Sarah Pickering, born in New Hampshire, died in Salem.<sup>2</sup> A shipmaster. Residence: Salem.

Captain Clarke came to Salem from Portsmouth, N. H. He was master of a ship trading with London.<sup>3</sup> His gravestone is still standing in the Broad Street Ground.

By his will, dated March 6, 1799, and proved April 1, 1801, in which he called himself mariner of Salem, he left his property to his daughter Elizabeth in trust, for the benefit of his widow, of the children of his deceased daughter Nancy, wife of Francis Cabot, and of Elizabeth herself.<sup>4</sup>

He was the son of Josiah and Mary (Wingate) Clarke. His ancestry includes the following families: Clarke, Wingate, Nutter. See ANCESTRY TABLES <sup>V</sup>IX.

49-50. V. 18. *Mary Pickering* [Timothy 48-59. IV. 9], born in Salem, baptized there April 1, 1733, died in Haverhill, Mass.

She was admitted into the Tabernacle Church, April 5, 1752. Her portrait, painted with her daughter standing by her side, by Joseph

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 35, p. 199, Vol. 406, pp. 232-233; files, No. 5,519.

<sup>2</sup> Several authorities give the date of his death as Jan. 7, 1800; but his gravestone is inscribed with the date Jan 7, 1801, *Æt.* 82, and the Salem Gazette of Jan. 9, 1801, says: "In this town Capt. John Clarke aged 82, father of the late Rev. Dr. John Clarke of Boston."

<sup>3</sup> Gardner Family Records.

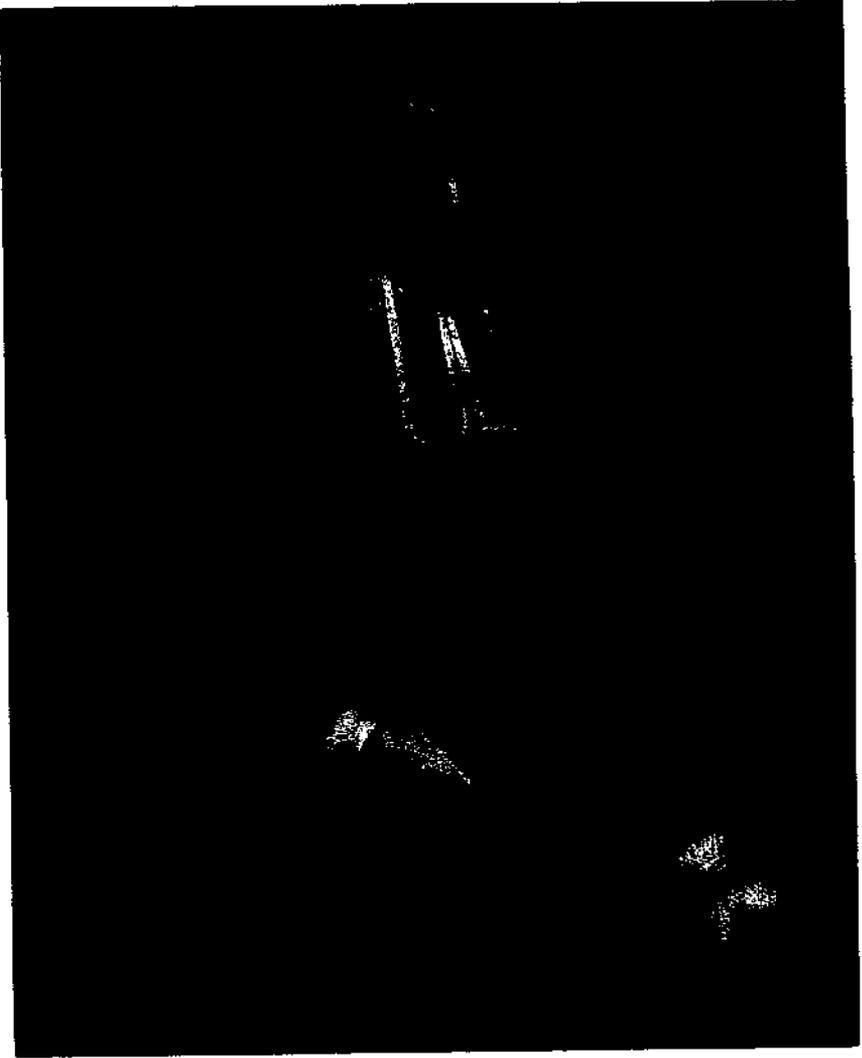
<sup>4</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 368, p. 251; files, 5,462.

MARY (PICKERING) LEAVITT.

[49-50. V. 18.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY JOSEPH BADGER, PAINTED ABOUT 1758, NOW IN THE  
POSSESSION OF JOHN PICKERING, ESQ., OF SALEM, MASS.





DUDLEY LEAVITT.

[49-50. V. 18<sup>1</sup>.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY JOSEPH BADGER, PAINTED ABOUT 1758, NOW IN  
THE POSSESSION OF JOHN PICKERING, ESQ. OF SALEM, MASS.

Badger, is here reproduced. It is still hanging in the dining-room of the old Pickering House in Salem.

The following notice of her death is from the Salem Gazette of Friday, Feb. 1, 1805 : —

“At Haverhill on the 30<sup>th</sup> Jan., Madam Mary Sargeant aged 72. The funeral will be next Monday ; relatives and friends are requested to attend without a more particular invitation.”

The Haverhill Museum of Tuesday, Feb. 5, 1805, prints an obituary of her, in which she is called Madam Mary Sargeant. She is also spoken of in this obituary as a dignified and lovely woman, combining elegant accomplishments with all the useful virtues of domestic life, and as a person of superior mind, sweetness of disposition and unaffected piety. It also adds that so much real dignity always appeared in her deportment, and at the same time such engaging condescension, that the high and the humble were equally proud of her attention, and impressed with her goodness. Through life she preserved a uniform evenness of temper, kindness, and charity.

Colonel Pickering, in writing to his wife from Washington, Feb. 12, 1805, says of his sister Sargeant's death : “And thus is made the first breach in a numerous family of brothers and sisters all advanced to what is called old age.”

49-50. V. 18. *Dudley Leavitt*, the first husband of Mary Pickering, born probably in Stratham, N. H., died in Salem. A minister. Residence: Salem.

Dudley Leavitt, H. C., 1739, studied divinity, and “was employed to preach in Stratham in 1743, and in March, 1745, the town ‘Voted Mr. Dudley Leavitt, a minister to preach the gospel in Stratham.’”<sup>1</sup> The following extracts from the Journal of Deacon Samuel Lane of Stratham, N. H.,<sup>2</sup> throw some light on the difficulties Mr. Leavitt encountered in preaching to the people in Stratham : —

<sup>1</sup> Letter of J. C. A. Wingate [57. VII. 331].

<sup>2</sup> This Journal is now in the possession of Mr. Henry S. Lane, of Stratham, N. H., a great-grandson of Deacon Samuel Lane.

"Sept. 30, 1744. Being Lord's Day, there was an unaccountable uproar in the Meeting house, by attempting to bring Mr. Dudley Leavit into the Pulpit to preach half the day with Mr. Rust, which being complained of to the Governor, he sent the High Sheriff, Mr. Packer, the next Sabbath, and took Mr. Leavit out of the Pulpit, which occasioned Law business in town, and was a damage to me, I being Tithing man that year, and obliged to complain of such disorders as was then in town. S. L."

1744

"Many of our people have been for some time separated from the church and refuse to join in the word and ordinances; and Mr. Dudley Leavit now preaches to them in Mr. Coker's house, which they have fitted up with seats &c., for that use; also, there is a separate Meeting house now being erected at Exeter. These separate people are called by many New Lights and Schemers."

Mr. Leavitt's labors in Stratham were of short duration. He visited Salem and preached for the Tabernacle Church, or, as they on their records called themselves, the "First Church of Christ." At a meeting held by this parish March 5, 1744-5, they voted that:—

"M<sup>r</sup> Dudley Leavit Having Preached to this Ch<sup>h</sup> & Congregation Some Sabbaths & whereas he is now about to Return Home from Salem the Beginning of the Next week upon some necessary occasion. Wherefore voted that it is the Earnest and unanimous Desire of this Ch<sup>h</sup> that He Return to Salem again as Soon as He Can & preach to us & our Congregation Upon Probation a Suitable Length of time."

At another meeting held April 30, 1745, it is recorded that:—

"Whereas this Ch<sup>h</sup> Did after Hearing M<sup>r</sup> Dudley Leavit some time Invite Him to preach upon Probation & now Having Had farther Experience of Him to our Great Satisfaction & the Satisfaction of our Congregation— Wherefore Voted that This Church Doth Now Make Choice of Him for our Pastor for our Selves & Congregation & to take Charge of the flock in the Room & Steed of our Rev<sup>d</sup> Pastor Mr Samuell Fisk who is about to take a Discharge from His Ecclesiastical Relations to this Ch<sup>h</sup>."

The 30th of the following July, Deacon Timothy Pickering [48-59. IV. 9] and Jeffrey Lang were appointed to wait on Mr. Fiske and inform him that the church had given him a discharge. Aug. 12, 1745, the church renewed their call of Mr. Leavitt, and voted to give him £300 old tenor for the first three years, and Edward Kitchen, Esq., Deacon Ruck, and Deacon Pickering were chosen a committee to present Mr. Leavitt with a copy of the votes of the meeting.

The call of Mr. Leavitt was an unanimous one, for the records of the church state : —

“ That there Never was so much as one Vote Neither in y<sup>e</sup> Ch<sup>h</sup> Nor Congregation Since M<sup>r</sup> Leavit Came to Salem, against His Settling Here.”

Mr. Leavitt accepted the call by a letter dated Sept. 10, 1745. The records of the Tabernacle Church state that he was ordained 24th Oct., 1745.

Extracts from an interleaved almanac of James Jeffrey, Esq., printed in the Essex Institute Historical Collections,<sup>1</sup> under the year 1745, says : —

“ Oct. 26<sup>th</sup>. — Mr. Leavitt ordained in Mr. Kitchen's orchard, under an apple tree.”

He remained pastor of this church till his death in 1762.

His residence in Stratham was what is now the Wingate farm, on which at that time there were two houses. On Dec. 4, 1773, his heirs sold the farm to the Hon. *Paine Wingate* [56-57. V. 23]. For a further description of this estate, and a heliotype of the house, see page 129.

Mr. Leavitt's portrait, of which we give a heliotype, was painted by Joseph Badger. It hangs in the dining-room of the old Pickering House in Salem.

The following obituary of Mr. Leavitt appeared in the Boston Gazette of Feb. 22, 1762 : —

“ On the 7<sup>th</sup> of February Instant, died at Salem very much lamented of a lingering illness the Rev. Mr. Dudley Leavitt, Pastor of the First Church in that Town, and was interred very decently the 10<sup>th</sup> following in the Vault of the Family of Edward Kitchen, Esq., and at his desire, a vast Number of People of all ranks attended his Funeral. — He was a faithful Preacher of the great Doctrines of the Gospel and most carefully guarded his Flock against the Errors and Vices of the Times.”

The following is an abstract of his will, which was dated Dec. 14, 1761, and proved March 1, 1762.

Dudley Leavitt of Salem, clerk. To Mary my beloved wife all household furniture and my library. To my two sisters Sarah Thirston and Love Chase ten dollars each

<sup>1</sup> Vol. II. p. 66.

to be paid in New Hampshire currency. To my beloved wife Mary Leavitt and three daughters Mary Leavitt, Sarah Leavitt and Elizabeth Leavitt the whole of the residue of my estate real and personal equally between them. My wife executor.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Leavitt was a son of Moses and Sarah (Leavitt) Leavitt. His father made his will at Stratham, N. H., in 1754; and constituted his son Dudley executor. In 1749 he was also the executor of his brother Stephen's will, which contained a bequest "to my brother Rev. Dudley Leavitt of Salem." His ancestry includes the following families: Leavitt, Dudley, Leavitt. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{181}$ .

50. V. 18<sup>2</sup>. *Nathaniel Peaslee Sargeant*, the second husband of Mary Pickering, born in Methuen, Mass., died in Haverhill, Mass. Residence: Haverhill.<sup>3</sup>

Judge Sargeant, H. C. 1750, studied law and began its practice in Haverhill. The history of Haverhill says:—

"He had the character of an able and honest attorney, though never distinguished at the bar as an advocate. He possessed sound judgment and excellent learning and but few men were more respected for integrity and uniformity of conduct. He may justly be ranked among the patriots of 1770 and 1775.

"He was not perhaps so ardent as some others; but he was decided in support of civil freedom, and could always be depended upon as a prudent and efficient supporter of the ancient privileges and rights of the colonies. Mr. Sargeant was a delegate from this town to the Provincial Congress, which met at Cambridge in Feb. 1775, and in 1776 was a member of the House of Representatives. In both of these bodies he was a prominent *working* member and was frequently placed on the most important committees.

"After the Constitution of Massachusetts was adopted in 1780, he had a seat on the bench of the Supreme Judicial Court and on the appointment of William Cushing to be a Judge of the Supreme Court of the United States, Mr. Sargeant was made Chief Justice. As a judge he won the respect and commendation of all, for his ability, integrity and impartiality."<sup>3</sup>

The following notice of his death appeared in the Salem Gazette of Oct. 11, 1791:—

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 338, pp. 541-542; files, No. 16,548.

<sup>2</sup> Appleton's Cyclopædia of American Biography, p. 397, gives the date of his death as Oct. 12, 1791; but the Salem Gazette of Oct. 11 contains an obituary of Judge Sargeant.

<sup>3</sup> History of Haverhill, Mass., by George W. Chase, p. 648.

“At Haverhill the Hon. Nathaniel Peaseley Sargent Esq., Chief Justice of the Supreme Judicial Court of the Commonwealth. As a Judge, independence and impartiality were conspicuous in him; and the big tear, which often stood trembling on his eye, when pronouncing the sentence of the law on its devoted victims, witnessed his humanity. As a Patriot and Civilian his country testified to his worth in placing him in many important and exalted stations. As a Man, the tears which were shed at his interment and the gloom which hung on the countenances of the multitude, which paid the last mark of respect to his remains emphatically evince his worth.”

Chief Justice Sargeant was a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. He was one of Colonel Pickering's most agreeable and valued correspondents. His letters are inspired with fraternal love, are natural, racy, and enlivened by a peculiar wit and humor.<sup>1</sup> On hearing of Judge Sargeant's death, Colonel Pickering wrote of him, that he was “a useful, worthy and amiable man, the prolongation of his life would have been desirable.”

A letter from John Pickering to his brother Colonel Timothy Pickering, says that Judge Sargeant died of “jaundice with a general indisposition of body.”

Judge Sargeant's first wife, whom he married Feb. 3, 1759, was Rhoda Barnard of Amesbury, Mass. She died Oct. 9, 1774. By her he had the following children:—

RHODA SARGEANT,	born March 24, 1759. She married — Kimball.
NATHANIEL P. SARGEANT,	born Jan. 16, 1761.
JONATHAN BARNARD SARGEANT,	born Jan. 24, 1763.
SUSANNA SARGEANT,	born Feb. 1, 1765. She married June 28, 1786, the Rev. Huntington Porter of Rye, N. H.
ELIZABETH SARGEANT,	born April 5, 1767.
TABITHA SARGEANT,	born April 21, 1769, died Aug. 21, 1806.
MARY SARGEANT,	born Aug. 24, 1771, died July 10, 1808.
SARAH SARGEANT,	born Feb. 17, 1774, died March 4, 1803.

All of the above children, with the exception of Nathaniel P., are mentioned in his will of Aug. 2, 1791, which was proved Nov. 7, 1791.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. II. p. 477.

<sup>2</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 361, p. 462; files, No. 24,669.

Judge Sargeant was a son of the Rev. Christopher and Susanna (Peaslee) Sargeant, and was one of a family of twelve children.<sup>1</sup> His father was pastor of the church at Methuen, Mass., for more than fifty years, until old age forced him to resign in 1783. *Lucy Washburn* [54. VIII. 645] is his great-grandniece, and *Moses Tyler Stevens* [6. IX. 80] is his great-grandnephew. Judge Sargeant's ancestry includes the following families: Sargeant, Perkins, Barnes, Stevens, Peaslee, Barnard, Kimball, Scott, Wyatt, Marsh, Cutler. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{v}{18}$ .

51-52. V. 19. *Lydia Pickering* [Timothy 48-59. IV. 9], born in Salem, baptized there March 7, 1736, died in Boston.

Mrs. Williams after the death of her husband moved to Boston. The accompanying heliotype is from her portrait, by Gilbert Stuart, painted about 1819. It is owned by her great-granddaughter, Mrs. Philip H. Sears, of Boston. There is still another portrait of Mrs. Williams painted by the same artist, which was in the possession of her grandson, the late George H. Williams of Northborough, Mass. His nieces, the Misses Whitney, of Cambridge, Mass., have a fine copy of this picture.

51-52. V. 19. *George Williams*, her husband, born in Salem, died in Salem.<sup>2</sup> A merchant. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Williams, like so many of the Salem merchants, was in early life a shipmaster. At just what time he gave up going to sea, and began his extensive commercial transactions with foreign countries, we do not know; but for many years he was one of the most active and enterprising merchants in Salem. He was not only a good merchant, but he was also a public-spirited citizen at a time when men of his character and means were of great value to the country. He took a firm and decided stand on the patriot side during the Revolution. On March 13, 1775, he was chosen as one of thirty members of a Committee of Safety, a committee of which

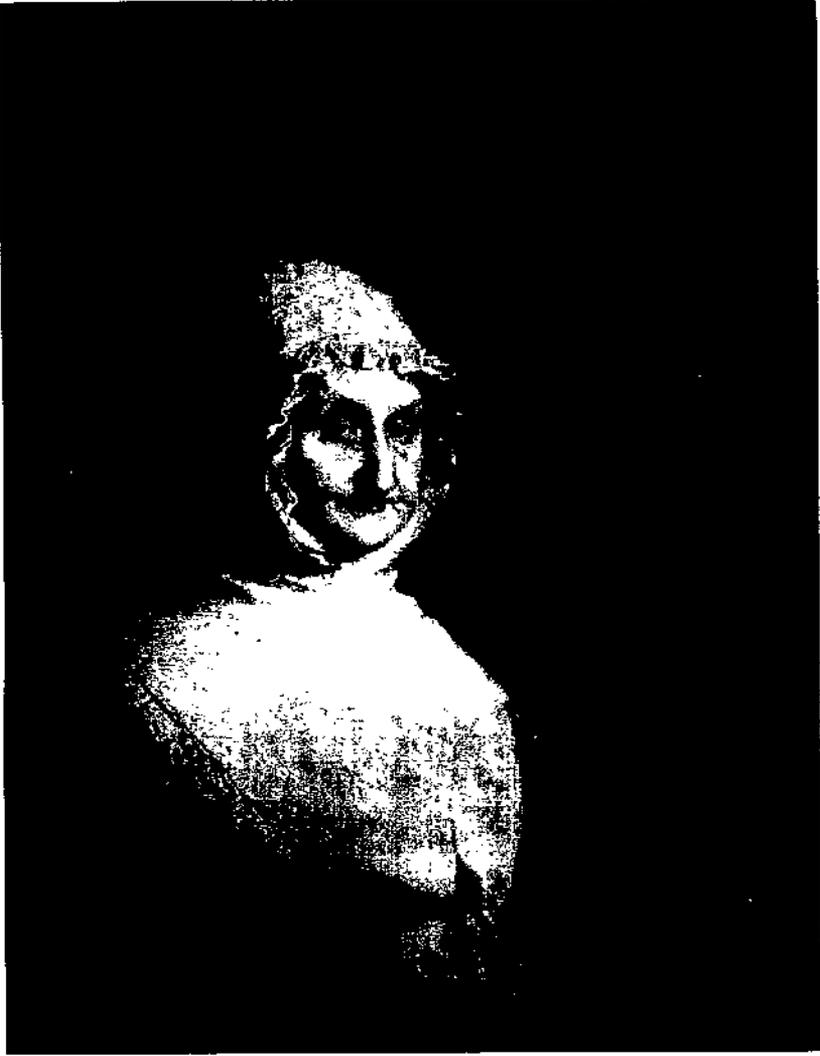
<sup>1</sup> A genealogy of his family is in the New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol. X. pp. 184-185.

<sup>2</sup> Several authorities give the date of his death as June 12, 1797, while the Salem Gazette of Friday, June 16, 1797, says he died "last Sunday morning," which was the 11th.

LYDIA (PICKERING) WILLIAMS.

[51-52. V. 19.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY GILBERT STUART, PAINTED ABOUT 1819, NOW IN  
THE POSSESSION OF MRS. PHILIP H. SEARS, OF BOSTON.



his brothers-in-law, Colonel Timothy Pickering, John Pickering, and Israel Dodge were also members.<sup>1</sup> On May 18, 1776, he was sent as a representative to a General Court, held at Watertown, and he was again elected a representative in 1777, 1778, 1779, 1783, and 1785.<sup>2</sup> He was also elected to the Massachusetts Senate in 1780, but declined to serve. The fact that he was chosen so often to represent his town, at so trying a time, proves the general confidence in his judgment and ability.

He was a part-owner in three privateers: "The Black Prince," eighteen guns, six pounders, N. West, Captain; "The Pickering," sixteen guns, six pounders, Jonathan Haraden, Captain;<sup>3</sup> and "The Lion" twenty guns, six and four pounders. He and his brother-in-law, John Gardner, had the misfortune, in 1781 to have some of their ships captured at St. Eustatia by Admiral Rodney. This loss reduced his estate, and caused him no little anxiety.

Mr. Williams was the frequent correspondent, and the faithful and generous friend of Colonel Pickering, who was greatly indebted to him for loans of money at times when it was impossible to obtain it from the Treasury. He held advanced views on the manufacturing needs of Massachusetts, and showed his appreciation of the benefit which New England might derive from fostering the manufacturing interests.<sup>4</sup>

In 1756 Mr. Williams bought the three-storied wooden house standing on the western part of the estate on Essex Street, which was recently sold by the heirs of the late Colonel Francis Peabody. The house was torn down in 1839.<sup>5</sup>

The Salem and Boston newspapers contained notices of his death. The Salem Gazette of Friday, June 16, 1797, says: —

"Last Sunday morning, died in this Town, GEORGE WILLIAMS, Esq. — an eminent Merchant, aged 65. He was a Gentleman of unwearied application to business. He has been a Representative of Salem, and firm in our Revolution — has been as firm in support of our Federal Constitution. His judgment as a merchant was esteemed,

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Octavius Pickering, Vol. I. p. 34.

<sup>2</sup> Salem Records.

<sup>3</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. II. pp. 147-148.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid. II. p. 419.

<sup>5</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. XIII. p. 25, note.

and the same reputation he maintained in public and domestic life. Prudence in his affairs, economy in his plans, perseverance and enterprize, punctuality in his dealings and independence of mind, characterized him a worthy Citizen of Salem. He has left a Widow and a most worthy family to lament the bereavement."

Mr. Williams, at the time of his marriage to Lydia Pickering, was a widower. His first wife, to whom he was married July 13, 1752, was Hannah Hathorne, a daughter of Benjamin and Hannah Hathorne of Salem. She died Oct. 30, 1756, leaving two children:—

GEORGE WILLIAMS, born July 18, 1754. He married Sept. 14, 1777, Mehitable West, and died at sea April 6, 1784.

HANNAH WILLIAMS, born June 14, 1756, died May 3, 1759.

The following is an abstract of George Williams' will. It was dated Jan. 26, 1797, and was proved July 12, 1797:—

To my wife Lydia Williams, my dwelling house in Salem, and the household furniture during her natural life; also the sum of \$13,333, on condition that she release her right of dower in my real estate on the request of my executors.

To my daughter Lydia Lyman, wife of Theodore Lyman of Boston, merchant, \$817.

To my daughter Mary Pratt, wife of William Pratt, of Boston, merchant, \$917.

To my daughter Elizabeth Williams, my son Francis Williams, my daughter Anne Williams, my son Charles Williams, \$1667, each. As it is my desire that all my children shall share alike in my estate, the above provisions are intended to make my children above named, respectively, a sum equal to what I have already given to each of their brothers and sisters. I therefore give and devise all the residue of my personal estate together with my real-estate or the proceeds thereof, if the same should be sold, as here in after provided, to all my children as well those before named, as the others, to be equally divided between them, except one equal twelfth part thereof which I give to the children of my son George Williams late of Salem, mariner, deceased, to be equally divided between them.

I authorise my executors to make sale of, and convey, all my real estate, except the life estate devised to my wife, either at private or public sale at their discretion, provided that my real estate in the town of Watertown now occupied by the firm of George Williams & Co., as also the reversion of the premises devised to my wife, shall not be sold without the consent of the major part of my children.

And where as by an agreement signed by me and my sons Samuel, Henry, Timothy, and John, dated April 1, 1793, I did allow that they were respectively interested in the stock in trade which I then possessed, viz: Samuel in the sum of £3000.

Henry in the sum of £2100. Timothy in the sum of £1800. and John in the sum of £1500, of the late lawful money, which said allowance was made as well to compensate them for their former services, as to make them some provision out of my estate, I do hereby approve of and confirm the said agreement, and every article and clause therein, and the sums so allowed are not to be considered as any part of my estate, or of the shares or portions which my said sons are respectfully entitled to receive by virtue of this my will.

And as to the household furniture the use of which I have given to my wife for life, I will that after her decease the same be equally divided among my children, except one twelfth part to be divided among the children of my son George, in equal shares.

I appoint my said sons Samuel Williams, late of Boston, gentleman, Henry Williams, of Watertown, merchant, Timothy Williams, of Boston, gentleman, and John Williams, of Watertown, esquire, to be my executors.

The inventory of the estate amounted to \$61,226.50, and according to the final account, with accrued interest, it amounted to \$63,161.53.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Williams was a son of Henry and Mary (Waters) Williams of Salem. His ancestry includes the following families: Williams, Skerry, Manning, Calley, Waters, Place, Hawkins. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{11}$ .

53. V. 20. Elizabeth Pickering [Timothy 48-59. IV. 9], born in Salem, baptized there Nov. 13, 1737, died in Wenham, Mass.<sup>2</sup>

Mrs. Gardner was distinguished for the strength of her understanding, and the energy of her character. She was a great reader, possessed of much information, and is said to have been the most intellectual of the sisters. Although she practised the strictest economy, she was most obligingly generous.<sup>3</sup> Her grandniece, Mrs. Thomas Donaldson, thus writes of her:—

“A violent democrat in politics, and was told by her brother Timothy that she talked of what she did not understand. She was something of a free thinker in religious matters, and fond of reading Tom Paine, whose works were quite generally

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 365, pp. 274-275, 477-479; files, No. 29,991.

<sup>2</sup> Francis H. Lee and a memorandum of Henry Pickering give the date of her birth as Nov. 12, 1737. The Gardner Family Records have Nov. 12, 1737, new style. The Nichols Family Records have Oct. 29, 1737, old style. Upham, Vol. IV. p. 393, has Nov. 23, 1737. The correct date is probably Nov. 1, 1737, old style.

<sup>3</sup> Francis H. Lee's Record and Mrs. Nathaniel Silsbee.

read at that time and especially by the democrats. She was a woman of strong mind, very outspoken in her opinions."

The following notice of her death appeared in the Salem Gazette of Oct. 24, 1823: —

"In Wenham, widow Elizabeth Gardner aged 85, sister of the Hon. Timothy Pickering of this town — a lady not less venerated for her virtue, than for her years."

The following is an abstract of her will. It was made Oct. 21, 1816, and proved Nov. 18, 1823: —

I Elizabeth Gardner give to John Lowell Gardner and George Gardner, children of my son Samuel Pickering Gardner all my real estate in the town of Salem consisting of about one hundred and eleven acres of pasture, being the same which belonged to my late brother John Pickering deceased, to be equally divided between them.

To my grandson Henry Blanchard \$400, but if he should die before me, and without issue, I then give the same to my son Samuel Pickering Gardner.

To Eliza Cabot Blanchard, daughter of my late grandson, Francis Blanchard, the feather bed I have marked with the initials of her name.

To my son Samuel Pickering Gardner all the rest of my estate, and I appoint him my executor.<sup>1</sup>

53. V. 20. *John Gardner*, her husband, born in Danvers, Mass., died in Wenham, Mass. A merchant. Residence: Salem, later Wenham.

Mr. Gardner went to sea in early life, and was master of a vessel in the West India trade for several years.<sup>2</sup> During the Revolutionary War he was interested in privateers, and some of his ships were captured by Admiral Rodney, at St. Eustatia.<sup>3</sup>

In 1778 he removed from Salem to Wenham. He is said to have been a person of a very mild temper, and is spoken of by Colonel Timothy Pickering as a very kind-hearted man.

His first wife, whom he married June 25, 1754, was Mary Gale of Marblehead. She died May 24, 1755, aged 27 years, leaving no children.

Mr. Gardner died of apoplexy on rising from the dinner-table. His will

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 402, pp. 279-281; files, No. 10,612.

<sup>2</sup> The Gardner Family Records.

<sup>3</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Octavius Pickering, Vol. I. p. 289.

was made Jan. 21, 1794, and proved Nov. 6, 1805.<sup>1</sup> He left his wife Elizabeth his real estate, and the interest of his personal property during her life. The real estate in Wenham, Hamilton, and Ipswich, and brick house in Salem, after his wife's life estate, to the children of his daughter Elizabeth Blanchard, who was to have the improvement of it during her life. If the children should die without issue, then the whole to go to his heirs. His son Samuel Gardner, who was his executor, to have the remainder of the estate.

Mr. Gardner was a son of John and Elizabeth (Putnam) Gardner. *Samuel Gardner* [3-5. V. 3] was his uncle, and *Charles Lemon* [36. VIII. 345] was his nephew. His father was captain of a company of horse, and was frequently a representative to the General Court from Salem. He owned a farm between Salem and Marblehead where he lived many years. He was born in a house which stood where the Salem Museum now stands, part of which land descended to Samuel P. Gardner, his grandson, and was sold by him to the Museum.<sup>2</sup> The ancestry of John Gardner includes the following families: Gardner, Frier, Orne, Browne, Weld, Clap, Mitchelson, Bushell, Putnam, Prince. SEE ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{15}$ .

54. V. 21. **John Pickering** [Timothy 48-59. IV. 9], born in Salem, baptized there March 2, 1739-40, died in Salem. Residence: Salem.

John Pickering, H. C. 1759, inherited the family homestead, and devoted himself to agricultural pursuits. He lived in the old Pickering house, and his sister, Mrs. Gooll, kept house for him.

Most of his life was spent in the public service. He was sent to the General Court as a representative from Salem every year from 1769 to 1780, with the single exception of 1775; and for several years, he was Speaker of the House. March 13, 1775, he was chosen upon the Committee of Safety, which consisted of thirty of the most prominent and patriotic citizens of Salem, among whom were his brother, Colonel Timothy Pickering, and his brothers-in-law, George Williams and Israel Dodge. In 1777, he was chosen Register of Deeds for Essex County; and he continued to hold this office, by successive elections, till 1806, when his infirmities obliged

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Record, Vol. 373, p. 227; files, 10,635.

<sup>2</sup> The Gardner Family Records.

him to retire. In 1782, he was town treasurer. He was also a justice of the peace and a judge of the Court of Common Pleas.

He took the office of Register of Deeds when his brother Timothy went into the army, intending to give it back to him on his return; but he got accustomed to the work, and Timothy thought he ought not to take the place from him, though John would have been glad to yield. John was supposed to have been fatally sick in 1786, and in case of his death Timothy would have taken the place. Some one else proposed to canvass for the position, which made John so angry that he announced himself as a candidate for re-election, and got well.<sup>1</sup>

The following obituary notice of him appeared in the Salem Gazette of Aug. 23, 1811:—

“In this town, Hon. JOHN PICKERING aged 71. This gentleman has been an able and faithful servant to the public through his whole life. In the early part of the revolution he represented this town in the General Court, and for several sessions filled the Speaker’s chair. He was many years a Judge in the Court of Common Pleas, which situation he declined, as the infirmities of age, and the duties of another office pressed upon him. The records of the office of Register of Deeds for upwards of twenty years will testify to his uncommon accuracy, care and punctuality. This office he held till his increased infirmities obliged him to resign it; and no man’s interest ever suffered through his neglect in the performance of its duties.”

The following account of him is from the life of his nephew John Pickering, who was a member of his family while his education was in progress:—

“Much might be said of the private and domestic virtues of the excellent man, who though unmarried himself, was for many years the respected and beloved head of the family in the Pickering mansion.

“By his careful management in agricultural pursuits which the family estate required, and by his untiring industry in the office which he held for many years, he was enabled with a limited income, to exercise a generous hospitality, and to gratify his own affectionate desires in caring and providing for the members of his family circle.”<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. II. pp. 182–189. Also Vol. I. pp. 34, 139, Vol. IV. pp. 24, 213–216, and Salem Town Records.

<sup>2</sup> Life of John Pickering, by his daughter, Mary Orne Pickering, p. 246.

Judge Pickering was one of the original members of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences.

Administration on the estate of John Pickering, late of Salem, Esquire, was granted Sept. 2, 1811, to John Pickering, Esquire, who gave bond with Timothy Pickering, Esquire, and Samuel Putnam, Esquire, as sureties.<sup>1</sup>

He was buried in the Broadstreet Burial Ground. His gravestone bears the following inscription :—

JOHN PICKERING, ESQ.  
BORN Mar. II. MDCCXL.  
DIED Aug. XX. MDCCCXI

54-55. V. 22. Lois Pickering [Timothy 48-59. IV. 9], born in Salem, baptized there April 25, 1742, died in Salem.<sup>2</sup> Residence: Salem.

Mrs. Goolll was admitted to membership in the First Church, Salem, Jan. 7, 1773. After the death of her husband, she and her daughter went to live in the old homestead with her father; and she continued to live there with her brother John, into whose hands it had passed at Deacon Timothy Pickering's death. By a deed dated Aug. 16, 1803, her brother John conveyed the house and land adjoining to her for her natural life, with reversion to his nephew, John Pickering.<sup>3</sup>

She was a twin of her sister Eunice Pickering. Her gravestone, bearing the following inscription, is still standing in the Broad Street Graveyard :

Mrs. LOIS GOOLL,  
Ob. 4. Feb. 1815,  
Æt. LXXII  
She was the widow of  
Mr. JOHN GOOLL,  
who died at St Christophers  
Mar. 23, 1776,  
And daughter of  
MARY AND TIMOTHY  
PICKERING DEC'D

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 381, p. 168; files, No. 21,815.

<sup>2</sup> The Gardner Family Records, Upham, and her gravestone, give Feb. 4, 1815, as the date of her death. Mrs. M. L. Putnam states that she died Feb. 6, 1815, at the age of 72. Dr. Prince, in Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. IX. p. 102, says that she died in Salem, Feb. 15, 1815, at the age of 70. Dr. Henry Wheatland states that she died in 1816.

<sup>3</sup> Essex County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 132, pp. 152-153, and The Life of Timothy Pickering, by C. W. Upham, Vol. IV. p. 215.

54-55. V. 22. *John Gool*, the husband of Lois Pickering, born in Scotland, died in the Island of St. Christopher, W. I.<sup>1</sup> A merchant. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Gool came to Salem from Paisley, Scotland, and was called a Scotch merchant.

Their marriage is thus chronicled in the *Essex Gazette*: —

“Mr. John Gool, Merchant to Miss Louisa Pickering, Daughter of Deacon Pickering of this Town.”

Administration on his estate was granted to his widow Lois, Oct. 7, 1776. The inventory amounted to £3834 17s. 9½d. lawful money.<sup>2</sup>

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{18}$ .

56-57. V. 23. *Eunice Pickering* [Timothy 48-59. IV. 9], born in Salem, baptized there April 25, 1742, died in Stratham, N. H.<sup>3</sup>

Mrs. Wingate was the twin of Lois Pickering [54-55. V. 22]. She lived to be nearly 101 years old. The following account of the celebration of her one hundredth birthday is from the *Wingate Genealogy*: —

“When Mrs. Wingate had attained one hundred years of age the venerable lady entertained her family and friends at a birthday party, and on the occasion wore the same dress in which she had been married. Only the high heeled shoes of her apparel seemed much out of the prevailing fashion of the time (1842).”<sup>4</sup>

In answer to a letter asking information concerning Mrs. Wingate, the following was received from her granddaughter, Mrs. Anna H. Gilbert of Ipswich, dated May 30, 1892: —

<sup>1</sup> The gravestone of his wife. See page 125.

<sup>2</sup> *Essex County Probate Records*, Vol. 352, pp. 144, 465-469; files, No. 11,389.

<sup>3</sup> There is a difference of opinion as to the date of her death. The *Exeter News Letter* of Jan. 17, 1843, states that she died on Saturday, Jan. 4, aged 100 years, 8 months, and 14 days. This same notice appears in the *Salem Gazette* of Jan. 23, 1843, and in the *New Hampshire Gazette* of Portsmouth, N. H., of Jan. 24, 1843 — probably copied from the *News Letter*. Six Boston papers of Jan. 18 and 19, 1843, give this date as Jan. 7, 1843, as do *Allen's Biographical Dictionary* and the gravestone. The 7th of January is probably the right date, as this day fell on Saturday. The *Nichols Family Records* give this date as Jan. 16, and the *Gardner Family Records* as Jan. 14, while the town clerk of Stratham, N. H., writes that he cannot find any record of her death in the *Town Records*. With a few exceptions, her age is given as 100 years, 8 months, 14 days.

<sup>4</sup> *History of the Wingate Family*, by C. E. L. Wingate, p. 90, note.

"We have no portrait or letters of my grandmother Eunice (Pickering) Wingate, but I have her name as she wrote it for me the day she was one hundred years and eight months old. I wanted her autograph for a friend, she not wishing it given away, closed her eyes and wrote it for me. I think that is the only specimen of her penmanship she left, and *that* I value very much.

"I had the care of our grandmother in her last days and probably knew her better than did any other grandchild. She was a wonderful woman, enjoyed life better than most people do at half her age.

"The Thanksgiving after her hundredth birth-day she wished to have as many of the family as possible dine with her. Fearing the company would tire her too much, I persuaded her to stay in her chamber until dinner was ready; then I asked her if I should assist her over the stairs. Her reply was 'no child, when I cannot come down without help I shall not come any more,' and she continued to come to her meals without assistance until a few days of her death."

Her grandniece, Mrs. Thomas Donaldson, gives the following description of her:—

"She was rather short and thin, tolerably active and vivacious, quick in speech, passing from one subject to another with great volubility. She had a tea party of fifty people on her hundredth birthday, and poured the tea herself."

In 1836 the Hon. Robert C. Winthrop visited Paine Wingate, who had entered his 99th year, and found him in bed. In relating the incidents of that visit, he says of Mrs. Wingate:—

". . . She was in her ninety-fifth year when I made the visit to Stratham, and was moving about with great activity showing off her husband as a wonder, and seemingly unconscious that she was really the greater wonder of the two."<sup>1</sup>

The following entry is made in the Journal kept by Deacon Samuel Lane of Stratham, N. H., now in possession of his great-grandson, Mr. Henry S. Lane of Stratham:—

"Aug. 5, 1780. Awful night of thunder & lightning—fell on Mr. Wingate's house."

An incident of this storm is given by Mrs. Wingate's grandson:—

"At the time of this thunder storm in August 1780 my grandmother was sitting by the north window of the west front room. By her side was Mrs. Rogers, grand-

<sup>1</sup> Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society, Second Series, Vol. IV. pp. 303-305.

mother of Jacob C. Rogers now of Lowell. The lightning melted one of the shoe buckles of Mrs. Roger's shoe, but did not injure her at all. That my grandmother, two months before my father's birth did not suffer any ill effect, shows at least that she was not a nervous woman." <sup>1</sup>

Many New England newspapers announced the death of Mrs. Wingate, but in none of them have we found an obituary notice of her. Her gravestone, which is still standing in the Stratham graveyard, is thus inscribed:—

EUNICE  
Relict of  
HON PAINE WINGATE  
Died Jan. 7, 1843  
Aged 100 years.

56-57. V. 23. *Paine Wingate*, the husband of Eunice Pickering, born in Amesbury, Mass., died in Stratham, N. H.<sup>2</sup> A minister. Residence: Stratham.

Mr. Wingate, H. C. 1759, studied for the ministry, and was settled over the First Congregational Church at Hampton Falls, N. H.<sup>3</sup> He was ordained Dec. 14, 1763, and resigned his charge March 12, 1776. For about four years previous to his resignation, he was not actively engaged in preaching, on account of the opposition of some of his parishioners, who objected to the doctrines which he preached, and to the salary (£55) which was paid to him. It would seem that his parishioners were mainly at fault, for the dissensions among them continued even after Mr. Wingate's resignation.

On Dec. 4, 1773, he bought a farm in the adjoining town of Stratham, of the heirs of his brother-in-law, the Rev. Dudley Leavitt, for which he paid £458 lawful money. The following description of his house is con-

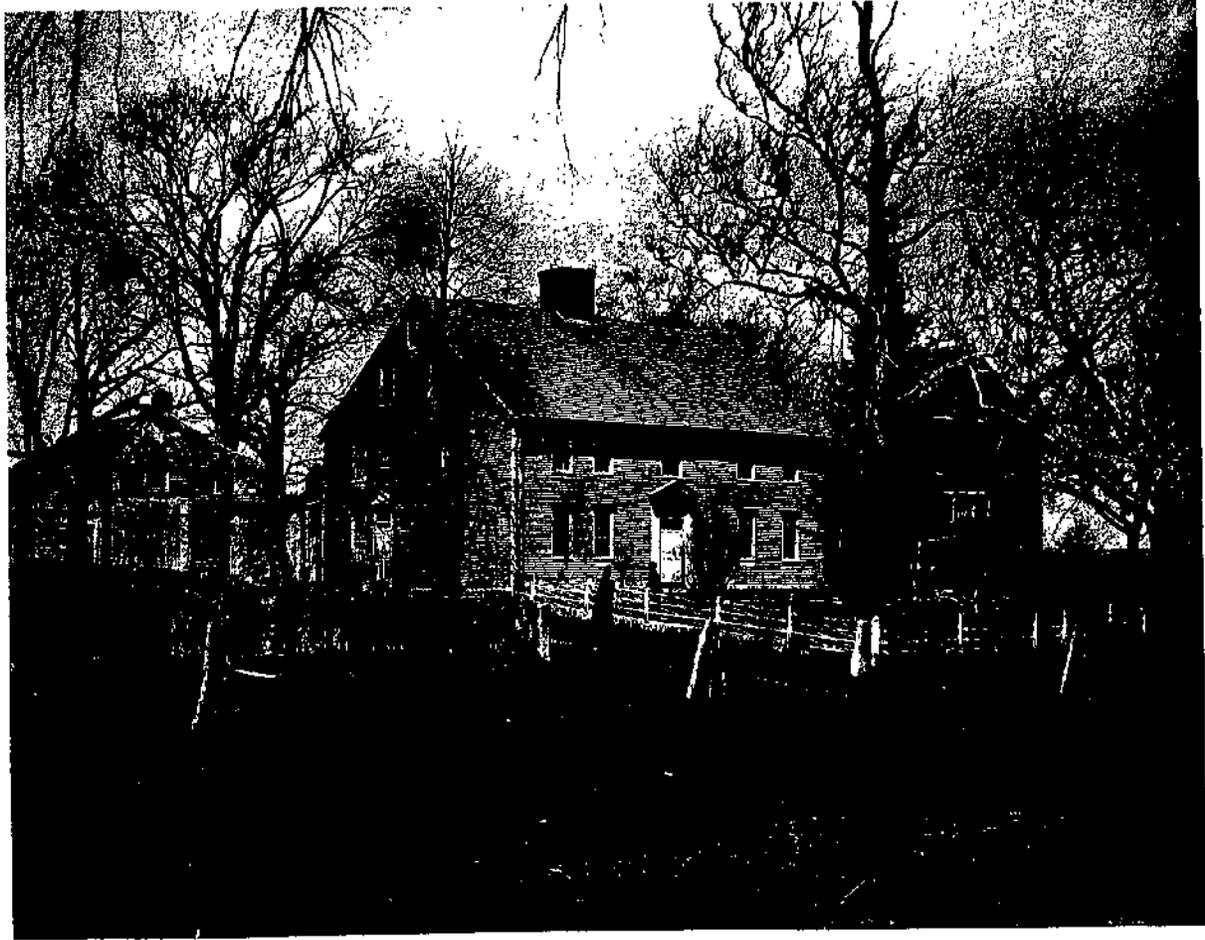
<sup>1</sup> Letter of J. C. A. Wingate, dated Oct. 10, 1894.

<sup>2</sup> Authorities differ as to the date of his birth. He himself, in a letter to John Pickering, dated Aug. 15, 1830, says that he was born in "1738, May 14 Julian style." Other authorities give the date as follows: Salem Register, May 11, 1739; Colonel Timothy Pickering, May 14, 1739, O. S.; Town Records of Amesbury, J. Wingate Thornton, Wingate Genealogy, the Nichols Family Records, Upham's Life of Timothy Pickering, and "The New Hampshire Churches," May 14, 1739; Francis H. Lee, May 23, 1739; Journal of Deacon Samuel Lane of Stratham, N. H., May 25, 1739; and the Gardner Family Records, May 27, 1740.

<sup>3</sup> History of the Wingate Family, by C. E. L. Wingate, p. 65.

THE HOUSE OF PAINE WINGATE AT STRATHAM, N.H.

[56-57. V. 23.]



tained in a letter received from his grandson, Joseph C. A. Wingate, dated at Stratham, N. H., April 1, 1892:—

“Paine Wingate moved into the house in March 1776. The house was then a leanto. Mr. Wingate put a second story on the back side, and made other general repairs in 1780. It is now essentially what he then made it. It was never one of the best sort of old houses, but was every way what it continues to be, a respectable farmhouse. Paine Wingate was fond of company and many eminent guests were entertained by him in the house. Washington *did not* come into the house when he passed through the town, but his carriage stopped in front of it; the family were presented to him, and he drank a glass of wine with Mr. Wingate.”

It continued in the possession of the male line of Mr. Wingate's descendants till Dec. 30, 1894, the last owner having been his grandson, Joseph C. A. Wingate. On that date it was burned flat to the ground, and the greater part of its contents were destroyed, including old furniture, and chests of books; but many heirlooms and relics of the Revolutionary era were saved. A full account of the burning of the house was published in the Exeter, N. H., News-Letter of Jan. 4, 1895. A heliotype of the house is here given.

From the following advertisement of this estate, which appeared in the Essex Gazette of Oct. 22-29, 1771, we get a very good idea of the farm:

“To be SOLD

“A FARM, lying in Stratham, in the Province of New Hampshire, distant eleven Miles from Portsmouth and four Miles from Exeter. It contains 150 Acres of mowing, tillage and pasture Land with several Acres of Salt-Marsh, has a fine Growth of young Wood upon it an Orchard and a large Dwelling-House and Barn. This farm is situate on the County Road, and extends as far as Exeter River, is within 40 Rods of the Meeting-House and within half a Mile of a Saw-Mill and Grist-Mill

“Also a FARM in Brentwood (seven Miles from the former) containing about sixty Acres of wood pasture and tillage Land.”

Mr. Wingate preached occasionally at Stratham; but, in a few years, the stirring events of the times called him to public duties. In May, 1775, he had been one of two deputies chosen to represent Hampton Falls at the Fourth Provincial Congress, held at Exeter. In June, 1781, he was one of the leading members of a convention held at Concord. In 1783, and in 1795, he represented Stratham in the Legislature. In 1785, the people of

Stratham sent a petition to the Governor and Council asking that he be appointed to the office of a Justice of the Peace. He also served the town of Stratham in various other capacities, such as moderator, assessor, and auditor.<sup>1</sup> In 1787 he was sent as a representative to Congress under the Confederation, and served until the adoption of the Constitution of the United States, when he and John Langdon were elected senators to represent New Hampshire in the first Federal Congress. At the expiration of his term, he was immediately elected to the National House of Representatives, where he served from 1793 to 1795. In 1795, he represented Stratham in the State Legislature, and in 1798, he was appointed a judge of the Superior Court of New Hampshire, which position he held till 1809.

Not having been educated in the law, he was not a perfect master of the technicalities of the profession or its practice; but he was directed by that plain common-sense and sound judgment which generally led, and perhaps by a shorter road, to the same conclusions which, with professionally educated judges, were the result of learned investigation and unwearied labor.

Few men have gone through life more blamelessly, more usefully, and more universally beloved and respected than Judge Wingate.

From the following story told by his grandniece, Mrs. Nathaniel Silsbee, who heard it from her mother, it would appear that Judge Wingate was quick to see the comical side of life. Paine Wingate had a habit of laughing in the pulpit. It was the custom to bring a lunch to church for the noon intermission. A dog got into church, and put his head into a pitcher which contained food, and could not get it out again, and ran about the church with his head in it, at which Mr. Wingate laughed immoderately. He never went into the pulpit after that.

Mr. Wingate lived to a great age, and survived all the other members of the United States Senate who took their seats with him when the Senate was first organized. He also survived every judge who had been a member of the Superior Court at the time of his own appointment, excepting Judge Farrar of New Ipswich. For fifteen years, he was the only survivor of

<sup>1</sup> History of the Wingate Family, by C. E. L. Wingate, pp. 71-86.

his college class, and, for several years, he was the oldest living graduate of Harvard.<sup>1</sup>

The following remarkable letter, which he wrote to his nephew, Hon. John Pickering, was printed in substance in the *Boston Sentinel* of Commencement Day, Aug. 27, 1830.

"STRATHAM, N. H., Aug. 15, 1830.

"DEAR SIR,—Believing that you have the curiosity to notice incidents that are unusual, although they may appear to be trivial, I am induced to communicate to you the following note, which you will make use of as you see fit. Paine Wingate of Stratham, N. H., was born in 1738, May 14, Julian style. He entered Cambridge College at Commencement 1755, in the Freshman Class, when he stood last or lowest in the Class, placed alphabetically as the custom then was. Of course he was junior in grade to every member of the College, until the class was 'placed' in the succeeding part of the year. In the year 1830, when the Catalogue of that University was published, he was the Senior, or first in the Catalogue then living, having in the course of seventy-five years passed through the various grades from the lowest to the highest of all the members of that University,—a circumstance which I conclude has not happened to any one other since the origin of the College, and probably will not occur again in many centuries. If Mr. Bowditch should think it an incident worth calculating, I think he may find data in the Catalogue and other sources to form a tolerable correct calculation when a similar event may happen again. The facts above stated may be relied upon as correct, from the hand of Paine Wingate *ætat* ninety-two. From your very affectionate uncle

"PAINE WINGATE.

"This I expect is the last you will ever receive from me  
"HON. JOHN PICKERING."<sup>2</sup>

Judge Wingate lived nearly seven years after the date of this letter. He was a good scholar and a man of extensive reading. As a legislator he was dignified, safe, and judicious; as a judge his aim was to administer justice according to law, without favor, affection, partiality, or prejudice.<sup>3</sup>

The following is an abstract of Paine Wingate's will. It was dated Jan. 26, 1811, and the codicil attached to it was dated Oct. 1, 1830. It was proved March 21, 1838.

<sup>1</sup> Obituary of Mr. Wingate in the *Exeter News-Letter* of March 13, 1838.

<sup>2</sup> *Life of John Pickering*, by Mary Orne Pickering, p. 374.

<sup>3</sup> *History of the Wingate Family*, by C. E. L. Wingate; *The New Hampshire Churches*, by J. C. W., and an obituary in the *Exeter News-Letter* of March 13, 1838.

To my wife Eunice I give my household furniture except such articles which are otherwise disposed of. I also will that she shall enjoy her legal right of dower in my buildings and land in Stratham, and I also give her five hundred dollars.

To my eldest daughter Mary Wiggin, in addition to what I have already given her, three shares in the New Hampshire Bank, and eight shares in the Stratham and New Market Bridge.

To my daughter Elizabeth Wingate, a right to one chamber in my house, and the right to use the other parts occasionally as shall be necessary, so long as she remains unmarried; also five hundred dollars in money; also a note of hand against Andrew Wiggin, Esq. for eight hundred dollars, and a silver porringer marked E. W., and one feather bed and bedding; also thirty shares in the Exeter Bank.

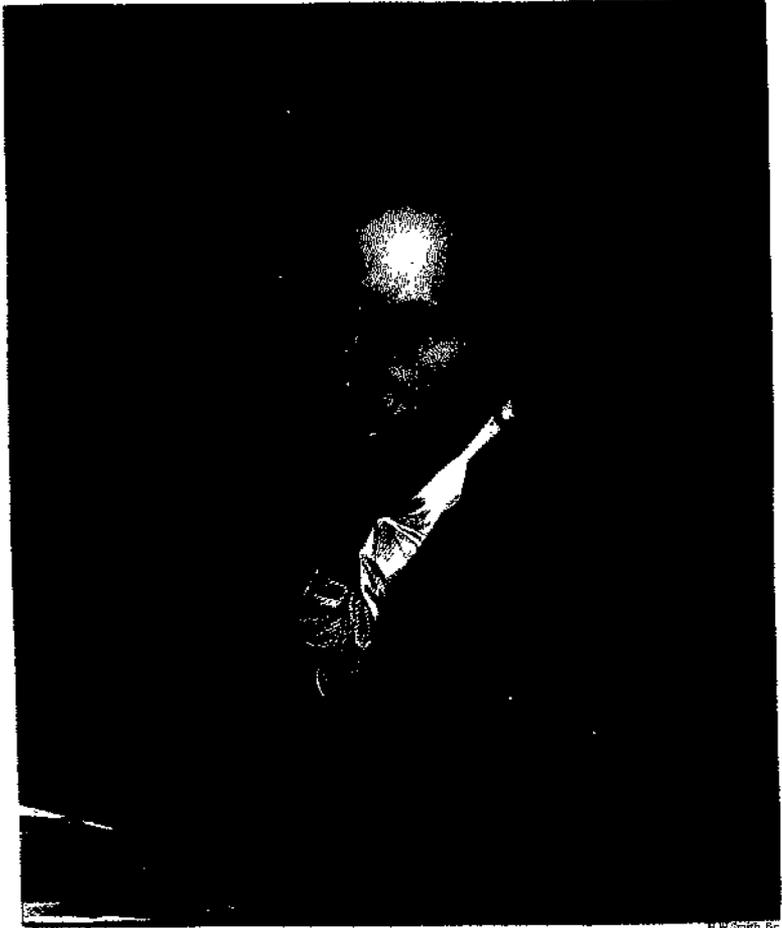
To my eldest son George Wingate in addition to what I have already given him, my clock, gun, small writing desk and manuscripts, and any articles of household furniture, or husbandry utensils, which he made, or bought with his own money.

To my youngest son John Wingate, in addition to what I have already given him, all my farm lands in Stratham, subject to my wife's dower, and the rights reserved to my daughter Elizabeth in the house; also my clock which I bought of Daniel Balch, my maple desk and book-case, and all household furniture and husbandry implements which he made, or purchased with his own money. The residue I give to be divided equally between my sons George and John, and said George and John I appoint the executors of my will.

My daughter Elizabeth having died since my will was made, I will that what I gave her shall be revoked, and whereas my wife is so far advanced in age as to be unable to manage her worldly affairs without more or less burden, I will that my executors shall provide for her during her natural life, suitably for one in her station in life, this to be instead of the five hundred dollars given to her in my will, and instead of what she was to receive for her property sold in Salem. The other part of my legacy to her to remain as in my will. The farm lands, given to my son John, are to be held by him during his natural life, and at his death to be given to his sons. I also give to my three children Mary Wiggin, George Wingate, and John Wingate, a note of hand which I hold against Col. John Rodgers, and Col. Nathaniel Gilman, for thirteen hundred and seventy-five dollars and interest which was originally given for property sold belonging to my wife

To my son George Wingate, in addition to what I have before given him, my mahogany desk, and a silver tankard which I have bought since I made my will

To my daughter Mary Wiggin a silver can which I bought of my niece Abigail Day and which was originally my mothers. To my two sons George Wingate, and John Wingate, two shares in the Exeter Manufacturing Company, also thirty shares in the Exeter Bank.



Stuart Faxon

H. W. Smith & Co.

*Timothy Pickens.*

Alt 63

TIMOTHY PICKERING.

[58. V. 24.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY GILBERT STUART, PAINTED IN SEPTEMBER, 1808,  
NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF ROBERT M. PRATT, ESQ., OF BOSTON.

Judge Wingate was a son of Paine and Mary (Balch) Wingate. He and his wife were first cousins. His ancestry includes the following families: Wingate, Taylor, Lunt, Balch, Gardner, Frier, Fairfield, Skipperway. See ANCESTRY TABLES <sup>V</sup><sub>17</sub>.

58. V. 24. **Timothy Pickering** [Timothy, 48-59. IV. 9], born in Salem, died in Salem. Residence: Salem.

Colonel Pickering, H. C. 1763, was brought up under the severe moral code of the time, but as a young man he discarded the more rigid tenets of his father, although his early education had a marked influence on his life. After leaving college, he became clerk in the office of John Higginson, Register of Deeds for the County of Essex. Here he remained two years, and he filled this office afterward at various times until 1774.

In 1766, he was commissioned lieutenant of the Fourth military company of Salem, and, in 1769, he was appointed its captain. He took great interest in military training, and in bringing the militia to a good standard of discipline. He also sent two articles to the newspaper on these subjects, signed "A Military Citizen." In December, 1768, he was admitted to the bar as an attorney-at-law; but he practised little, and attained no distinction as an advocate, as the various claims upon his time prevented him from being a well-read lawyer, a distinction to which he made no claim. He was a selectman of Salem in 1772, and for the five following years, and served as a town clerk in 1774, 1775, and 1776. On May 18, 1773, he was chosen one of a committee of five to consider a communication from Boston concerning "the rights of the colonists." The report of this committee asserting the right of towns in their corporate capacity to meet and try to obtain a redress of their grievances, was published in the Essex Gazette of June 6 and 15, 1773. On June 11, 1773, the selectmen of Salem were directed to act as a committee of correspondence till a special committee was appointed. On the seventeenth of May, 1774, such a committee was chosen, consisting of nine persons, of which Colonel Pickering was one. On the thirteenth of March, 1775, thirty persons were chosen as a Committee of Safety. Colonel Pickering was also on this committee, as were his brother John Pickering, and his brothers-

in-law George Williams and Israel Dodge. On this same thirteenth of March, 1775, Colonel Pickering and four others were made a committee on minute-men, and the mounting of field-pieces. On the sixteenth of October of the same year, he was the first one nominated on a Committee of Safety and Correspondence. In March, 1776, he was appointed chairman of the Committee of Correspondence, Inspection, and Safety, which consisted of fifteen persons.

He was the author of the address from the inhabitants of Salem to General Gage on the Boston Port Bill,—an address that was highly praised in an article supposed to have been written by Edmund Burke.

In October, 1774, Colonel Pickering was elected Register of Deeds of Essex County to fill the vacancy caused by the death of John Higginson. He held this office till May, 1777, when he resigned to fill the office of Adjutant-General of the United States Army. He was succeeded as Register of Deeds by his brother John.

In September, 1775, he was commissioned a justice of the peace, and in the same autumn, he was appointed a justice of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas for Essex County. On the twelfth of December, 1775, he was commissioned and sworn as the sole judge of the Maritime Court for the counties of Suffolk, Essex, and Middlesex. This was an office of high responsibility, for, as a great many privateers were fitted out by merchants and others, property to a large amount was frequently in question.

In the year 1775, Colonel Pickering published a duodecimo volume of about one hundred and fifty pages, with copper-plate engravings, entitled "An easy Plan of Discipline for a Militia." It was not a mere compilation, but a work containing many suggestions, the results of his own observation and reflections. By a Resolve of the Council and the House of Representatives of Massachusetts Bay, of May 1, 1776, it was ordered that this "Plan of Discipline" should, for the future, be used and practised by the militia of the Colony. The work passed to a second edition, and, as late as 1799, General Hoyt of Deerfield, who had written a treatise for the instruction of the militia of Massachusetts, on sending to Colonel Pickering a copy of the treatise, expressed his indebtedness to Colonel Pickering's work in the preparation of his own. The "Plan of Discipline" was superseded

by the work afterward published by Baron Steuben, "Regulations for the Infantry of the United States," and Colonel Pickering superintended the publication of the first edition of this new work, and bestowed a great deal of pains on it, that it might be brought out as accurately as possible.

On February 13, 1775, he was elected Colonel of the First Regiment of Essex County Militia, and received his commission from the royal government. He held this office for some time after he had joined the army of the United States in 1777. It is generally understood that he was present at the North Bridge when Colonel Leslie attempted to capture the cannon that were stored in the North Field, Salem; and the accounts of the affair printed in the Essex Gazette have been attributed to him.

April 19, 1775, he led his regiment to assist the colonists on that eventful day, but arrived too late. The affray at Lexington had already taken place, and the British were on their return to Boston when Colonel Pickering and his men reached Medford. Colonel Pickering's behavior on this occasion has been the subject of adverse criticism, but a careful inquiry into the facts of the case show clearly that his conduct was all that could be desired from a brave and careful officer. Dec. 5, 1776, he collected a regiment of seven hundred men who marched under his command, and went through the campaign in New York and New Jersey. The campaign ended April 1, 1777.

Colonel Pickering's reputation, and his frequent visits at headquarters, made so favorable an impression on General Washington that he wrote him an urgent letter, dated March 30, 1777, offering him the post of Adjutant-General, which he declined at first, but afterwards accepted. In reference to this appointment General Washington says in his letter to the President of the Congress:—

"This conduct, in preference of Col. Pickering, I was induced to adopt from the high character I had of him, both as a great military genius cultivated by an industrious attention to the study of war, and as a gentleman of liberal education, distinguished zeal, and great method and activity in business."<sup>1</sup>

Colonel Pickering left Salem on the second of June, 1777, arriving at headquarters on the seventeenth. The next day his appointment as Adjutant-

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Octavius Pickering, Vol. I. p. 135.

General was announced by a general order issued at headquarters. His position as a member of General Washington's military family, he wrote, was a happy one, but one of unremitting toil owing to the arduous character of his duties.

The Continental Board of War, previous to Oct. 17, 1777, consisted of members of Congress. On that date, the War Office was remodelled, and it was resolved that three persons, who were not members of Congress, should constitute the Board. Their powers and duties were many and very important, and corresponded in general to those of a Secretary of War. On the seventh of November, 1777, Colonel Pickering was elected one of the members of this Board, but he continued to perform the duties of Adjutant-General until the thirteenth of the following January.

On the tenth and twelfth of January, 1778, he was chosen by Congress on a committee to go to General Washington's headquarters and concert with him a reform in the arrangement of the army; but on the twentieth it was resolved that the members of the Board of War should be excused from attending on that business.

On Jan. 20, 1780, he was appointed one of three commissioners to inquire into the expenses of the Staff department and the means of retrenching the same. The plan for conducting the Quartermaster's department, as revised by these commissioners, was adopted by Congress on the fifteenth of July of the same year. General Greene, who was, at that time, Quartermaster-General, was so much dissatisfied with the new arrangement, that he resigned his office. It was now necessary to find some one else to fill this position, — a position surrounded by such difficulties, that even General Greene, with his brilliant talents and indomitable energy and industry, was unwilling to encounter them. Colonel Pickering was asked by Roger Sherman, a member of Congress, if he would accept the office; and on Aug. 5, 1780, Congress unanimously elected him to fill the vacancy. By a resolve of Congress, he was to continue to be a member of the Board of War, but his power and pay were suspended as long as he was Quartermaster-General. He was to have the rank of colonel, and the pay and rations of a brigadier-general. He continued to hold this position until July 25, 1785, when the office was abolished.

Having been engaged in public affairs from the beginning of the dispute with Great Britain, and in the service of the United States since November, 1776, and having been prevented from paying the smallest attention to his private concerns, he began, in the year 1782, to think of looking about for some means of support. Oppressed with the labors and perplexities of his office he writes to his wife, on Sept. 6, 1782, as follows : —

“ This war once over I shall wish to abandon forever all public employments. To mark the progress of my growing trees, the increasing culture of my land, to reap the fruits of my own labor, to enjoy them with you and our smiling offspring, will yield more solid joys than the highest offices, than the most splendid titles, or than princely incomes.”<sup>1</sup>

To his brother he writes : —

“ Yet many times the trials of my patience are so severe, the difficulties and vexations I am obliged often to encounter are so intolerable that I am frequently on the point of resolving to quit an office so burdensome, and a service so ungrateful. No personal considerations would indeed tempt me to continue. My greatest source of relief is in the prospect of a speedy termination of the war.”

General Washington, having received from a committee of Congress a letter asking his opinion on military establishments proper to be adopted by the United States on the conclusion of the war, requested some of the principal officers of the army, and among them Colonel Pickering, to give him their opinions upon the subject. Colonel Pickering, in his report, suggests establishing a military seminary at West Point.

Upon the organization of the society of the Cincinnati, on May 13, 1783, Colonel Pickering became a member. His diploma, however, is dated Oct. 31, 1785. He originally joined the Pennsylvania Society, but subsequently became a member of the Massachusetts Society by right of residence.<sup>2</sup> The succession has continued directly in the male line of the Pickering family, the present incumbent being Colonel Pickering's great-grandson, Mr. John Pickering of Salem.

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Octavius Pickering, Vol. I. p. 374.

<sup>2</sup> Memorials of the Massachusetts Society of the Cincinnati, edited by James M. Bugbee, p. 393.

Nov. 15, 1783, Colonel Pickering was one of a committee to present the address to General Washington in reply to his Farewell Address. This reply was probably written by the Colonel himself.

Colonel Pickering had been looking forward with the return of peace to engaging in some commercial business, the public service not furnishing sufficient maintenance for his growing family. Soon after the arrival of the news that peace had been made with Great Britain, he proceeded to carry into effect his long contemplated plan of going into business as a merchant. He therefore entered into a co-partnership with Major Samuel Hodgdon, the articles of agreement being dated May 10, 1783. By these it was agreed that the partnership should continue for two years, under the firm name of Pickering & Hodgdon; but, as it proved, the connection was continued much longer. The business, however, did not answer Colonel Pickering's expectations, as it did not yield him an income sufficient for the support of his family. His tastes and characteristics did not adapt him to a life of trade. He had always preferred agriculture to any other pursuit. He was devoted to its study and interests, and no private business or public employment could exclude it from his thoughts or divert his attention from it. He read all he could find in print on the subject; and it occupied a large space in his voluminous correspondence. His agricultural knowledge and judgment were recognized by all. He was a practical as well as a scientific farmer, and was especially distinguished as a ploughman. When he was over seventy-five years of age, in competitive trials with the farmers of Essex County, he bore off the first premium at a ploughing match. With such tastes, it was natural for him to turn his attention to the vast tracts of unimproved lands that were open to settlement in the West. His circumstances at this time (1786) compelled him to take decisive steps in some direction. He was then over forty years of age, and had a large and growing family which was dependent upon him for support. In company with others, he bought large tracts of wild lands. Some of these lands lay in the new county of Luzerne, Pennsylvania, and in October, 1786, he was appointed to a number of the county offices, namely, Judge and Clerk of the Court of Common Pleas, Clerk of the Court of Sessions, and Clerk of the Orphan's Court.

He was now to be a settler in the wilderness, a backwoodsman; and it became his whole ambition to restore peace and quiet among rude men who had been wrangling and fighting for more than thirty years.

On the afternoon of July 10, 1787, Colonel Pickering and his family set out from Philadelphia for their new home at Wyoming. The party consisted of the Colonel, his wife, and their four boys, — Timothy, Henry, Charles, and William, — together with Miss Elizabeth White, his wife's sister, besides a number of servants, and men hired to work on the farm. The Colonel's son John was with his uncle in Salem. After a journey attended with much hardship and many trials, the party reached Wyoming. Colonel Pickering at once busied himself with bringing his land into good condition, and attending to his public duties. He devoted himself to the administration of the law, and attempted to establish peace and order. But his life here was not to be a quiet one. The Pennsylvania Commissioners were so strict in their application of the law, that they brought down upon themselves the wrath of the settlers, and were obliged to flee. One of the leaders in the uprising was arrested by the aid of Colonel Pickering, and, from this circumstance, the Colonel became an object of popular indignation. He was compelled to leave his home, and was finally obliged to seek safety at Philadelphia. Here he remained till January, 1788. In November, 1787, he was appointed delegate from Luzerne County to the Convention to ratify the United States Constitution. Against his wife's wishes, he ventured to return to Wyoming. She feared that the feeling of bitterness toward him in Luzerne County had not sufficiently subsided. Her fears proved to be too well founded. On the night of June 26, 1788, he was awakened by a masked band, who entered the house, bound him, and carried him off. Their purpose in abducting him was to obtain the release of Franklin, the leader of the insurgents who had driven away the commissioners. Colonel Pickering was in captivity nineteen days, and for most of this time he was well treated. Those of his abductors who had not fled the county were arrested, tried, convicted, and sentenced to fine and imprisonment. But as they had committed no outrage upon his person, they were all discharged or suffered to escape, after they had been shut up in jail for a time. Peace being at last established in his county, and

health in his household, he was now able to devote himself to his favorite pursuit of husbandry.

Before he had settled at Wyoming, he had intended to go elsewhere to establish a home for himself and his family, and had disposed of his available means in purchasing twelve thousand acres of new land in Western Pennsylvania. Besides this, he had bought, in company with Major Hodgdon, two thousand five hundred acres of land situated eighteen miles above Wyoming, and five thousand acres on the south side of the Ohio River, about three miles from Marietta in what was then Western Virginia and is now Kentucky. As settlement had not yet reached these lands, they remained unsalable, and this was the source of some pecuniary embarrassment to Colonel Pickering. His friends in Massachusetts were much troubled about his financial matters; for he had become so involved in land speculations that much of his salary was absorbed by them. His idea in buying the land was to provide extensive and valuable landed estates for his sons. But his sons had no taste for farming, and only one of them ever followed that pursuit, and he only for a short time.

In 1789, Colonel Pickering was chosen a delegate to the convention which was held for the purpose of changing the Constitution of Pennsylvania, and here he also exerted himself in behalf of education. In September, 1790, he was asked by General Washington to go on a mission to the Seneca Indians to appease their resentment, which had been roused by the murder of two of their tribe on the west branch of the Susquehanna River. He went to meet them on Oct. 17, 1790, and the result was satisfactory to the government. This conference at Tioga Point was only the beginning of his important service in connection with the Indians.

There was much in his aspect, deportment, and character that gave him great influence over the Red Men. His lofty stature, for he was six feet tall, his broad athletic frame and great muscular development, the strength that marked his movements, his tread, and gesture, the manliness of his bearing, his physical hardihood, and the energy, courage, and firmness stamped on his face, his words, and actions, were just the characteristics which the Indians admired. He possessed also that mastery over his features which is the greatest pride of an Indian to exhibit. Although he was

naturally demonstrative when in conversation or debate, his face was wont to subside, when he was silent, into an immovable and impassive composure which nothing could break. No external novelty, excitement, or peril, no bodily discomfort or pain, and no depth or force of internal passion or sentiment could disturb the resolute repose of his features.

The good-will and confidence of the Indians toward him was shown by their bestowing upon him the highest compliment they could pay a white man. They gave him an Indian title like that which they bestowed upon their leading sachems and warriors. The name they gave was *Connisauti*, which means the sunny side of a hill.

The government contemplated making a rigorous campaign against the Indians northwest of the Ohio, and Colonel Pickering was offered the position of Quartermaster, which he declined. Shortly afterwards, early in June, 1791, he was sent on another mission to the Indians. On this occasion his son Timothy went with him. He concluded a treaty with the Six Nations by which friendly relations were confirmed between them and the United States. In the spring of 1792, he and General Knox conducted the negotiations with the representatives of the Six Nations at Philadelphia.

Colonel Pickering's pecuniary affairs became so seriously embarrassed at this time that he felt under the necessity of obtaining some public employment. He applied to the government for an office, and on Aug. 14, 1791, he was appointed Postmaster-General on the resignation of Samuel Osgood. On receiving this appointment, he immediately resigned his state offices.

In May, 1792, his family removed from Wyoming to Philadelphia, where he had hired a house on Second Street. On March 1, 1793, he was confirmed with others as a commissioner to regulate peace with the Northwestern Indians. The mission was unsuccessful. The Indians preferred war; but, within a year's time, on Nov. 11, 1794, they were overthrown by General Wayne at Maumee Rapids. Colonel Pickering afterwards negotiated a treaty with the Six Nations at Canandaigua, and this completed his Indian services. In the course of his Indian career, he had held conferences with the tribes on five occasions, and by his influence over them he

had restrained them from joining in the war against the United States. These services were greatly valued by both Washington and Knox. To his dying day, Colonel Pickering was deeply interested in the civilization of the Indians, and there was no part of his long and varied public services which he considered more important than his diplomatic missions to these tribes.

On the twenty-eighth of December, 1794, General Knox resigned his position as Secretary of War, and on the second of January, 1795, Colonel Pickering was appointed to this office, which then included the management of the Army, the Navy, and Indian Affairs. On the resignation of Randolph, the Secretary of State, which took place Aug 19, 1795, Colonel Pickering was appointed to fill that position temporarily, and, in December of the same year, he was appointed Secretary of State.

While Colonel Pickering was acting Secretary of State, and was conducting the foreign relations of the country at a very critical time, he continued to hold the office of Secretary of War, and conducted important and voluminous correspondence with General Wayne, the Commander-in-Chief of the Northern Army. At the same time he was charged with the administration of the Navy in its infancy, and was particularly occupied and interested in building the three frigates destined to win the naval triumphs of the War of 1812. He also provided for the navy-yards and the supply and equipment of vessels; he appointed the officers, assigned them their stations, and decided what cruises they should take. His correspondence, sustained and corroborated by the public records and archives, shows that he was fully equal to the work. He bore his great burden easily and steadily. No Secretary of State ever enjoyed the confidence of his associates and of his official subordinates, the respect of the representatives of the country abroad, or the esteem and good-will of foreign officials, to a greater degree than he did during the administration of Washington.

After his regular appointment as Secretary of State, several affairs of much importance, which properly belonged to the office of Secretary of War, were left in his hands.

During Colonel Pickering's administration of the State Department, its duties were very complicated and laborious. Almost all the papers and

letters were written by the Secretary's own hand. When the great number of these documents is taken into consideration, it can be seen what an enormous amount of writing he must have done.

He was dismissed from the office of Secretary of State on May 12, 1800, on account of the bitter feelings, arising from political and personal causes, which President Adams had conceived against him. At that time he had been nine years in the various branches of the administration of the United States. He had served as Indian negotiator, as Postmaster-General, as Secretary of War, and as Secretary of State. As Postmaster-General he was at the head of a bureau in the Treasury; while, as Secretary of War, he was in charge of the Navy as well as of the Army, and superintended the Indian affairs of the country. As Secretary of State, he not only conducted the intercourse with other nations, but all business connected with the territories, the patents, the mint, and the census. He had, in fact, at different times, under his guiding hand, the whole working machinery of the government. The State Papers show the ability, the industry, and the fidelity of his service,—a service more various and extensive in its range than the duties which any other one man has probably ever been called upon to discharge. Throughout all his labors, and especially when he was Secretary of State, he had the steady approval of Washington. All his associates in the Cabinet bore cordial and grateful testimony to the value of his services. Madison, who succeeded him, except for a brief interval, as Secretary of State, declared that the records of the State Department gave evidence of ability on the part of Colonel Pickering that he had never known surpassed.

During his official life, Colonel Pickering made his home in Philadelphia. His house was always open to his friends, though his narrow income obliged him to forego all fashionable entertainments. When Colonel Pickering returned to private life, he had no income with which to support his family. He accordingly made up his mind to resume his life as a farmer, and he wrote to his relations of his intentions; but his project met with their decided disapproval. With the hope of dissuading him from what seemed to them a wild scheme, Judge *Samuel Putnam* [54-55. VI. 102] and Timothy Williams [52. VI. 90] went to Philadelphia, but could not prevail

upon him to give up his plan. As money was necessary to carry out his projects, he asked his relations to lend him two thousand dollars; and, although his friends in Massachusetts differed with him on the subject of his plans, they made arrangements to send him the money.

At the end of June, everything was ready, and Colonel Pickering started in high spirits on his bold enterprise. His destination was the Great Bend in what is now the County of Susquehanna, near the northeast corner of the State. Here he stayed till he had finished the season's work. On Dec. 10, 1800, he returned to his family at Easton. Taking advantage of this first leisure which he had been able to command, he decided to visit his relations in Massachusetts. He reached Salem the third of February. Up to this time, there had been no death among his father's children. All their families were in prosperous circumstances, several of them were rich, and all were respectably connected.

The Colonel's arrival among them was hailed with delight; and relatives and friends joined in extending to him a hearty welcome, which was very gratifying to him. The enthusiasm of his reception increased the earnestness of his relatives, friends, and fellow-citizens to bring him back to his old home. They were willing and able to put him in a position where labor would be unnecessary; but he could not be prevailed upon to accept assistance in the shape of downright gifts.

To accomplish their purpose, his friends resorted to stratagem. Instead of remonstrating against his burying himself in the wilds of Pennsylvania, they manifested a lively interest in his enterprise. It was made the topic of frequent conversation. He expressed himself as confident that before many years he would be able to sell enough of his lands to be able to return and live permanently among them, and stated that he certainly would come back to Salem, when his sales of land enabled him to do so. When he had been led to give this conditional promise, and had repeated it so often that he could not retract it, his friends felt that he was in their power.

One day Judge *Samuel Putnam* [54-55. VI. 102] called upon him, and said he had been requested to learn at what price he would sell some of his tracts of land. He stated the amount of the land, and a price which

amounted to thirty-three thousand three hundred dollars for the whole. The gentlemen whom Judge Putnam represented agreed to pay him the price that he asked. They divided the property into three hundred and thirty-three shares at one hundred dollars each. Eighty-three of these Colonel Pickering reserved for himself. Thirty-four gentlemen from among his friends and relations paid him twenty-five thousand dollars for the remaining two hundred and fifty shares. Colonel Pickering was made their agent to look after the property, and was given full power to dispose of it. If he sold it, he was to have a commission on the sale.

To have disposed of so large a portion of his lands at his own price, was very gratifying to Colonel Pickering. He began the world again, with what was considered in those days a very respectable estate; and he made up his mind to make his permanent home in Massachusetts. He returned to Salem in November, 1801, just twenty-four years after he had left it.

Colonel Pickering, at the time when this sale of land took place, looked upon it in a purely business light, and was confident that his friends would find the investment a profitable one. In point of fact, however, the transaction amounted to neither more nor less than a present to Colonel Pickering of twenty-five thousand dollars. After he had removed to Massachusetts, he began to see it in this light, and duly appreciated the kindness and generosity of his friends. They did not want the land and doubtless could have invested their money with greater pecuniary advantage. They certainly did not want to make a single dollar from the purchase, for, on the death of Alexander Hamilton, they deeded the whole of the lands to his heirs. From sales of these lands, which afterwards took place, it is evident that the Colonel did not overestimate their value.

Early in 1802, Colonel Pickering hired a farm in Danvers. In 1804, he moved to a farm in Beverly; but it proved to be unsuited for his purpose, and in 1806, he bought the Wenham farm, a large and valuable estate, with a large house upon it which is still standing. This was his happy home for a number of years.

But before he moved away from Danvers, he had already been called back to public life. A man of his abilities was not permitted to remain in retirement. He was appointed Chief-Justice of the Court of Common

Pleas for Essex County, and took his seat Sept. 28, 1802. On the first of November, 1802, the election of members of the House of Representatives for the Eighth Congress took place. The Federalists of the Essex South District nominated Colonel Pickering. The Democratic candidate, Captain Jacob Crowninshield was elected by a majority of one hundred and seven votes. A feeling pervaded the Democratic party that it was of the greatest importance to keep Colonel Pickering out of Congress. His talents, courage, and knowledge of public affairs led to an apprehension, fully justified afterwards, that he would prove a formidable antagonist. For this reason, desperate and unscrupulous means were employed to defeat his election. The most reckless falsehoods and calumnies were put in circulation by a partisan press, and scattered throughout the district. But his defeat led to his being placed almost immediately in a more conspicuous position, where he acted a distinguished part for eight years.

A vacancy having occurred in the United States Senate, by the resignation of the Hon. Dwight Foster, Colonel Pickering was elected as his successor by the Massachusetts Legislature, and took his seat Oct. 17, 1803. On Dec. 2, 1805, he again took his seat as a senator from Massachusetts in the Ninth Congress, for the term of six years from the fourth of March, 1805.

Colonel Pickering took part in the Senate debates in opposition to the Louisiana Treaty and to the Amendment of the Constitution in relation to the Election of President and Vice-President. He supported Judge Samuel Chase in the impeachment proceedings, and asked leave to introduce a resolution for the appointment of Representatives and direct taxes according to the number of free inhabitants, in pursuance of instructions from the Massachusetts Legislature. He favored measures for internal improvements, voted in favor of the re-charter of the United States Bank, and made several speeches against the Embargo which were extensively circulated. The opposition to this measure created the enmity of his political opponents, who showed it in every form. He was hung in effigy, and a printed notice of when and where it was to take place was sent to him. An accusation charging him with having embezzled seventy-five thousand dollars of the public money was made and put into circulation in the

form of printed hand-bills. The whole thing was declared to be utterly without foundation by a Democratic Secretary of the Treasury and a Democratic Congressional Committee.

In the third session of the Eleventh Congress he delivered a speech on the "Occupation of West Florida." In the course of it he read a letter that had been written by Talleyrand to the American Minister at Paris, dated Dec. 21, 1804. As this letter had never been communicated to the Senate as a public document, for the reason that at that time injury might have been done to our Minister or our affairs abroad, one of the rules of the Senate, strictly and arbitrarily interpreted, had been infringed by him. Colonel Pickering's political opponents, who constituted an overwhelming majority in the Senate, felt that they now had him in their power. The result was a vote of censure by the Senate. Colonel Pickering, with that strict integrity that had ever characterized him, was unwilling to escape the censure of the Senate under the cover of the plea of "indiscretion," for he knew it to be in conflict with truth. He declared that he had acted deliberately and considerately in the matter, and was fully aware that the injunction of secrecy had not been formally removed. He had, however, regarded it as removed by the lapse of time, and had reason to suppose that the Senate so regarded it, inasmuch as other Senators had referred to the letter without objection, and that all were willing to have evidence produced which was no longer required to be kept as a state secret, and which was important in guiding the deliberations of the Senate on a legislative measure then pending.

It was a severe act on the part of his enemies, which he felt was dictated by party malice. All allowed that he had borne himself with candor, manliness, and integrity in his defence, and the result was that instead of being injured his popularity increased.

During a portion of the time while he was in the Senate, the Democratic party was in power in Massachusetts. As a Senator in Congress, Colonel Pickering regarded the Legislature of Massachusetts as his constituency, with which he should communicate through the governor of the State. On the sixteenth of February, 1808, he sent to Governor Sullivan a paper to be laid before the State Legislature, which was then in session. It was

entitled, "A Letter from Timothy Pickering, a Senator of the United States from the State of Massachusetts, exhibiting to his Constituents a View of the imminent Danger of an unnecessary and ruinous War. Addressed to his Excellency, James Sullivan, Governor of the said State."

Governor Sullivan did not see fit to present this to the Legislature, and returned it to Colonel Pickering. Colonel Pickering then sent it to his friends in Massachusetts, who caused it to be printed in pamphlet form. It related chiefly to the Embargo, and its aim was to check that policy of the government and those prejudices of the people which were tending to bring on a war with England and to subserve the purposes of France. The letter gave great satisfaction to Colonel Pickering's friends; and the party in power felt it to be so adapted to produce its designed effect, that all kinds of abuse were heaped upon its author. The letter went through many editions, and it was estimated that more than twenty-five thousand of the pamphlets were printed, and nearly double that number of copies appeared in the newspapers.

During the latter part of his service in the Senate, he prepared a series of articles on the current political history of the country. These papers were addressed to the public, and were printed in the newspapers. The first numbers appeared in the Baltimore Federal Republican, and the later articles in the Salem Gazette. They were reprinted in Federal journals in all parts of the country; and, after the conclusion of the series, they were published in England, without Colonel Pickering's knowledge, in a volume of one hundred and sixty-eight pages. On a fly-leaf of a copy of this English volume, Colonel Pickering states that there are many errors in the edition, and that the thirteenth letter has been wholly omitted. These letters give a strong, bold, and, from his point of view, an honest representation of the party politics of that day. They delighted his Federal friends, and equally incensed his Democratic opponents.

In the Twelfth Congress, Colonel Pickering was succeeded, as Senator from Massachusetts, by a prominent Democrat, the Democratic party at that time controlling the State. On Nov. 2, 1812, he was elected representative of the Essex North District in the Thirteenth Congress by an overwhelming majority, receiving all but one hundred and three of the votes cast. He

entered the House of Representatives at the same time with Daniel Webster. In September, 1814, he was appointed one of a Board of Commissioners for Sea Coast Defence in Massachusetts, and later he was put at the head of the Massachusetts Board of War. In November, 1814, he was elected a representative in the Fourteenth Congress. This was the last political position he ever held by popular election. His public life closed with the expiration of Congress, March 3, 1817. It may be considered as dating back to 1776, when he marched with his regiment to join the army of Washington in New Jersey. Including as it did both military and civil services, it covered, with brief intervals, a period of more than forty years.

On May 31, 1817, he was elected, by the Legislature of Massachusetts, a member of the Executive Council, where he served for one year. It was while he was a councillor that he wrote to the Hon. John Randolph of Roanoke : —

“I have never had occasion to keep my bed one day in my life.”

On the expiration of his service in the Executive Council, Colonel Pickering entered upon the life of a farmer, — a life which he had always preferred to any other. He became the president of the Essex Agricultural Society, and he held this position until he resigned, in 1828. While living in Philadelphia, he had become one of the early members of the Philadelphia Society for the Improvement of Agriculture, and had been appointed its secretary.

In compliance with the request of his son Henry, he prepared, during the year 1818, an account of his experiences in Wyoming in the form of a letter to his son. This letter was afterward printed.

Henry Pickering had long desired the removal of the family from Wenham to Salem, and, in the spring of 1820, the change was made. The farm was put in the charge of a tenant, who agreed to allow Colonel Pickering to use the house on week days during the spring and summer, and to participate in the care of the farm. This arrangement continued until Colonel Pickering's death.

The following letter of William Driver, dated Dec. 13, 1884, is taken from the Record Book of Francis H. Lee [1. IX. 9] of Salem.

“Timothy Pickering lived some time in the Pickering house opposite the graveyard. His overseer was James Thornton. The last time I saw the old gentleman he had on a farmer’s frock, buff smalls, Conamara stockings, low shoes with broad straps and silver buckles; and with a three cornered scraper was winnowing hay in the long field on Flint street between Putnam’s corner and Ratty Reads as we used to call him. He seemed to be working for exercise and looked so happy. He was a good man who had stepped from high political position to free citizenship, with a smile on his face worthy of American citizenship and the office he held.”

On March 12, 1821, the Colonel was elected chairman of the School Committee of Salem. In 1801, he met President Adams at a dinner. In 1816, he met him at the house of Josiah Quincy. In 1817, they were both present at the dinner given in Boston to President Monroe. On each of these occasions, they met without any want of cordiality; and, in 1823, a friendly correspondence ensued in reference to the approaching celebration of the anniversary of the Declaration of Independence. But the friendly relations which were thus renewed were again broken by an occurrence which took place in this same year. Between 1803 and 1812, a private correspondence was carried on by John Adams with his friend and relation, William Cunningham. It was strictly confidential, and Mr. Adams especially enjoined his correspondent not to let it come before the public. In his letters to Mr. Cunningham, Mr. Adams, in the most unguarded manner, expressed his views about several public men with whom he had been at variance, and spoke in particularly bitter terms of Colonel Pickering. In 1823, Mr. Cunningham’s son allowed the correspondence to be published. The way in which Colonel Pickering was assailed impelled him to take notice of the attack, and, in 1824, appeared his “Review of the Correspondence between Honorable John Adams, late President of the United States, and the late William Cunningham, Esq.”

The Review was a production of great ability. Considering the age of its author, who was on the verge of eighty when he wrote it, the paper is really remarkable. It occupies one hundred and forty printed pages. It is a source of invaluable information respecting the violent party conflict of the period which it covered. At the time of its appearance, it produced a deep and wide sensation. The first edition was at once exhausted. The

Review was circulated all over the country, filled the newspapers, and for years afforded a topic for political discussion.

Colonel Pickering had entertained the purpose of devoting the leisure of his last years to the preparation of a political history of his own time; but he was diverted from his project by the earnest solicitations of Alexander Hamilton's family and friends, who wished him to write Hamilton's life. He consented, and began to work upon the book; but he died without completing it.

Colonel Pickering was decidedly opposed to slavery. His dislike of it appears in the answer he gave Mr. Hodgdon, who informed him that a negro girl had been brought into Philadelphia in a prize vessel, and would be probably sold.

"My wife would be well pleased with the services of the negro girl, if she is a good one, . . . but we will never have a *slave*. . . . If, however, the owner were to consent to let us have her for five, six, or seven years, at a reasonable price, the girl then to be free, we shall be willing and glad to have her."<sup>1</sup>

This repugnance to slavery, and his opposition to its extension, is still further shown in his correspondence and views in reference to the ordinance for settling the Northwestern Territory. In a letter on this subject, dated at Philadelphia, March 8, 1785, he concludes as follows: —

"There is one article in the report of the committee on which that act was made, which I am extremely sorry to see was omitted in the act. The committee proposed, that after the year 1800 there should be no slavery in the new States. I hardly have patience to write on a subject in which what is right is so obvious and so just, and what is wrong is so derogatory to Americans above all men, so inhuman and iniquitous in itself."

In another letter he resumed the subject: —

"In looking over the Act of Congress of the 23d. of April last, and the present report of an ordinance, relative to these lands, I observe there is no provision made for ministers of the gospel, nor even for schools and academies. The latter might have been brought into view; though, after the admission of Slavery, it was right to say nothing of Christianity."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. I. p. 291.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. Vol. I. pp. 508-510.

Although he would never own a slave, as prize agent, acting as factor in connection with admiralty cases, and under the then law and usage, he had sometimes to discharge what must have been a very painful duty; for when slaves were taken by the enemy as prize property, they had to be sold back to slavery.

The personal courage of Colonel Pickering was never a question in any one's mind. An officer, feeling himself wronged, sent him a challenge. The Colonel stated to the bearer of it that in no event would he fight a duel; but if in any way he had wronged their friend, of which he was wholly unconscious, he would repair the wrong. On an examination, and becoming satisfied that the difficulty had risen from a misapprehension on his part, which had led to certain expressions of which the gentleman complained, he made all the explanatory statements which truth and justice required. Before the Revolution, he declined a challenge from a surgeon of the British Army with whom he had engaged in a bitter newspaper controversy on the subject of the establishment of a small-pox hospital. The doctor notified him that he should attack him at sight and wherever met. Colonel Pickering sent back word that "he would find him as ready to protect his person against an assassin as the community against a quack and impostor."

Colonel Pickering had considerable talent as a musician. He had a nice ear, a pleasing voice, and his taste was good. He owned a spinet, and took lessons on the violin; and, in 1764, he gave instruction in sacred music to classes in Salem and Marblehead. One of his college classmates writes that the class was more indebted to him for instruction in music than to the teacher. His music-book, which is in a fine state of preservation, is in the possession of his grandson, Henry Pickering of Boston. It is filled with rules, hymns, etc., very neatly written, and bears the date 1762,—all in his own handwriting and signed by him. A printed preface to the book bears the date 1721. Mr. Henry Pickering also owns Colonel Pickering's Testament, dated 1756, and several other heirlooms. Among these is a lock of his hair, cut off the morning when he died, and an old silver watch, which, from the hall mark, we should judge was made in 1738. A heliotype of this watch and seal is given facing page 12.

Colonel Pickering was an excellent reader; and his conversational powers were of a high order. His voice was well modulated and finely tuned. His manner was dramatic; and his countenance and intonation were expressive. He was always interested in education. Mr. Samuel Phillips corresponded with him at the time he was founding Phillips Academy at Andover. Colonel Pickering also corresponded with Noah Webster and others on this subject. His especial efforts were directed to bringing into notice improved text-books for schools.

Princeton College conferred upon him the degree of Doctor of Laws, and, at the time of receiving the degree, the president of the college wrote to him as follows:—

“The public has long since decreed you higher honors than the college has it in its power to bestow. What she is able to give, she is proud to bestow on so able and upright a statesman. You have left no doubt on the mind of your country of your talents as a civilian, and a master of the public law of nature and nations.”

To many of his contemporaries Colonel Pickering seemed a man of forbidding sternness; and the idea was the more readily accepted because of the earnestness and even the vehemence with which he often expressed himself in his speeches, writings, and conversations against political or other abuses, and the authors of them. But his private letters show that his disposition was marked by habitual benevolence and a ready sympathy. He was neither malignant nor unforgiving; on the contrary, there was a great deal of kindness and tenderness in his nature. This was particularly shown in his treatment of little children.

His truthfulness of character often led him to say, both in his writings and in debate, what men who were considered more prudent would have suppressed. Whatever he did say, was said plainly, with emphatic force and without disguise. In his personal intercourse with others, and in his correspondence, he always scrupulously shunned any conventional phraseology that seemed to him extravagant or misleading. He was, however, polite in his deportment and respectful in his bearing towards persons of all conditions, and even courtly in his manners. Colonel Pickering could not tolerate anything that savored of display in dress. The plain and semi-

Quaker simplicity of his garb, and the total absence of anything fashionable in his apparel, was particularly noticeable. In a letter to his wife, dated at Philadelphia, July 8, 1778, he speaks of the great height of the headdresses of the ladies, and adds:—

“The quakers excepted who dress as usual with a becoming simplicity. You may easily imagine how much I look like one of y<sup>e</sup> brotherhood when you have dressed me up in my greyish coat and brown hat with my straight thin locks unpowdered. But be assured my dear, I am not singular in my plainness.”<sup>1</sup>

The stern boldness of his forcible expressions, irritating and exasperating as they were to political opponents in heated party strife, never appeared in private or social intercourse. The dignity of his manner, and the force of his character, far from being obstacles in his way, were of the greatest assistance to him in the conduct of diplomatic affairs.

One of Colonel Pickering's marked characteristics was the warmth of his personal friendships. The relations between him and General Washington are evident to any one who reads his life. The correspondence between them was frequent, extensive, and most confidential. Their letters, especially in the last years of Washington's life, indicate a personal friendship quite unusual with the President. Throughout their long correspondence, and intimate official interviews, Washington's opinion of his friend is plain,—an opinion which he expressed in the presence of a large company at Mount Vernon, not long before he died:—

“If There is a genuine Patriot in this Country [and I believe there are many] Timothy Pickering is pre-eminent.”

But although this warm friendship certainly existed between them, Colonel Pickering did not hold that unqualified admiration for Washington's military talents that many held. Although he did not consider him a military hero, nor a man of exalted military genius, he was always ready to recognize and to admire the earnest fortitude which no danger or adverse fortune could shake, the unselfishness and the devoted patriotism which

<sup>1</sup> His sister, Mrs. Clarke, once said to him “Well brother Tim, you are despart homely.”

were such noted parts of Washington's character. He considered that Washington's talents were much better adapted to the presidency of the United States, than to the command of their armies.

Probably but very few of the officers of the army had made so complete a study of the military arts as Colonel Pickering.

Colonel Pickering was brought up a Trinitarian, and joined the Third Church at Salem, of which his father, and three of his brothers-in-law, were also members. In 1777, however, his views changed, and he became an Unitarian.

Entirely without bigotry, and a reverent believer in Christianity, he wrote a number of articles for the newspapers on the subject of church government, and during his residence in Philadelphia he was a regular attendant at the Second Presbyterian Church, though he could not accept the theology that was preached there.

Sunday, Jan. 4, 1829, was an extremely cold day; but Colonel Pickering was accustomed to attend church in all weather, and started out as usual. His son Henry tried to persuade him to wear his cloak over his surtout, but without avail. It was so bitterly cold that he suffered in going to and from church, and, while in church, he remained chilled. On reaching home he complained of feeling unwell, and did not eat any dinner, but went to his room. He joined the family at tea, but appeared more than usually serious. In the course of the evening he read aloud Buckminster's sermon, from the text "It is good for me that I have been afflicted." For a day or two afterwards he was not well, but, by observing his practice of living upon broth and simple food, and keeping indoors, he seemed to be recovering. Venturing out, however, too soon, a relapse took place that baffled all remedies. Dr. James Jackson of Boston joined in consultation with his own physician, Dr. A. L. Peirson, and Dr. *John D. Treadwell* [19. VII. 110] was called in. His case became hopeless however; and he was informed of his condition, and expressed his willingness to die. The final release occurred at eight o'clock on Thursday morning, Jan. 29, 1829. The event was noticed by the newspapers throughout the country, and high tributes were paid him on every hand.

The burial took place on Saturday afternoon of Jan. 31st, attended by

a vast concourse of the people of Salem and of the neighboring towns, including many distinguished persons from remote places.

A discourse was delivered at the time of Colonel Pickering's death by the Rev. Charles W. Upham. It was afterwards printed, with an appendix which had appeared in the Salem Gazette of Jan. 30, 1829,<sup>1</sup> and has been reprinted in *The Life of Timothy Pickering*.

The following is a list of portraits of Colonel Timothy Pickering, made out by his son Henry Pickering, and written on the back of a portrait of his father (now in the Pickering House in Salem), and dated Salem, Mass., Oct., 1817.

- "Portrait painted by S. L. Waldo at New York Mch. 1817 owned by John Pickering.<sup>2</sup>
- "Another painted by Wood at Washington in the winter of 1815-1816 for Hammond Dorsey of Maryland. In possession of Hammond Dorsey.<sup>3</sup>
- "Another painted by Gilbert Stuart at Boston June 1814 in possession of Alex<sup>r</sup> Contee Hanson of Maryland.<sup>4</sup>
- "Another painted by Gilbert Stuart in Sept. 1808 for William Pratt, of which Mr. Henry Pickering has a copy.<sup>5</sup>
- "Another [a chalk drawing of size of life now at the house of Mr. Israel Dodge of Salem] was executed at Washington by St. Memin a French emigrant in the winter of 1803-1804.<sup>6</sup>
- "Another of the same [small life and drawn in crayon] now at Wenham was executed by an English artist of the name of Sharpless at Philadelphia in 1796.<sup>7</sup>
- "Another in oil was painted by Charles Wilson Peele of Philadelphia for his museum in 1795.

<sup>1</sup> A Discourse, Delivered on the Sabbath after the decease of the Hon. Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Junior Pastor of the First Church, Salem, Foote & Brown, Court Street, 1829.

<sup>2</sup> Now in the possession of the family at the Pickering House, Salem.

<sup>3</sup> Now in the possession of his daughter, Mrs. Thomas Donaldson.

<sup>4</sup> Now in the possession of his niece, Mrs. Thomas Donaldson.

<sup>5</sup> Now in the possession of Mr. Pratt's grandson, Robert M. Pratt, of Boston.

<sup>6</sup> Perhaps the same that is in the possession of Israel Dodge's great-granddaughter, Mrs. Frederick A. Whitwell, of Boston, Mass.

<sup>7</sup> Possibly this is the same [pastel] now in the possession of Colonel Pickering's grandson, Henry Pickering, of Boston, Mass.

"N. B. I am informed by my father that the distinguished Gen<sup>l</sup> Kosciusko once drew with a pencil a likeness of him upon a leaf of his [my f's] pocket book, but this in time was obliterated. This was at Yorktown in Penn. in 1786.

"Another head of him [miniature size also] was slightly sketched in the same style by Col. Rogers of Maryland [aid de camp of Baron de Kalb] while my father was writing some despatches at Whitmarsh near Philadelphia, where the American Army lay encamped. It is in possession of the family and was done in 1787."

Besides the above there are the following portraits of Colonel Pickering:—

A miniature by C. Catlin. In the possession of W. Meredith Esq. of Philadelphia. It was engraved by J. B. Longrave.

A miniature, said to be by Trumbull, now in the possession of Colonel Pickering's great-grandson Charles P. Bowditch. It was given by Colonel Pickering to Ebenezer Bowman, and later by his son-in-law Dr. Miner to R. S. Ross. Miss Mary L. Bowman of Wilkes Barre, Pa. gave it to Mr. Bowditch.

A portrait in Independence Hall, Philadelphia.

A portrait by Frothingham, painted about 1818, formerly owned by Pickering Dodge [59. VI. 128], now in the possession of the heirs of the late Mrs. John H. Silsbee [59. VII. 343].

A small portrait in pastel drawn by Sharpless about 1790, in the possession of Robert C. Winthrop [48. IX. 944].

A portrait now at West Point. This portrait was sent from the United States War Department in 1875 or 1876 to the United States Military Academy. No record has been found of its early history.

From a letter Colonel Pickering wrote to his wife, dated April 15, 1827, it would appear that Chester Harding painted his portrait in that year. In this letter he says:—

"I contemplate going to Boston on Friday of next week which will be the 27th. instant, and to stay until the following Monday. This will allow Mr. Harding sittings enough to finish my portrait."

Miss Sarah Goodrich made a copy of the Pratt portrait of Colonel Pickering, as appears from the following:—

"Portrait of the Hon. Tim<sup>o</sup> Pickering, copied by Sarah Goodridge of Boston from the fine original by Stuart in the possession of William Pratt, Esq., of Boston. My Father sat to Stuart I think when he was about 63 years of age; & of the original, of which this is a copy, Allston has said that the coloring was scarcely inferior to Titian's. Salem 26 Jan'y. 1828. H. PICKERING"

This copy is now in the possession of Colonel Pickering's great-grandson, Charles P. Bowditch.

The engraving given of Colonel Pickering is from the portrait by Stuart, now in possession of Robert M. Pratt [52. VIII. 590].

The following is an abstract of the will of Colonel Pickering, which is dated May 15, 1827, and was proved Feb. 17, 1829: —

My executors to take possession of all my real estate in Essex County, and to manage it as best they can, and to apply the income, together with my personal property, or the proceeds or income thereof, for the comfortable support of my wife and my daughter-in-law Lurena Pickering; but if my executors judge it expedient, in order to obtain a better income for them, they are empowered to sell the real estate and place the money in some productive stock or funds. My executors to have full power to sell my lands in the states of Pennsylvania, Ohio, Virginia and Kentucky and to place the money at interest. After the death of my wife my executors to reserve as much of my estate, real and personal, as is required for the suitable support of my said daughter-in-law, in case she should survive her mother, and then all of the residue and remainder to be disposed of by my executors among my children and grandchildren, varying the distribution according to their circumstances. My sons John Pickering, and Octavius Pickering, and my son-in-law Benjamin Ropes Nichols, to be executors of my will.

In a letter to his executors, bearing the same date as his will, after reciting the circumstances of his son Henry, he reminds them of the clause in his will concerning the final distribution of his property, in which they were to vary the distribution, giving his heirs more or less, according to their circumstances, and adds: —

“But, above all, bearing in kind remembrance my son Henry to whom we are all so much indebted for his pecuniary disbursement, so generously and so affectionately made to all the branches of the family.” “To him therefore I would have you transfer, by proper conveyance, all my real estate in this county or, if previously sold as directed in my will, then the net proceeds therefrom to be enjoyed by him and his heirs and assigns. And this appropriation to Henry, should he again acquire the means of living independently of it, will probably result only in a suspension of a distribution of it among different branches of my family.”<sup>1</sup>

A plain, massive monument of Chelmsford granite has been erected over the remains of Colonel and Mrs. Pickering, in the Broad Street ground,

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. IV. pp. 423-428; also Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 407, pp. 35-38; files, No. 21,822.

opposite the family mansion. The bodies were placed in the same grave, on the south side of the graves of his parents, in conformity to a wish he expressed not long before he died.<sup>1</sup> The inscription on the monument is as follows:—

BENEATH THIS MONUMENT  
ARE DEPOSITED THE REMAINS OF  
TIMOTHY & REBECCA PICKERING.

HE WAS  
AN ASSERTER OF THE RIGHTS  
OF THE NORTH AMERICAN COLONIES,  
A SOLDIER  
IN THE WAR FOR THEIR INDEPENDENCE,  
A STATESMAN  
IN THE CABINET OF WASHINGTON.  
INTEGRITY,  
DISINTERESTEDNESS, ENERGY, ABILITY,  
FEARLESSNESS IN THE CAUSE  
OF TRUTH AND JUSTICE,  
MARKED HIS PUBLIC CONDUCT:  
PURE IN MORALS, SIMPLE IN MANNERS,  
SINCERE, BENEVOLENT, PIOUS,  
IN PRIVATE LIFE  
HE WAS REVERED AND HONORED.

SHE, DURING A LIFE  
OF EXTRAORDINARY VICISSITUDE,  
WAS DISTINGUISHED BY  
FORTITUDE, RESIGNATION, DISCRETION,  
MATERNAL AFFECTION:  
IN THE WORDS OF HER BEREAVED HUSBAND,  
“A SPIRIT MORE GENTLE,  
MORE INNOCENT, MORE PURE,  
NEVER, PERHAPS,  
APPEARED IN THE FEMALE FORM.”

HE WAS BORN JULY 17, 1745,  
AND SHE ON THE 18, OF THE SAME MONTH, 1754:  
SHE DIED AUGUST 14, 1828,  
HE, JANUARY 29, 1829.

<sup>1</sup> This sketch has been made up from the four volumes of *The Life of Timothy Pickering*, written by his son Octavius Pickering and Charles W. Upham.

58. V. 24. *Rebecca White*, the wife of Timothy Pickering, born in Bristol, England, died in Salem.

In 1765, when Mrs. Pickering was eleven years old, she came with her parents to this country. Her mother died in 1770, and her father in 1771, leaving her an orphan at the age of seventeen. From this time until her marriage, her home was with her relatives of the White family. The wedding took place in Bradford, Mass., probably at the residence of her aunt, Mrs. Mary (White) Edwards, as Colonel Pickering's letters, still extant, were all addressed to her there. The original publishment of their contemplated marriage, which is still in possession of the family, calls her Rebecca White of Bradford, and the Bradford Records have the following entry:—

“Apr. 8, 1776 Timothy Pickering Esq. of Salem and Rebecca White late of Boston, Resident of Bradford were married.”

In the spring of 1785, her only sister, Miss Elizabeth White (usually called “Betsey”) arrived at Philadelphia from England. When her parents came to this country in 1765, with their older daughter Rebecca, they left Elizabeth at a boarding-school in London, and she continued to live in England till after the death of her parents. In 1783, when peace was declared with Great Britain, Colonel Pickering wrote her a very pressing and affectionate letter, inviting her to make his house her future home; accordingly she came immediately to her sister's house in Philadelphia. She afterwards married a Mr. Ruff of Philadelphia, and died without children.

Mrs. Pickering was not only one of the most amiable and lovely of women, but a woman of strong character and great bravery, as was shown during the Revolutionary War, and particularly by her spirited conduct throughout the troubles with the insurgents of Wyoming. During the war, with a young and increasing family, she cheerfully complied with the wishes and arrangements of her husband, and endured without a murmur the fatigues and perils of long journeys, and the inconveniences of camp life. After a brief period of repose in Philadelphia, she removed to Wyoming, and there heroically shared with her husband the privations,

REBECCA (WHITE) PICKERING.

[58. V. 24]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY GILBERT STUART, PAINTED IN 1816-1818, NOW IN  
THE POSSESSION OF HENRY WHITE PICKERING, ESQ., OF BOSTON.



Sheet 21A

H.W. Smith Sr.

*Robert R. R. R.*  
*my T. R. R.*

sufferings, and terrors incident to a life in a wilderness. She encountered without complaint or question all the hardships brought upon her, and developed a firmness and energy of character equal to the most trying circumstances.

She wholly subordinated her will and judgment to her husband's, thus acquiring a controlling influence over him which it was the happiness and pride of his life to recognize.<sup>1</sup>

On the night when Colonel Pickering fled to Philadelphia, Mrs. Pickering's situation was a trying one. The rioters gathered around the house, and, with wild yells of rage, overpowered and disarmed the men-servants, forced an entrance into the house, and ransacked it from garret to cellar. It was a night of horror to Mrs. Pickering, whose youngest child was but three weeks old. The shock was frightful, and for a short time she was completely prostrated, but she soon rallied.

When, in the course of a few days, her self-composure returned, and her spirit and strength revived, she took decided measures. She resolved to send her children to Philadelphia, while she remained at her post. At the same time she wrote to her husband what she had done, and entreated him not to return.

The general tone of Colonel Pickering's letters to his wife show the confidence he had in her judgment, and his high opinion of her mental powers. He wrote to her, not only on domestic and private matters, but also on subjects of general interest, relating to sentiments and principles, questions in morals and religion, public events, and political transactions, precisely as he would have written to one of his eminent friends.

Mrs. Pickering continued to the close of her life most lovely in her bearing, and her fair complexion never lost its beautiful bloom. She was faithful and competent in carrying out the trusts which her husband placed upon her, and she followed his counsels and conducted his affairs with the utmost care and judgment. No woman ever deserved better than she did the most honorable title a wife can bear, — a helpmeet for her husband. Their married life left nothing to be desired. They lived together fifty-two years, and he treated her to the last with the same tender courtesy and lively

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. II. p. 160.

affection which he manifested toward her when a bride. Her death was the greatest loss that could possibly have befallen him. Never was there a more perfect instance of a happy wedded life.

At her death, Judge Wingate writes to Colonel Pickering: —

“Her amiable qualities of mind and her very benevolent and affectionate treatment of her friends, had very greatly endeared her memory to us all. I had peculiar reason to love and esteem her for the many marks of friendship I have received from her.”

On her gravestone are these lines written by her husband: —

“A Spirit more gentle, more innocent, more pure never perhaps appeared in the female form.”<sup>1</sup>

Her granddaughter, Mrs. Thomas Donaldson, writes: —

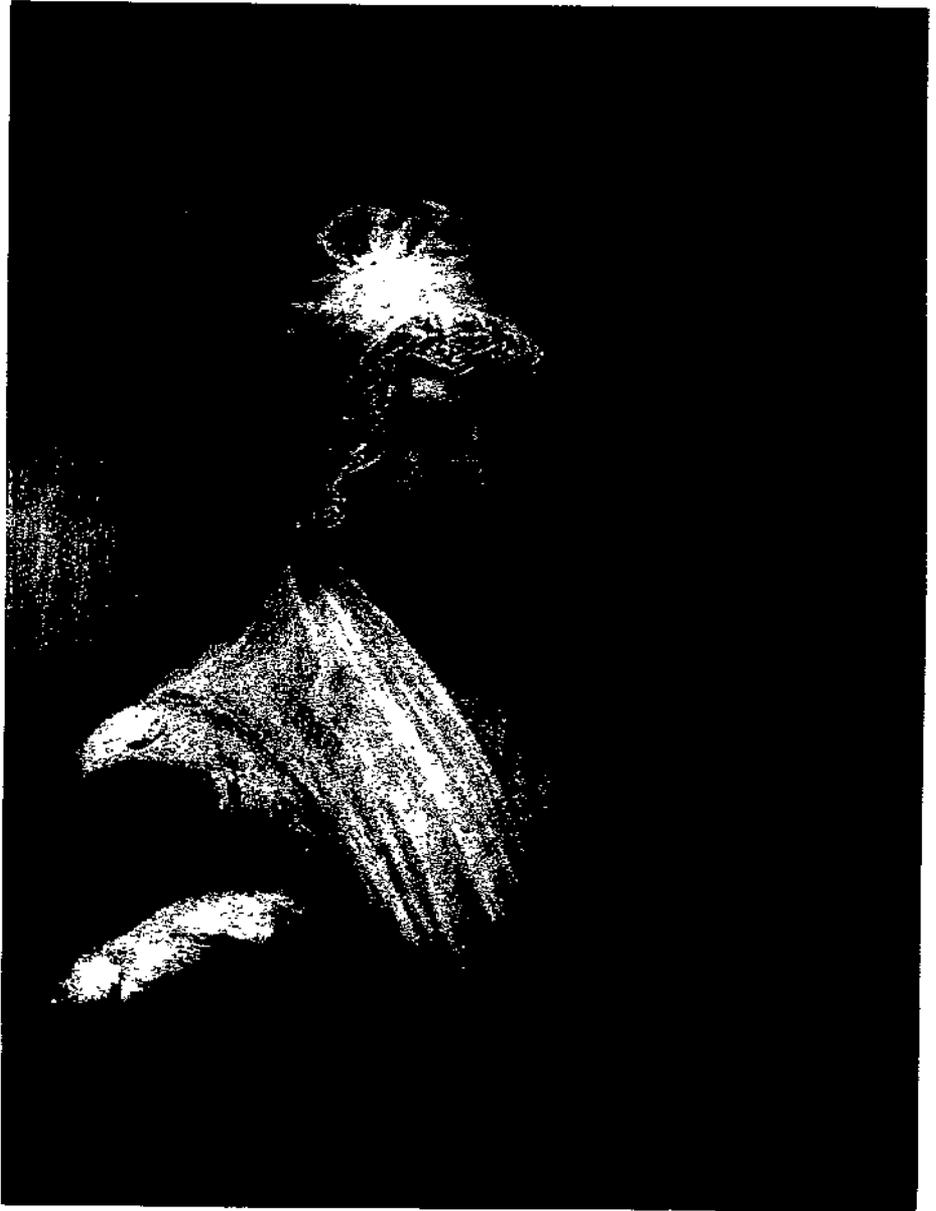
“My grandmother was a striking contrast to her husband, she slight and somewhat smaller than the average woman, very quiet, reserved in her demeanor, with marked gentleness in movement and expression. His devotion to her was the tenderest kind. When they walked together it was always arm-in-arm after the fashion of those days — he suiting his usual gait to her slow and somewhat enfeebled steps. After her death which took place a year before my grandfather’s, as I a small child was sitting in his room alone with him ‘Who do you miss my child’ exclaimed he, his voice full of emotion, and his eyes filling with tears. To see the strong old man stirred by deep grief, and his voice faltering, made an impression on me which I never forgot.”

The following obituary of Mrs. Pickering appeared in the Essex Register of Monday, Aug. 18, 1828: —

“In this town, on Tuesday, Mrs. Rebecca Pickering, wife of the Hon. Timothy Pickering, aged 74.

“All who enjoyed the privilege of knowing this lady, unite in their testimony, that she was a most affectionate wife, a kind parent, and the best of friends; faithful to all the duties of life, and most exemplary in their discharge. Modest, retiring, and unobtrusive, her character shone with that softened and chastened light in which woman appears loveliest, best. It had no prominent trait which stood forth in bold relief, shadowing the rest; but like the prismatic rays of the bow, each blended imperceptibly its beauties with the other, making a perfect whole.”

<sup>1</sup> This sketch is principally made up from *The Life of Timothy Pickering*, by Charles W. Upham.



LUCIA (PICKERING) DODGE.

[59. V. 25.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY FROTHINGHAM, PAINTED ABOUT 1818, NOW IN THE  
POSSESSION OF THE HEIRS OF THE LATE MRS. JOHN H. SILSBEE, OF  
SALEM, MASS.

The engraving of Mrs. Pickering is from her portrait by Stuart. The picture is now in the possession of her grandson, Henry White Pickering of Boston.

A miniature copy of this picture was made by Miss Sarah Goodrich and is now in the possession of Mrs. Pickering's great-grandson, Charles P. Bowditch. On the back of this miniature is the following memorandum:—

“Portrait of Rebecca wife of Hon. T. Pickering: copied by Sarah Goodrich from the fine original by Stuart in the possession of Henry Pickering. My mother sat to Stuart in the summer of 1816, in the 63<sup>d</sup> year of her age. June 1829. H. PICKERING.”

It appears that the portrait was not finished until 1818, for in a letter to her daughter, Elizabeth Dorsey, dated at Wenham, May 5, 1818, she writes:—

“The 14th. of last month your father met the Council. He had consulted with Mr. Stewart previous to that, of my going to have him to take my person, my face being all that was finished. It was agreed that I should accompany him. At that time an invitation came from Mrs. Lyman to go to her house which I did.”

Mrs. Pickering was a daughter of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Miller) White, of Bristol, England. *Isaac White* [49. VI. 84] was her cousin. Her ancestry includes the following families: White, Bowles, Heath, Green, Jones, Greenwood, Allen, Miller. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{18}$ .

59. V. 25. **Lucia Pickering** [Timothy 48-59. IV. 9], born in Salem, died in Salem.<sup>1</sup>

Mrs. Dodge is said by her granddaughter, Mrs. Nathaniel Silsbee, to have been a woman of a sweet nature, of clear intelligence, of deep religious feeling, and of great fortitude. In early and middle life she had little

<sup>1</sup> Most of the authorities agree in stating her birthday as Nov. 12, 1747. The Nichols Family Records give it as Oct. 29, 1747, O. S., and Mrs. Nathaniel Silsbee gives it as Nov. 23, 1747. The date of her marriage is given by several authorities, including the Town Records, and the First Church Records, as June 17, 1766, while others of not so great value give it as Jan. 17, 1766. Dr. Wheatland, Francis H. Lee, and the Gardner Family Records give the date of her death as Oct. 31, 1822, while the Nichols Family Records, Mrs. Nathaniel Silsbee, Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. IV. p. 81, and Upham's Life of Timothy Pickering give it as Nov. 1, 1822. The earlier date is probably correct, as the Salem Register of Nov. 2 announces her burial “this afternoon at three o'clock.”

leisure for reading, but Rees' Encyclopædia being left in her charge, she went over it by picking out all that suited her from A to Z. She was then between sixty and seventy years old.

She is the subject of a chapter entitled "The Grandmother" in Mrs. Silsbee's little book, "A Half Century in Salem." This chapter consists mostly of a description of an old-fashioned Thanksgiving dinner, at which the grandmother presided, of the large square house on Front Street, Salem, and of its contents, some of which descended to Mrs. Silsbee. In this chapter she gives the following description of her personal appearance:—

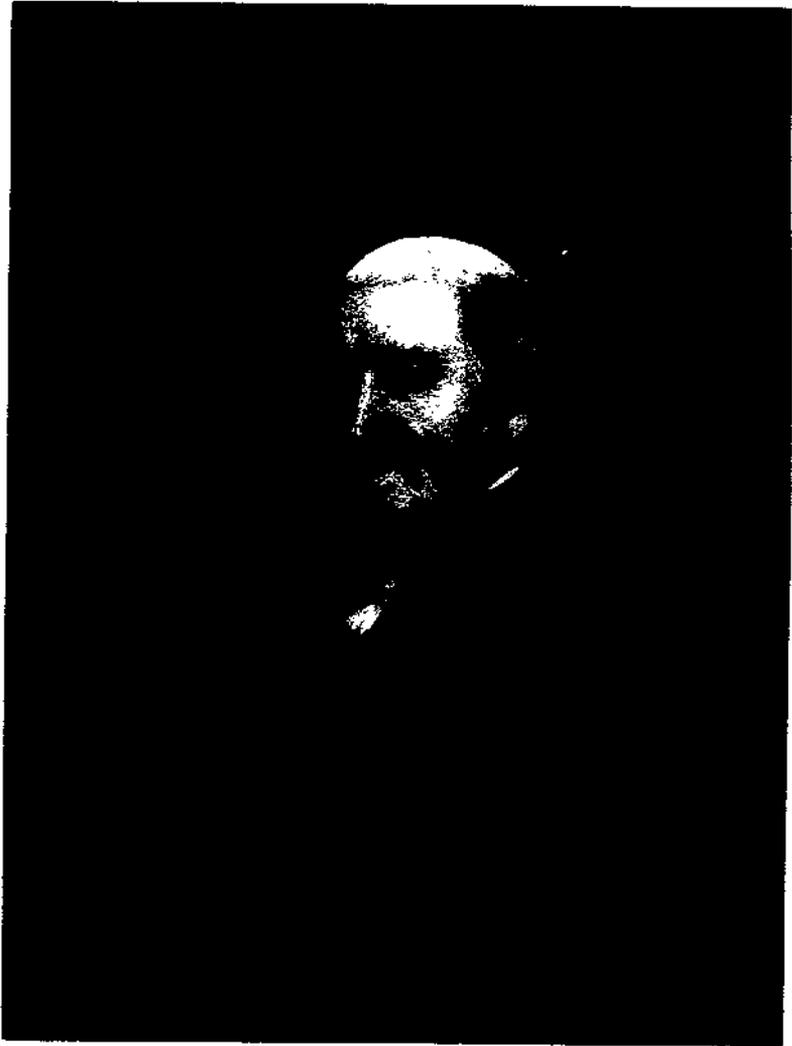
"Born of a plain, Puritanic family, Canton crape was the grandmother's only wear, with muslin round-eared cap, and white kerchief folded over the front of the dress: a charming costume for a handsome old lady."

The chapter closes with verses entitled "My Grandmother's Mirror." Several of the verses we give below:—

"Mid Puritanic teaching,  
Under Calvinistic preaching,  
With a precious six months' schooling,  
She lived for eighteen years;  
Then with her chosen lover  
She passed the threshold over,  
To bear with him the burden  
Of wedlock's hopes and fears.

"To the poor her hand extended,  
Her gifts she always mended,  
'Til the needle-work like broidery  
Upon the garment lay;  
Her quiet bounties flowing,  
Her kindly lessons showing  
The means to earn a living,  
Which was far the better way.

"No silk or purple clothing!  
One might think she looked with loathing  
On scarlet or fine linen  
For those 'mongst whom she trod;



ISRAEL DODGE.

[59. V. 25.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY FROTHINGHAM, PAINTED ABOUT 1818, NOW IN THE  
POSSESSION OF THE HEIRS OF THE LATE MRS. JOHN H. SILSBEE, OF  
SALEM, MASS.

Yet I am glad that I am able  
 To recall the muff of sable,  
 And her cloak with sable edging,  
 When she walked to worship God.

"On the precepts of her Saviour  
 She modeled her behavior,  
 A chapter always reading  
 Ere she laid her down to rest;  
 Through 'pastures green' she wandered,  
 By the 'still waters' pondered,  
 And of all the books she studied  
 She loved the Bible best."

Mrs. Dodge possessed a clear and vigorous understanding, and was familiar with the best writers in our own language, and her conversation was instructive and entertaining. She was pre-eminent in the discharge of her domestic and social duties, her life being devoted to the happiness of her family and friends. Her charities were silently bestowed where want and sorrow existed. She sought to relieve suffering, and to prevent its recurrence when occasioned by improvidence or vice. Bred in the Orthodox faith, she early adopted more liberal views. The Bible was her daily companion, and its precepts were made the rule of her conduct. Few minds were better able to judge more correctly, and to adopt the simple truths of the Gospel than hers.<sup>1</sup>

Mrs. Dodge's portrait, which was painted by Frothingham about the year 1818, has been heliotyped for this work. It is now in the possession of the heirs of her granddaughter, the late Mrs. John H. Silsbee, of Salem. Her great-grandson, William E. Silsbee, has her sampler on which is worked, "Lucia Pickering, her sampler made in the twelfth year of her age 1759."

59. V. 25. *Israel Dodge*, the husband of Lucia Pickering, born in Beverly, Mass., died in Salem. A merchant and distiller. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Dodge was a patriotic citizen, and, on March 13, 1775, he was chosen on the Committee of Safety, of which Timothy Pickering, John Pickering, and George Williams were members.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Obituary in the Salem Gazette of Tuesday, Nov. 5, 1822.

<sup>2</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Octavius Pickering, Vol. I. p. 34.

His house on Front Street was burned in the fire of December, 1844. His distillery was where Buffum's planing-mill is now located.<sup>1</sup>

The following anecdote of Mr. and Mrs. Dodge, and one which shows the precision of their lives, used to be told by the late Dr. Henry Wheatland:

"At a certain time in the spring no more fires were built in the fireplace. It was carefully cleaned out and green boughs took the place of the logs of wood. It mattered not what the state of the weather was, storm or sunshine, on that particular day all was made ready for the ensuing season."

The portrait of Israel Dodge, painted by Frothingham, about 1818, has been heliographed for this work. It is now in the possession of the heirs of his granddaughter, the late Mrs. John H. Silsbee of Salem.

Israel Dodge's first wife, whom he married in June, 1763, was Joanna, daughter of Caleb and Hannah Dodge. She died Oct. 21, 1764, at the age of 20 years and 7 months.

The following is an abstract of Israel Dodge's will, which was made July 2, 1818, and proved Nov. 19, 1822:—

To my wife Lucia Dodge I give the western half of my house, all my household furniture, and my pew in the meeting-house of the Rev. John Prince. To my son Pickering Dodge, the children of my deceased daughter Catherine Stone, and the children of my daughter Eliza Devereux, the residue of my estate, they to pay to my wife fifteen hundred dollars a year, and my daughter Eliza Devereux, to have one half of the income of the property I gave to her child.

The inventory of the estate of Oct. 7, 1823, amounted to \$209,894.09.<sup>2</sup>

Mr. Dodge was a son of Joshua and Hannah (Rayment) Dodge of Beverly. His ancestry includes the following families: Dodge, Conant, Horton, Larkin, Hale, Rayment, Bishop, Woodbury, Dodge. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{18}$ .

60. V. 27. Eunice Neal [Eunice 60-70. IV. 10], born in Salem, baptized there May 28, 1727, died in Salem.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. IV. p. 81.

<sup>2</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 400, pp. 358-360; Vol. 402, p. 112; files, No. 7,866.

<sup>3</sup> The Driver Family, by Harriet Ruth (Waters) Cooke, p. 446, erroneously states that she married Benjamin Brown. It gives the date of the marriage as Feb. 20, 1745, while we have Feb. 24, 1745.

60. V. 27. *Benjamin Bacon*, her husband, born in Salem, baptized there Nov. 11, 1722, died in Salem. A perukemaker. Residence: Salem.

Benjamin Bacon, in several real-estate conveyances of his recorded at the Essex County Registry of Deeds, Salem, is described as a perukemaker. In one of these, dated Dec. 29, 1758, he conveys "my  $\frac{2}{3}$  part of the eastern half part of the late mansion house & homestead of my late grandfather, Daniel Bacon of Salem shipwright." In another deed of Feb. 15, 1763, he gives the same relationship. From some of these deeds, and from the fact that there was no estate administered upon, we infer that he grew poor in his later years, and that he is undoubtedly the person whose death is recorded as follows in the Salem Gazette of Tuesday, March 11, 1794:—

"At the Poor House Mr. Benjamin Bacon 72; he died very suddenly as he was sitting at dinner."

He was the son of Daniel and Elizabeth (King) Bacon of Salem. His ancestry includes the following families: Bacon, Read, Spencer, King. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{27}$ .

60. V. 28. *Mary Neal* [Eunice 60-70. IV. 10], born in Salem, baptized there April 5, 1730, died in Topsfield, Mass.<sup>1</sup>

Mrs. Foster was admitted to full communion with the Tabernacle Church, May 6, 1753. Her obituary in the Salem Gazette of Friday, May 4, 1810, speaks of her mild temper, her constant acts of charity, and her high Christian character. An address was delivered at her burial in Chebacco by the Rev. Asahel Huntington.

The following is an abstract of her will, which was made Nov. 25, 1809, and proved May 8, 1810:—

I Mary Cleaveland of Topsfield, widow, give to Lois, the present wife of Moses Pilsbury of Londonderry, N. H., my gold necklace, and my two large silver spoons, and four dollars in money, to enable her to have said spoons made over into two good

<sup>1</sup> The date of her baptism as here given is from the Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. p. 270, while it is given as April 5, 1729, in *The Driver Family*, by Harriet Ruth (Waters) Cooke, p. 446.

new spoons. I give the remainder of my estate, after debts and funeral charges are paid to the Reverend John Cleaveland of Wrentham, Parker Cleaveland, Esq., of Rowley, Elizabeth Channell, of Rowley, Nehemiah Cleaveland, Esq., of Topsfield and Abigail, present wife of Joseph Cogswell of Londonderry, they being the surviving children of my late husband the Reverend John Cleaveland, late of Ipswich, to be equally divided between them. Nehemiah Cleaveland, Esq., sole executor.<sup>1</sup>

60. V. 28<sup>1</sup>. *John Foster*, the first husband of Mary Neal, born probably in Manchester, Mass., died at sea. A shipmaster. Residence: Manchester.

Captain Foster is called in deeds a mariner, also gentleman. He removed from Manchester to Salem after the death of his first wife, and owned what was known as the Tewksbury Place, near the burying-ground. He returned to Manchester, and was living there from 1753 to 1758. After his death, his widow returned to Salem.

His first wife, whom he married April 26, 1733, was Mary Norton. By her he had the following children:—

- |                   |   |
|-------------------|---|
| JOHN FOSTER,      | born in Manchester, Jan. 26, 1733-4. Perhaps he is the same who married, June 29, 1766, Abigail Ives, of Salem. |
| MARY FOSTER,      | baptized March 9, 1735-6; married May 20, 1754, John Hathorne, of Salem.  |
| JOSEPH FOSTER,    | born Feb. 27, 1737. Perhaps he is the same who married, Dec. 17, 1762, Hannah Pickering [70. V. 31].            |
| TIMOTHY FOSTER,   | baptized April 13, 1740.  |
| ELIZABETH FOSTER, | married Thomas Ingalls of Lynn, their banns being published, June 16, 1762.                                     |
| DANIEL FOSTER,    | baptized April 28, 1745; died before 1766.  |

The following is an abstract of Captain John Foster's will, which was made Dec. 12, 1766, and was proved Jan. 6, 1767:—

I John Foster of Manchester, in the county of Essex gentleman, of sound mind and memory. I order that my executors pay all my debts and funeral expenses, and sell all my lands and buildings in Manchester; also my dwelling house and lands in Salem in the said county, on the northerly side of the main street some time since improved by Captain Benjamin Pickman.

I give to my wife and her heirs my half right in Salem in the great pasture, also

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 379, p. 289; files, No. 5,620.

my acre of land in Salem with the buildings thereon bounded northerly on the Main street, westerly on land late of Edward Kitchen, Esq., southerly on land late William Pickering, deceased; also £66. 18<sup>s</sup> 4<sup>d</sup> lawful money, also my negro named Titus and household furniture of the value of £27, and my best cow.

All the residue of my estate I give to my said wife and four children as follows: To my wife one third whether real or personal during her natural life; John two fifths; Timothy, one fifth; Mary Hathorne, one fifth; Elizabeth Ingalls, one fifth. Benjamin Marston, Esq., and Israel Foster, both of Marblehead, executors.

The inventory of Feb. 1, 1768 amounted to £3911 1s. 1d. Among the property named, were houses, warehouses, lands, schooners, and the following negroes, — Bristol, Violet, Dille, Jack, Peter, Titus, and Florah. The estate was represented as insolvent.<sup>1</sup>

Captain Foster was a son of John and Margaret (Jacobs) Foster, of Manchester, Mass. His ancestry includes the following families: Foster, Stuart, Jacobs, Frost. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{XI}$ .

60. V. 28<sup>o</sup>. *John Cleaveland*,<sup>2</sup> the second husband of Mary Neal, born in Canterbury, Conn., died in Ipswich, Mass. A minister. Residence: Ipswich.

Mr. Cleaveland entered Yale College in 1741, and remained there until a few weeks before the close of his senior year; when he was required by the government of the college to leave, because, in the May vacation, he had been to hear a preacher who was a follower of Whitefield, and who officiated where his parents worshipped. In 1764, however, the college granted him a degree, and caused him to be recorded among the graduates of his class.

On Feb. 25, 1747, he was ordained pastor of the New Church at Chebacco, Ipswich. Before this, he had preached for a new society in Boston called the Separatists. "The New Church," or Fourth of Chebacco, was formed by the disaffected members of the Rev. Theophilus Pickering's [48. IV. 8] church. In 1774, after many years of separation, the two sections of what had once been Mr. Pickering's church became reunited under the name of the Second Church.

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 343, pp. 346, 347; Vol. 344, pp. 316-319; files, No. 9,904.

<sup>2</sup> This name was printed "Cleveland" on Sheet 60.

Mr. Cleaveland is said to have been a popular and impressive preacher. His voice was one of great compass, his utterance distinct and rapid, accompanied by natural and expressive gestures. He was one of the foremost of the faithful preachers of the Gospel, and stood high among the zealous promoters of the cause of Christ. His intellectual abilities were of a high order, and his style of composition was nervous and logical. Several of his writings were printed. Besides his printed pamphlets in his controversy with Mr. Pickering, he afterwards published:—

“An Essay on important Principles of Christianity, with Animadversions on Dr. Jonathan Mayhew’s Thanksgiving Sermon;” “A Rejoinder to Dr. Mayhew’s Reply;” “A Justification of the Fourth Church in Ipswich, from the Strictures of the Rev. S. Wigglesworth of the Hamlet and the Rev. Richard Jaques of Gloucester;” “An attempt to nip in the bud the unscriptural Doctrine of Universal Salvation;” “A Dissertation in support of Infant Baptism;” and “Defence of the result of a late Council at Salem against Dr. Whittaker’s Remarks.” He also wrote many political articles for the newspapers, both before and after the Revolution. It was remarked by the aged people of Essex to its historian, that Mr. Cleaveland preached all the men of his parish into the army, and then went himself.

In 1758, he was chaplain of a provincial regiment at Ticonderoga, and was on the battle-ground, when Lord Howe was killed. In 1759, he was a chaplain at Louisburg, and in 1775 filled the same position in a regiment at Cambridge, and during a short campaign in New York in 1776.

He was nearly six feet tall, very erect, and a man of great activity and muscular power. He had blue eyes and a florid complexion.

Mr. Cleaveland’s first wife, whom he married July 31, 1747, was Mary Dodge, a daughter of Parker Dodge of Hamilton, Mass. She was born March 1, 1722, and died April 11, or 21, 1768. By her he had the following children:—

MARY CLEAVELAND,	married Jonathan Procter.
JOHN CLEAVELAND,	born Jan. 6, 1749, a minister at North Wrentham, Mass. He was twice married. He died Feb. 1, 1815.
PARKER CLEAVELAND,	born Oct. 14, 1751, a physician of Byefield, Mass. He was married. He died Feb. 10, 1826.
EBENEZER CLEAVELAND,	married Elizabeth ———, and died at sea.

ELIZABETH CLEAVELAND, married Abraham Channell.

NEHEMIAH CLEAVELAND, born Aug. 26, 1760, a physician of Topsfield, Mass. He married, first, Lucy Manning, and second, Experience Lord. He died Feb. 26, 1837.

ABIGAIL CLEAVELAND, born Dec. 28, 1762, married Joseph Cogswell, and died April 11, 1824.

The following is an abstract of his will, which was dated Aug. 11, 1797, and proved May 11, 1799:<sup>1</sup>—

I John Cleaveland of Ipswich, clerk. My wife Mary to enjoy forever as her own property the note signed by Nehemiah Cleaveland of £100, also two securities of Massachusetts one for the sum of \$40.79 and the other for \$20.; also all household furniture which she brought into my house as her own; also while my widow one third of my house and garden; also my horse and chaise and one third of the income of my real estate during her life

My own sons and daughters to share equally my estate not disposed of as above, viz: Mary Procter, John Cleaveland, Parker Cleaveland Elizabeth Channel, Nehemiah Cleaveland, Abigail Cogswell, grandson John Cleaveland the only son of my late son Ebenezer Cleaveland deceased. These are my heirs seven in number. Sons John, Parker, and Nehemiah, my executors

Mr. Cleaveland<sup>2</sup> was a son of Josiah and Abigail (Paine) Cleaveland. His father was a prominent citizen of Canterbury, Conn. His ancestry includes the following families: Cleaveland, Winn, Bates, Paine, Snow, Hopkins, Doane, Bangs, Hicks. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{21}$ .

60-68. V. 29. John Pickering [Eunice 60-70. IV. 10], born in Salem, baptized there Jan. 2, 1738-9,<sup>3</sup> died in Richmond, N. H. A farmer, Residence: Richmond.

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 366, pp. 519-521; files, No. 5,617.

<sup>2</sup> For a more complete account of Mr. Cleaveland, see the History of Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton, by Joseph B. Felt, pp. 263-265; History of the Town of Essex, by Robert Crowell, D.D., pp. 245-253; The American Biographical Dictionary, by William Allen, p. 234; Annals of the American Pulpit, by William B. Sprague, Vol. I. pp. 458-461; His Journal, edited by his grandson, Nehemiah Cleaveland, in the Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. XII. p. 85, *et seq.*, and an obituary in the Salem Gazette of May 3, 1799.

<sup>3</sup> We have been unable to reconcile the date of his birth as given by his descendants with the date of his baptism as given in the Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VIII. p. 77.

Mr. Pickering is described as a painter in a deed of Henry Ingalls to him of forty-four acres of land, dated Oct. 9, 1778.<sup>1</sup> It was about this time that he removed from Salem to Richmond, N. H., where he bought an estate of Stephen Kimpton. The farm is now owned by William T. Carter, and is known as the Seth A. Curtis place.<sup>2</sup>

His family Bible, containing a record of his children, was in the possession of his grandson, the late Loring Pickering of San Francisco, Cal., at the time of the latter's death.

He was buried in the graveyard at the middle of the town, in Richmond, where his gravestone still stands, bearing the following inscription: —

MR.  
JOHN PICKERING  
died  
27 Oct. 1823  
Æ 84

60-68. V. 29. *Hannah Ingersoll*, the wife of John Pickering, born in Salem, baptized there July 29, 1744, died in Richmond, N. H.

Her gravestone stands by the side of her husband's in the graveyard at the middle of the town, in Richmond, and is thus inscribed: —

Mrs.  
Hannah Pickering  
Wife of Mr. John  
Pickering died  
Jan' 5th 1795  
aged 55

Death is a debt to nature due  
Which I have paid & so must you.

Mrs. Pickering was a daughter of Nathaniel and Bethiah (Gardner) Ingersoll of Salem, and an aunt of both Dr. Nathaniel Bowditch and his wife Mary (Ingersoll) Bowditch. Her ancestry includes the following families: Ingersoll, Felton, Coomes, Hasket, Langdon, Gardner, Frier, Orne, Browne, Weld, Clap, Mitchelson, Bushell. See ANCESTRY TABLES <sup>V</sup>/<sub>27</sub>.

<sup>1</sup> Cheshire County, N. H., Deeds, Vol. 19, p. 420.

<sup>2</sup> History of Richmond, N. H., by William Bassett, p. 463.

69-70. V. 30. **William Pickering** [Eunice 60-70. IV. 10], born in Salem, died in Warwick, Mass. A farmer. Residence: Warwick.

William Pickering, as well as his brother John, removed to Richmond, N. H., where, on March 18, 1782, he bought a farm of Silas Gaskill. April 21, 1788, he sold land in Richmond to Jonathan Gaskill. Perhaps about this time he removed to Warwick, Mass., the adjoining town; for, in a deed of land of April 26, 1790, he calls himself of Warwick. He is described in deeds as a "yeoman" and "husbandman."<sup>1</sup>

His granddaughter, Mrs. Lamb of Westborough, Mass., writes as follows, in Dec. 1886:—

"We have no records of grandfather Pickering, but some recollections. Before he was married he followed the sea as a sea captain. He was married at the age of forty, after which he became a farmer and died at the age of seventy from the effects of a cut. He fought in the Revolutionary War. . . . He had twelve children."

69-70. V. 30. **Philadelphia Kimpton**, his wife, born in Richmond, N. H., died in Warwick, Mass.

Mrs. Pickering is said by her granddaughter, Mrs. M. W. S. Clark, of Lynn, Mass., to have been the first white girl born in Richmond.<sup>2</sup>

She was the eldest child of Stephen and Catherine (Boyce) Kimpton, of Richmond. ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{30}$ .

70. V. 31. **Hannah Pickering** [Eunice 60-70. IV. 10], born in Salem, baptized there Feb. 8, 1740-41, died in Salem.<sup>3</sup>

The Salem Gazette of Tuesday, Oct. 20, 1801, makes the following announcement of her death:—

"In this town Mrs. Hannah Masury aged 60. Her funeral will be this afternoon at 3 o'clock when her friends and relations are requested to attend."

<sup>1</sup> Cheshire County, N. H., Deeds, Vol. 9, p. 181; Vol. 36, p. 243; History of the Town of Richmond, N. H., by William Bassett, pp. 425, 426, 466.

<sup>2</sup> History of the Town of Richmond, by William Bassett, pp. 425-426.

<sup>3</sup> The date of her marriage is given Jan. 9, 1762, while Francis H. Lee and The Driver Family, by Harriet Ruth (Waters) Cooke, p. 446, give it as Dec. 17, 1762.

70. V. 31<sup>1</sup>. *Joseph Foster*, her first husband. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Foster may have been a son of Captain *John Foster* [60. V. 28<sup>1</sup>], of Manchester, Mass., by his first wife, Mary (Norton). ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{31}$ .

70. V. 31<sup>2</sup>. *Joseph Lakeman*, the second husband of Hannah Pickering. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Lakeman probably died before Jan. 3, 1769, for on this date administration on his estate was granted to his widow. Jan 1, 1770, Captain David Masury and Mrs. Hannah Masury presented the inventory of Joseph Lakeman's estate, which amounted to £163 18s.<sup>1</sup>

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{31}$ .

70. V. 31<sup>3</sup>. *David Masury*, the third husband of Hannah Pickering. A mariner. Residence: Salem.

Captain Masury died on a voyage to the West Indies.<sup>2</sup>

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{31}$ .

70. V. 32. *Abigail Pickering* [Eunice 60-70. IV. 10], born in Salem, baptized there June 12, 1743, died in Salem.

The particulars of her death are given in the following account taken from the Salem Register of Wednesday, March 30, 1808.

"In this town widow Abigail Baldwin aged 65. by taking arsenic prepared to destroy rats and unguardedly left in the house. Funeral this afternoon at 4 o'clock—friends and relatives are requested to attend."

Mrs. Baldwin made her will March 28, 1808, and it was proved April 18, 1808. She left her whole estate to her niece, Hannah Pickering [69. VI. 141], of Salem, who lived with her, and who afterwards married Laban Simonds of Warwick, Mass. Their daughter, Mrs. M. W. S. Clark of Lynn, Mass., has still in her possession some of Mrs. Baldwin's effects. Among them are an old desk, an embroidered Pickering coat of arms, and an embroidered landscape.

The estate amounted to \$1015.57 by the inventory of July 18, 1808.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 345, p. 191; Vol. 346, p. 79; files, No. 16,143.

<sup>2</sup> Salem Mercury of Tuesday, Dec. 8, 1789.

<sup>3</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 376, pp. 250-251, 473; files No. 1,574.

70. V. 32<sup>1</sup>. *James Scollay*, the first husband of Abigail Pickering, baptized in Salem, April 8, 1739. A sailmaker. Residence: Salem.

Oct. 23, 1767, James Scollay, of Salem, sailmaker, and his wife Abigail, with others, deed their right in the intestate estate of Hannah Pratt, of Salem, to Ruth Jeffrey.<sup>1</sup>

He was a son of John and Elizabeth (Pratt) Scollay. His ancestry includes the following families: Scollay, Pratt, Cooper, Maverick, Harris, Sherwood. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{25}$ .

70. V. 32<sup>2</sup>. *William Baldwin*, her second husband.

Nothing has been learned about him further than his marriage to Abigail (Scollay) Pickering.

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{V}{25}$ .

70. V. 33. *Mary Pickering* [Eunice 60-70. IV. 10], born in Salem, baptized there June 12, 1743, probably died in Salem.

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Registry of Deeds, Vol. 125, p. 115.

## SIXTH GENERATION.

1. VI. 1. **Thomas Lee** [Lois 1-2. V. 2], born in Salem, baptized there July 26, 1741, died in Cambridge, Mass. A merchant. Residence: Cambridge.

Mr. Lee went to sea in early life, and was known as Captain Thomas Lee. He afterwards established himself as a merchant in Boston; and, having acquired a fortune in his business, he removed to Cambridge. His house in Salem was on the eastern corner of Essex and Crombie streets. In 1803, this house bore the sign of a ship, and was opened as a tavern by Benjamin Crombie.<sup>1</sup>

1. VI. 1. *Judith Colman*, his wife, born in Boston, died in Cambridge.<sup>2</sup>

Mrs. Lee was a daughter of Benjamin and Deborah (Oulton) Colman, of Boston. Her grandmother was a sister of Sir Charles Hobby, and her greatuncle was the Rev. Dr. Benjamin Colman, of the Brattle Street Church, Boston. Her ancestry includes the following families: Colman, Hobby, Oulton. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{I}$ .

1-2. VI. 2. **Joseph Lee** [Lois 1-2. V. 2], born in Salem, baptized there May 13, 1744,<sup>3</sup> died in Boston. A merchant. Residence: Boston.

Mr. Lee was obliged, by the death of his father, to go to sea. At the age of thirteen he made his first voyage; and in due time he rose to the

<sup>1</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. IV. p. 79.

<sup>2</sup> The Columbian Centinel of Wednesday, Feb. 11, 1807, announces her death as having taken place on Monday morning; the Salem Gazette of Feb. 13, 1807, chronicles her death; the Cambridge Town Records have her death recorded as Feb. 16, 1807.

<sup>3</sup> This date of baptism is taken from "Baptisms of the First Church in Salem," by Dr. Henry Wheatland, Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VIII. p. 155. The date of his birth is given by Colonel Henry Lee as May 22, 1744.

command of a vessel in the European and West India trade. He moved from Salem to Beverly, where he became a merchant and shipowner. As his business extended, he took into partnership George Cabot, who had risen in his employ, through the various grades, from a cabin boy of one of his ships, and who later became his brother-in-law. The firm traded with Spain, the West Indies, and the Baltic. During Mr. Lee's residence in Beverly, he was engaged largely in privateering, also in underwriting, privately, risks on the shipping of that town, of Salem, and of Marblehead. He was also a director of an insurance company in Salem. He was active in promoting the various interests of Beverly, though he held no office and took no prominent part in political affairs. He had a turn for mechanics, and especially for naval architecture, and was constantly employed in devising improvements in shipbuilding. His models for ships were adopted by many of the mechanics and merchants of Essex County, and of Boston, and were largely instrumental in bringing about the improvement of construction since introduced, by which superior sailing is combined with increased carrying capacity. In 1807, Mr. Lee removed to Boston. Several years before this time he had retired from the active pursuits of commerce. In Boston, he was chosen a director of various banks and insurance companies, and continued to fill these positions until his advanced years compelled him to retire. In his old age he retained the vigor and activity of youth; his frame remained erect and his step elastic.

Mr. Lee was very fond of gardening, and even in his extreme age could often be seen in the garden of his son-in-law, Judge Jackson, directing the gardener, or, saw in hand, mounted high on a ladder pruning or grafting his pear trees. He was a man of inflexible integrity, of stern moral principle, and an uncompromising adherent to truth and right, regardless of consequences. Firm, decided, and independent, he shaped his actions by his own sense of propriety and duty. He interfered with no man's affairs, and would suffer no man to interfere with his. At the same time he was kindly, and showed an affectionate interest in the concerns and pleasures of his youthful relations. Children were glad to leave their sports to listen to his kind words and to obtain his smile. He and his sons shunned display, declined public office, finding resources in their books, their gardens, and the society of a

large circle of family and friends. He was wont to attribute all the Lee peculiarities to the "Orne kink."

Mr. Lee acquired a fortune, and contributed liberally to literary and charitable institutions. A year before his death he gave twenty thousand dollars to the Massachusetts General Hospital. He was an honorable merchant, a man of modest pretensions, and of exemplary character.<sup>1</sup>

1-2. VI. 2<sup>1</sup>. *Elizabeth Cabot*, the first wife of Joseph Lee, born in Salem, baptized there Feb. 28, 1747-8, died in Beverly, Mass.

Mrs. Lee was admitted as a member of the First Church in Salem, Jan. 7, 1770.

She was the sister of the Hon. George Cabot, her husband's partner in business, and the daughter of Joseph and Elizabeth (Higginson) Cabot. Her father was an eminent merchant of Salem. *Joseph Cabot* [6. VI. 11], and *Francis Cabot* [48. VI. 80] were her brothers; *Francis Higginson* [3. VI. 4<sup>1</sup>], was her uncle; *Marianne Cabot* [48. VII. 264], was her niece; *Elizabeth Perkins Cabot* [2. VIII. 15], is her grandniece, and *Richard Clarke Cabot* [51. IX. 1032], is her great-grandnephew. *Deborah Cabot* [2. VI. 2<sup>2</sup>], her husband's second wife, was her first cousin. Her ancestry includes the following families: Cabot, Orne, Thompson, Higginson, Whitfield, Sheafe, Savage, Symmes, Gardner, Frier, Orne, Browne, Boardman, Bull, Truesdale, Halton. See ANCESTRY TABLES VI.

2. VI. 2<sup>2</sup>. *Deborah Cabot*, the second wife of Joseph Lee, died in Boston.<sup>2</sup>

Her first husband, to whom she was married March 29, 1777, was

<sup>1</sup> History of Beverly, by Edwin M. Stone, pp. 132-134; also Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. XV. pp. 53-58.

<sup>2</sup> The date of her birth is given by Colonel Henry Lee as Jan. 13, 1754, and by Dr. Henry Wheatland in his "Materials for the Genealogy of the Higginson Family"; printed in the Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. V., p. 41, as Jan. 6, 1754. The latter authority also gives the date of her death as Dec. 14, 1820, as does The Gardner Family Records; but several of the family give it as Dec. 4, 1820; and it was announced in the Essex Register of Saturday, Dec. 9, 1820, as follows: "In Boston Mrs. Deborah, wife of Joseph Lee aged 67."



ESTHER (GARDNER) MACKEY.

[3-5. VI. 4.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF MRS. FRANCIS WARREN  
ROCKWELL, OF BROOKLYN, N. Y.

her first cousin, Stephen Cabot, born Nov. 26, 1754. He was a son of Joseph and Elizabeth (Higginson) Cabot. By him she had —

MARY CABOT, born Feb. 4, 1778, and died, unmarried, Aug. 2, 1802.

Mrs. Lee was a delightful old lady, remarkable for her neatness, her good housekeeping, and her fine cooking. She and her two sisters — Sarah, the first wife of Judge John Lowell, and Elizabeth, the wife of the Hon. George Cabot — were all noted for their brightness, wit, and charming manners.<sup>1</sup>

She was a daughter of Stephen and Elizabeth (Cabot) Higginson. *Martha Salisbury Higginson* [44. VII. 217<sup>2</sup>], was her grandniece; *John Amory Lowell* [55. VII. 312], and *George Higginson* [2. VIII. 14], were her grandnephews; *Elizabeth Cabot* [1-2. VI. 2<sup>1</sup>], her second husband's first wife, *Joseph Cabot* [6. VI. 11], and *Francis Cabot* [48. VI. 80], were her first cousins. Her ancestry includes the following families: Higginson, Whitfield, Sheafe, Savage, Symmes, Sewall, Hunt, Dummer, Archer, Mitchell, Boradel, Cabot, Orne, Thompson.

See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{2^1}$ .

2. VI. 3. **Lois Lee** [Lois 1-2. V. 2], born in Salem, baptized there Aug. 24, 1746, died in Salem.

Miss Lee died of rapid consumption, when she was on the point of marrying Mr. John Appleton, of Salem, a descendant of John Appleton the distinguished theologian.

3-5. VI. 4. **Esther Gardner** [Esther 3-5. V. 3], born in Salem, baptized there Jan. 13, 1739-40, died in Salem.

The heliotype here given of Mrs. Mackey is taken from her portrait, which was probably painted by Joseph Badger. It is now in the possession of Mrs. Francis W. Rockwell [4. X. 67], of Brooklyn, N. Y. Another portrait of her is in the possession of her great-great-grandson, William Sutton Abbott.

3. VI. 4<sup>1</sup>. **Francis Higginson**, her first husband, probably born in Salem. Residence: Salem.

<sup>1</sup> Colonel Henry Lee.

Mr. Higginson was a son of John and Esther (Cabot) Higginson. *Elizabeth Cabot* [1-2. VI. 2<sup>1</sup>] was his niece, *Joseph Cabot* [6. VI. 11], and *Francis Cabot* [48. VI. 80], were his nephews; *Marianne Cabot* [48. VII. 264], was his grandniece; *Elizabeth Perkins Cabot* [2. VIII. 15], is his great-grandniece, and *Richard Clarke Cabot* [51. IX. 1032], is his great-great-grandnephew. His ancestry includes the following families: Higginson, Whitfield, Sheafe, Savage, Symmes, Gardner, Frier, Orne, Browne, Cabot, Orne, Thompson. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{F}$ .

3-5. VI. 4<sup>2</sup>. *Daniel Mackey*, the second husband of Esther Gardner, born in Salem, died in Andover, Mass.<sup>1</sup> A shipmaster. Residence: Salem.

Captain Mackey's first wife, to whom he was married Feb. 7, 1744-5, was Elizabeth Hicks. She was a daughter of Major Joshua and Martha (Derby) Hicks, of Salem. She was born Jan. 14, 1725, and died July 20, 1761. By her he had —

ELIZABETH MACKEY, baptized Aug. 11, 1751. She died young.

The heliotype of Captain Mackey is taken from a portrait of him which was probably painted by Joseph Badger. It is in the possession of Mrs. Francis W. Rockwell [4. X. 67], of Brooklyn, N. Y. Another portrait of him, evidently by the same artist, is in the possession of his great-great-grandson, William Sutton Abbott.

Captain Mackey was a son of William and Margaret (Epes) Mackey, of Salem. His ancestry includes the following families: Mackey, Epes, Read, Symonds, Harlakenden, Boardman. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{F}$ .

5. VI. 5. *Lois Gardner* [Esther 3-5. V. 3], born in Salem, baptized there Nov. 15, 1741, died in Andover, Mass.

The following notice of her marriage appeared in the Essex Gazette of Tuesday, May 25 to June 1, 1773: —

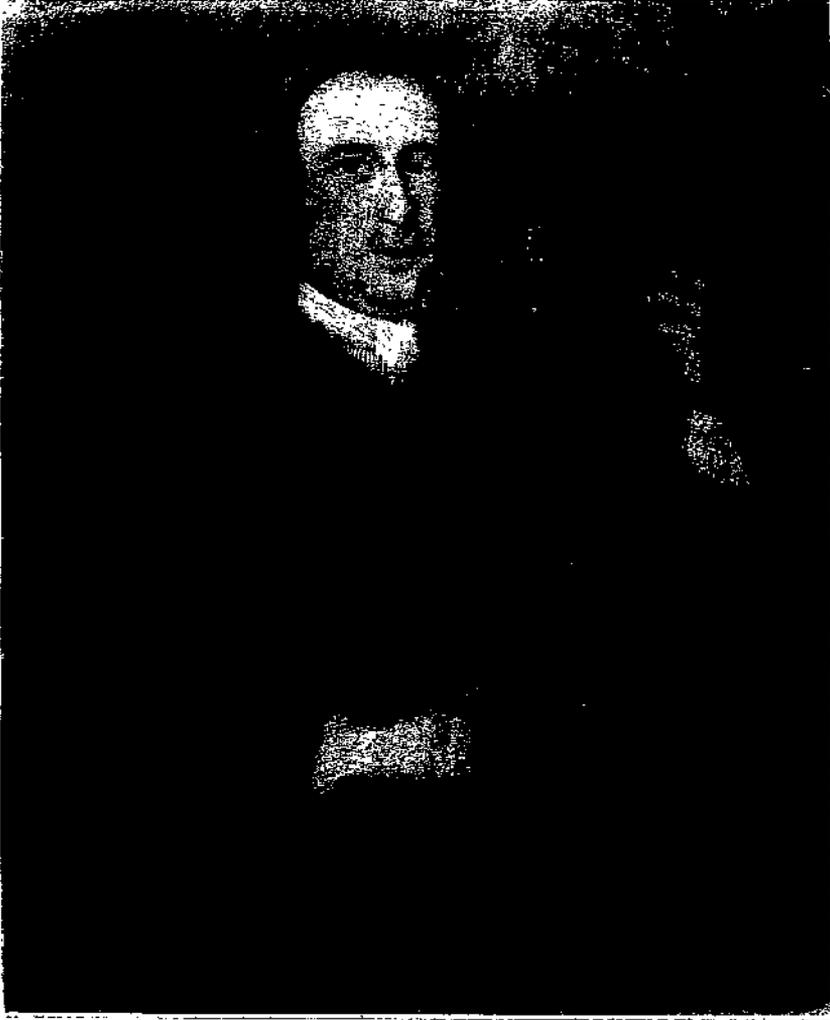
---

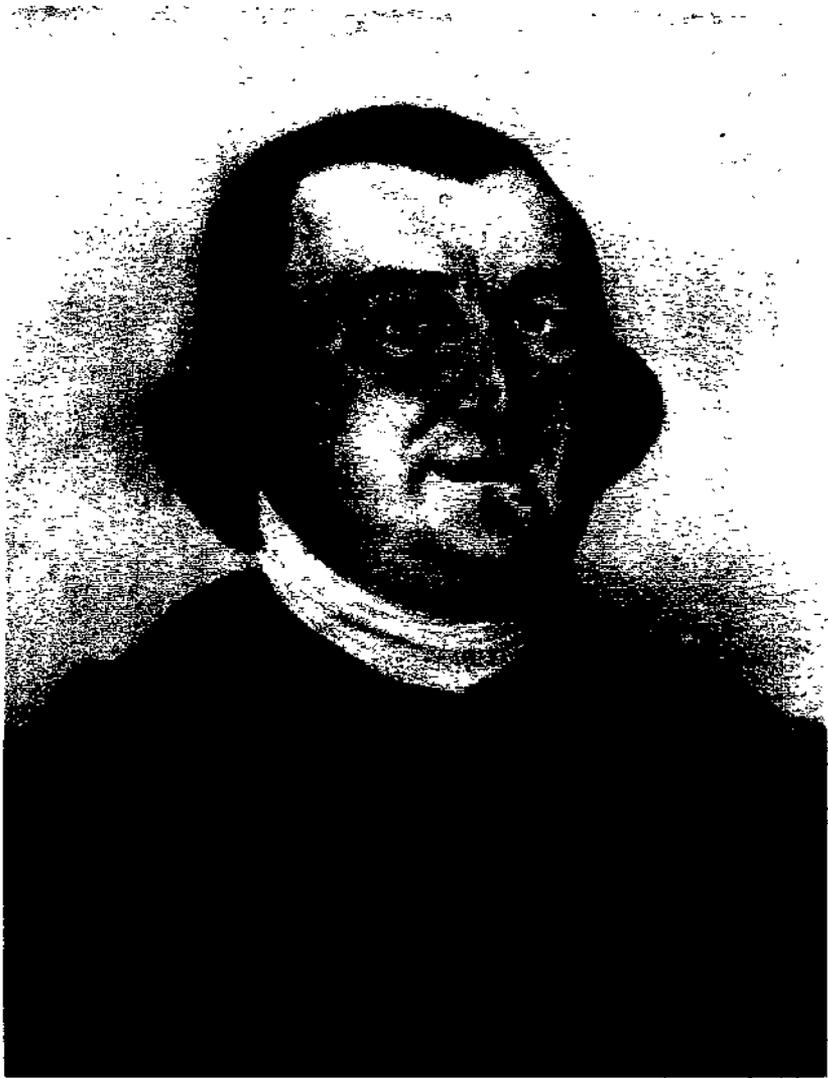
<sup>1</sup> The Salem Gazette of Friday, Aug. 5, 1796, gives his death, "At Andover on the 3d inst. Capt. Daniel Mackey late of this town Æt. 77." His gravestone at Andover is inscribed "Aug. 2, 1796."

DANIEL MACKEY.

[3-5 VI. 4]

FROM THE PORTRAIT NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF MRS. FRANCIS WARREN  
ROCKWELL, OF BROOKLYN, N. Y.





THOMAS BARNARD.

[5. VI. 6.]

FROM THE PASTEL PORTRAIT NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF THE NORTH  
CHURCH AT SALEM, MASS.

“Last Evening the Reverend Mr. THOMAS BARNARD, Jun., Pastor of the North Church in this Town, was married to Miss LOIS GARDNER, a Lady possessed of a Fortune of upwards of Two Thousand Pounds Lawful Money, and second Daughter of SAMUEL GARDNER, Esq.; late an eminent Merchant of this Place, deceased.”

Mrs. Barnard is said to have worked the Gardner coat of arms of which an illustration is given facing page 11.

5. VI. 5. *Thomas Barnard*, her husband, born in Newbury, Mass., died in Salem, of apoplexy. A minister. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Barnard, H. C. 1766, received the degree of D.D. from Brown University, and from the University of Edinburgh in 1794. He was also a Fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. He studied for the ministry under the Rev. Dr. Samuel Williams, of Bradford, Mass., and preached for a short time at Newbury, Mass.

Dr. Barnard came of a family distinguished for its clergymen, being of the fourth generation of that profession in a direct line. His father, the Rev. Thomas Barnard (H. C. 1732), the able preacher of the First Church, was stricken with paralysis in the spring of 1770, and his son was employed to supply his father's pulpit, which he did so acceptably to many of the parish, that there was a strong desire to make him his father's colleague. But there was no unanimity, and Mr. Asa Dunbar was chosen colleague by a majority of two votes. The result was the formation of the North Church Society, and Thomas Barnard, Jr., was chosen its pastor, Aug. 20, 1772. He was ordained Jan. 13, 1773. The new society was composed largely of men of wealth and influence. For nearly forty-two years Dr. Barnard continued its minister, and during this long period he had no assistant. He was a popular preacher, a respectable scholar, and a wise counsellor. He preached before the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company in 1789, before the convention of Congregational ministers in 1793, and he delivered the Dudleian lecture sermon in Cambridge in 1795. He was also chosen to deliver sermons on many other occasions; and he took part at ordinations and meetings of charitable institutions, and preached on days of public observance. Many of his sermons were printed; and

his discourse on the death of Washington was published by the especial desire of the town.

Dr. Barnard was a whole-hearted man who loved his kind. Men of diverse tastes and varying degrees of culture found themselves drawn to him, won by his genial, sympathetic, and comprehensive manliness. He evoked in others the spirit that animated himself. He was a reconciler of quarrels, not by studied compromises, but by native courtesy and magnanimity. In his religious views Dr. Barnard was liberal; and his society had had such teaching, that it was ready after his death to take its place among the churches known as Unitarian. Tradition states that on one occasion a parishioner said, "Dr. Barnard, I never heard you preach a sermon upon the Trinity," to which he replied, "And you never will."

When the Revolutionary War broke out, he was only twenty-seven years old. Many of the members of his church were inclined to be loyalists, and he himself leaned to the side of concession. He even went so far as to sign the complimentary address to Governor Hutchinson; but he afterwards joined the party of resistance with no doubtful devotion, and publicly recalled some of the expressions of opinion to which he had subscribed. He seems to have done all this with such frankness and fearlessness as to have put his honesty and patriotism beyond question, and to have retained the friendship of men of both sides,—even of men whom the Revolution had divided from each other. On the occasion of Colonel Leslie's being prevented from crossing the North Bridge, Dr. Barnard was conspicuous in his successful efforts to prevent bloodshed. On the approach of Leslie's force, he dismissed the congregation and hastened to the bridge. Accosting the British officer, who stood baffled and exasperated before the raised draw, he remonstrated with him so successfully that the threat of firing on the people across the river was abandoned.

The Rev. John Prince, of the First Church of Salem, preached a sermon before the North Church Society, Oct. 16, 1814, on the occasion of Dr. Barnard's death.

There is a wax profile of Dr. Barnard at the Essex Institute, and a similar one is owned by J. Orne Green, M.D. [10. VIII. 118]. The engraving of Dr. Barnard in "The First Centenary of the North Church" is



THE HOUSE OF THOMAS BARNARD AT SALEM, MASS.,  
BUILT IN 1740.

[S. VI. 5.]

probably taken from the wax profile at the Essex Institute. This society has also a quaint full length silhouette of him. The North Church Society of Salem has a portrait of Dr. Barnard done in pastel, which was given to it by the Bridges family. The heliotype we give was taken from this picture.

Dr. Barnard's house, a heliotype of which is also given, was built by Judge Timothy Lindall, in 1740, and was once occupied by the King's collector. It is situated on the south side of Essex Street, and numbered three hundred and ninety-three. The land belonging to the house once extended to Warren Street and contained about an acre. Dr. Barnard had a beautiful garden, which was kept in fine order; and he dealt out his flowers with a liberal hand to the girls and boys, especially on holidays, for he was very fond of children. After his death the place was sold to Mr. Andrews, whose family still own it.<sup>1</sup>

Dr. Barnard was a son of the Rev. Thomas and Mary (Woodbridge) Barnard, of Salem. His ancestry includes the following families: Barnard, Marvin, Price, Wood, Martyn, Holyoke, Stockton, White, King, Swift, Capen, Woodbridge, Dudley, Jones, Gerrish, Lowell, Sewall, Hunt, Dummer, Archer. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{4}$ .

5. VI. 6. **George Gardner** [Esther 3-5. V. 3], born in Salem, baptized there July 24, 1743, died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Gardner made his will June 22, 1771, and it was proved Feb. 7, 1774. After certain private bequests, he left the remainder of his estate to his brother, Weld Gardner, and to the heirs of his body; but, in failure of such heirs, then to the town of Salem £400, for the poor; £1333 to Harvard College, for the education of poor scholars; and £2000 to the Marine Society of Salem. His brother, Weld Gardner, was named as his executor.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Annals of the American Pulpit, by William B. Sprague, Vol. VIII. pp. 16-18; obituaries in the Salem Gazette of Tuesday, Oct. 4, 1814, and in The Salem Register of October, 1814; The American Biographical Dictionary, by William Allen, p. 65; The First Centenary of the North Church, and Society in Salem, p. 13, *et seq.*; Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. IV. p. 274; Record Book of Francis H. Lee, and the Salem Observer.

<sup>2</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 350, pp. 107-108; files, No. 10,616.

5. VI. 7. **Weld Gardner** [Esther 3-5. V. 3], born in Salem, baptized there Dec. 8, 1745, died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.<sup>1</sup>

A notice of Mr. Gardner's death in the Salem Gazette of Nov. 3, 1801, says he died "in this town yesterday in the 56<sup>th</sup> year of his age," and speaks of him as a merchant and as a son of the late Samuel Gardner, Esq. It adds that by his death the town of Salem received the legacies, enumerated above, under his brother George Gardner's will.

Weld Gardner lived in what had once been his father's house, in company with his first cousin, Captain Thomas Lee.<sup>2</sup>

5. VI. 8. **Henry Gardner** [Esther 3-5. V. 3], born in Salem, baptized there Oct. 18, 1747, died in Malden, Mass. A merchant. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Gardner, H. C. 1765, was for many years a merchant in Salem. He was a loyalist during the Revolution, and was one of those who signed the address to General Gage on his arrival in 1774. The last six years of his life were spent in Malden with the Rev. *Aaron Green* [10. VI. 27], who administered upon his estate, Nov. 11, 1817. His remains and those of his wife were buried in the tomb of the Hon. John Osborne, in the Granary Burying Ground in Boston.<sup>3</sup>

5. VI. 8. *Sarah Turner*, his wife, born in Salem, baptized there May 3, 1747, died in Boston.

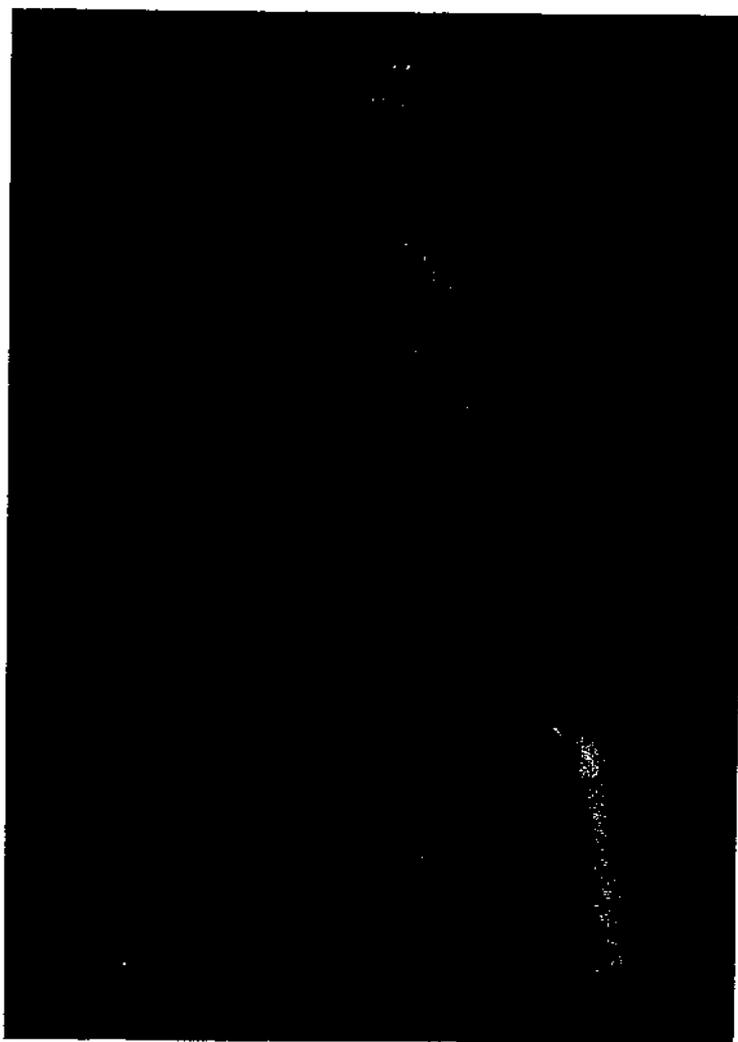
Mrs. Gardner was admitted a member of the First Church, July 22, 1770. She was buried in the tomb of the Hon. John Osborne, in the Granary Burying Ground, Boston.

Her sister, Mary Turner, married Daniel Sargent, of Boston, the ancestor of *William Story Sargent* [26. IX. 415] and *George Amory Sargent* [12. X. 161]; and her aunt, Mary Turner, married Ebenezer Bowditch,

<sup>1</sup> The First Centenary of the North Church and Society in Salem, p. 205, gives the date of his death as Nov. 6; but the Salem Gazette, of Nov. 3, states that he died "yesterday."

<sup>2</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VI. p. 107.

<sup>3</sup> The First Centenary of the North Church and Society in Salem, p. 205; The American Loyalists, by Lorenzo Sabine, p. 316.



ELIZABETH (GARDNER) DABNEY.

[5-5d. VI. 9]

FROM THE PORTRAIT NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF MISS FIDELIA BRIDGES,  
OF CANAAN, CONN.

of Salem, the ancestor of *J. Ingersoll Bowditch*, (44. VIII. 463). She was a daughter of John and Mary (Osborne) Turner, of Salem. Her ancestry includes the following families: Turner, Hill, Roberts, Kitchen, Saunders, Weld, Clap, Mitchelson, Bushell, Osborne, Davis, Woodbury. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{5}$ .

5-5<sup>d</sup>. VI. 9. *Elizabeth Gardner* [Esther 3-5. V. 3], born in Salem, baptized there June 3, 1750, died in Andover, Mass.

She is said to have been very beautiful. There is a portrait of her done in pastel now in possession of her granddaughter, Miss Fidelia Bridges of Canaan, Conn. The heliotype here given is from this picture. Her will, made June 4, 1832, and proved May 20, 1834, mentions the grandchildren of her late son, Nathaniel G. Dabney; daughter Fidelia, wife of Captain John Endicott; her son, Henry Gardner Bridges, and her daughter Elizabeth Stevens.<sup>1</sup>

5-5<sup>d</sup>. VI. 9<sup>i</sup>. *Nathaniel Dabney*, her first husband, born probably in Boston, died at sea. An apothecary. Residence: Salem.

Dr. Dabney's business advertisement appears in the *Essex Gazette* of July 23, 1771, and of May 4, 1773. The advertisement of the latter date is long, and shows a cut of the bust of Hippocrates on a pedestal. The identical bust and pedestal which stood in front of his shop is now in the possession of the Essex Institute. The advertisement begins as follows:

"Nathaniel Dabney Informs his customers in Town and Country that among his large Assortment of Drugs, Medicines and Groceries, which he has just received by the Captains Calef, Folgier, Ackworth, from London, and to be sold at his Shop at the Head of Hippocrates in Salem, . . ."

Mr. Dabney was a loyalist at the time of the Revolution, and fled to Halifax, and afterwards to England and France. On returning to America, he was lost at sea. His death probably occurred before June 7, 1784, for on this date administration on his estate was granted to his widow.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 409, p. 129; files, No. 26,332.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, Vol. 357, p. 38; files, No. 6,990.

Dr. Dabney was a son of Charles and Elizabeth (Gardner) Dabney of Boston. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{81}$ .

5<sup>d</sup>. VI. 9<sup>2</sup>. *James Bridges*, the second husband of Elizabeth Gardner, born in Andover, Mass., died in Andover. A farmer. Residence: Andover.

Mr. Bridges' granddaughter, Miss Fidelia Bridges, writes that he was an only son with nine sisters, and that he inherited the paternal estate which had been held by the Bridges family for two hundred years. Miss Bridges has a number of old family papers, besides several interesting family heirlooms. Mr. Bridges appears to have been a gentleman farmer. His widow administered upon his estate, Feb. 1, 1790, and at the same time was appointed guardian of his two children.<sup>1</sup>

He was the son of Moody and Naomi (Frye) Bridges of Andover.<sup>2</sup> His ancestry includes the following families: Bridges, Howe, Dane, Marston, Moody, Bradbury, Perkins, Morse, Sawyer, Frye, Aslett, Ayer, Farnum, Sibborns, Haskell, Tybbot, Graves. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{81}$ .

5<sup>d</sup>. VI. 9<sup>3</sup>. *Ebenezer Stevens*, the third husband of Elizabeth Gardner, born in Andover, Mass., died in Andover. A farmer. Residence: Andover.

In his will of April 13, 1818, which was proved Feb. 20, 1821, he calls himself yeoman, and speaks of his wife and daughter Elizabeth.<sup>3</sup>

He was probably a son of Jacob Stevens, of Andover, who married Tabitha Farnum, Dec. 7, 1748. ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{81}$ .

6. VI. 11. *Rebecca Orne* [Timothy 6-7. V. 4], born in Salem, baptized there July 31, 1748, died in Salem.

Mrs. Cabot was admitted a member of the First Church, Salem, April 2, 1769.<sup>4</sup>

Her portrait, taken when a child, was painted by Joseph Badger. A heliotype of it is here given. This picture, with the pictures of her sister,

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 360, pp. 368, 369; files, No. 3,300.

<sup>2</sup> For some account of the Bridges Family, see Historical Sketches of Andover, Mass., by Sarah Loring Bailey, pp. 110, 111; also pedigree in the New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol. VIII. p. 252.

<sup>3</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 397, p. 145; files, No. 26,325.

<sup>4</sup> Records of the First Church Salem.

REBECCA (ORNE) CABOT.

[6. VI. 11.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY JOSEPH BADGER, PAINTED ABOUT 1758, NOW IN  
THE POSSESSION OF THE HEIRS OF THE LATE MRS. WILLIAM GERDON  
SALTONSTALL, OF BOSTON.





JOSEPH CABOT.

[6. VI. 11]

FROM A MINIATURE NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF FRANCIS HENRY LEE,  
ESQ., OF SALEM, MASS.



THE HOUSE OF JOSEPH CABOT, SALEM, MASS.  
BUILT ABOUT 1745.

[6 VI II]

mother, father, and grandmother, came into the possession of her grandson, Joseph S. Cabot, of Salem, whose widow a few years ago gave them to the late Mrs. William G. Saltonstall [1. IX. 12]. They are now in the possession of Mrs. Saltonstall's children.

Rebecca Orne's marriage was announced in the Essex Gazette of Aug. 2 to 9, 1768, as follows:—

"On Thursday Evening last, Mr. JOSEPH CABOT, of this Town, was married to Miss REBECCA ORNE, eldest Daughter of Mr. TIMOTHY ORNE, late an eminent Merchant of this Place."

6. VI. 11. *Joseph Cabot*, her husband, born in Salem, baptized there Jan. 26, 1745–6, died in Salem. Residence: Salem.

He was called Captain Cabot, and was probably a shipmaster. There is a small miniature of him, from which the heliotype here given was taken. It is now in the possession of Francis H. Lee [1. IX. 9]. We also give a heliotype of his house, situated on Essex Street, Salem, since owned by Judge William C. Endicott. It was built for his father by a strolling English architect, who built at the same time the Pickman house and the Governor Gage house.<sup>1</sup>

Captain Cabot was a son of Joseph and Elizabeth (Higginson) Cabot, of Salem. *Elizabeth Cabot* [1–2. VI. 2<sup>1</sup>] was his sister; *Francis Cabot* [48. VI. 80] was his brother; *Francis Higginson* [3. VI. 4<sup>2</sup>] was his uncle; *Marianne Cabot* [48. VII. 264] was his niece; *Elizabeth Perkins Cabot* [2. VIII. 15] is his grandniece; *Richard Clarke Cabot* [51. IX. 1032] is his great-grandnephew; and *Deborah Cabot* [2 VI. 2<sup>2</sup>] was his first cousin. His ancestry includes the following families: Cabot, Orne, Thompson, Higginson, Whitfield, Sheafe, Savage, Symmes, Gardner, Frier, Orne, Browne, Boardman, Bull, Truesdale, Halton. See ANCESTRY TABLES ¶.

6. VI. 12. *Timothy Orne* [Timothy 6–7. V. 4], born in Salem, baptized there May 6, 1750, died in Danvers, Mass. A merchant. Residence: Salem.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Francis H. Lee.

<sup>2</sup> His death is given in the Salem Gazette of Tuesday, Dec. 29, 1789, as "last Saturday," which was the 26th. It is given as Dec. 23, 1789, in The New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol. V. p. 53.

Mr. Orne, H. C. 1768, like his father, became a merchant. During the troublesome times of the Revolution, in common with those of many of his connections, his sympathies were with the mother country, and he suffered accordingly. In 1774, he was one of those who signed the address to General Gage; and in 1775, he was seized by a mob with the intention of tarring and feathering him; they, however, were persuaded to relinquish their design.<sup>1</sup>

His will, in which he is styled gentleman, was made Dec. 22, 1789, and proved Feb. 1, 1790.<sup>2</sup>

6. VI. 12. *Elizabeth Pynchon*, his wife, born probably in Salem, died in Roxbury, Mass.

Her miniature, which was painted by Verstille, has been heliotyped for this work. It was formerly in the possession of her grandson, the late Dr. William Mack, of Salem.

Mrs. Orne was a daughter of William and Catherine (Sewall) Pynchon, of Salem.<sup>3</sup> Her ancestry includes the following families: Pynchon, Wyllis, Hubbard, Rogers, Crane, Brewer, Morrill, Chauncy, Eyre, Strong, Ford, Sewall, Hunt, Dummer, Archer, Mitchell, Boradel, Cabot, Orne, Thompson. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{8}$ .

6. VI. 13. *Sarah Orne* [Timothy 6-7. V. 4], born in Salem, baptized there June 7, 1752, died in Salem.

The following notice of her marriage is taken from the Essex Gazette of Tuesday, July 24 to 31, 1770: —

“MR. CLARK GAYTON PICKMAN, Merchant, SON of the Hon. BENJAMIN PICKMAN, Esq; was last Tuesday married to Miss SARAH ORNE, Daughter of Mr. TIMOTHY ORNE, deceased, late an eminent Merchant in this Place; — a young Lady with a Fortune of about Three Thousand Pounds Sterling.”

<sup>1</sup> The American Loyalists, by Lorenzo Sabine, p. 498; New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol. V. p. 53.

<sup>2</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 360, p. 374; files, No. 20,106.

<sup>3</sup> For an account of the Pynchon Family, see The Heraldic Journal, Vol. II. pp. 49-53.

ELIZABETH (PYNCHON) ORNE.

[6. VI. 12.]

FROM THE MINIATURE BY VERSTILLI, FORMERLY IN THE POSSESSION OF  
THE LATE WILLIAM MACK, M.D., OF SALEM, MASS.





THE HOUSE OF CLARK GAYTON PICKMAN AT  
SALEM, MASS., BUILT IN 1764.

[6. VI. 13.]



LOIS (ORNE) PAINE.

[7. VI. 15.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY JOSEPH BADGER, PAINTED ABOUT 1758, NOW IN THE  
POSSESSION OF THE HEIRS OF THE LATE MRS. WILLIAM GURDON  
SALTONSTALL, OF BOSTON.

6. VI. 13. *Clark Gayton Pickman*, her husband, born in Salem, baptized there Aug. 3, 1746, died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.<sup>1</sup>

We give a heliotype of the mansion-house built and occupied by him. It is still standing on the corner of Washington and Lynde streets, Salem; but it has undergone several alterations since his time.

He was a son of the Hon. Benjamin and Love (Rawlins) Pickman, of Salem. *William Pickman* [50. VI. 85] was his brother, and *Mary Toppan Pickman* [6. IX. 72<sup>d</sup>] was his grandniece. His ancestry includes the following families: Pickman, Hardy, Lindall, Veren, Rawlins, English. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{9}$ .

7. VI. 15. *Lois Orne* [Timothy 6-7. V. 4], born in Salem, baptized there Feb. 22, 1756, died in Worcester, Mass.

The following notice of her marriage appeared in the *Essex Gazette* of Tuesday, Sept. 21 to 28, 1773:—

“Last Week Doctor WILLIAM PAINE, of Worcester, to Miss LOIS ORNE, Daughter of Mr. TIMOTHY ORNE, late an eminent Merchant of this Place, deceased; a young Lady in Possession of a large Fortune.”

The following account of Mrs. Paine is printed in the *Chandler Genealogy*:—

“She was a young lady with a fortune of £3000. The service of plate, magnificent for our own, as well as ancient days, which Miss Orne brought into the Paine family, attest alike the solidity of her fortune and the lustre of her descent, bearing upon it the oft repeated broad shield and ducal coronet of the princely house of Horn. Her miniature was at the house of Joseph S. Cabot, Esq. Salem, Mass.”<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The date of his death is given in *The First Centenary of the North Church and Society in Salem*, p. 214, as Nov. 29, 1781. This was Thursday, and the *Salem Gazette* of Thursday, Dec. 6, 1781, states that he died “last Friday” which was Nov. 30. It is erroneously given as Nov. 30, 1789, in *A Genealogy of the Descendants of John, Christopher, and William Osgood*, by Ira Osgood, p. 89.

<sup>2</sup> *The Chandler Family*, by Dr. George Chandler, p. 240, gives the date of her marriage as “at Salem Mass 23 Sept. 1773, — Lincoln’s Papers say, m. at Hampton Fall, 23 Sept. 1773, — by license from His Excellency J. Wentworth.” Others give it as Sept. 21 and Sept. 22, 1773.

The heliotype here given is taken from her portrait, which was painted when she was a child by Joseph Badger. It is now in the possession of the children of her great-granddaughter, Mrs. William G. Saltonstall, of Boston.

7. VI. 15. *William Paine*, her husband, born in Worcester, Mass., died in Worcester. A physician. Residence: Worcester.

Dr. Paine, H. C. 1768, on graduating began the study of medicine with Dr. Edward A. Holyoke, of Salem. In 1771, he entered upon the practice of his profession in Worcester, in connection with the business of an apothecary. About the year 1772, he, with two other physicians, formed the firm of Paine & Co., and opened the first apothecary-shop in Worcester County. He retired from this business soon after the breaking out of the Revolution. His family were friendly to the crown; and he himself was a decided loyalist, and took an active part in the politics of the day.

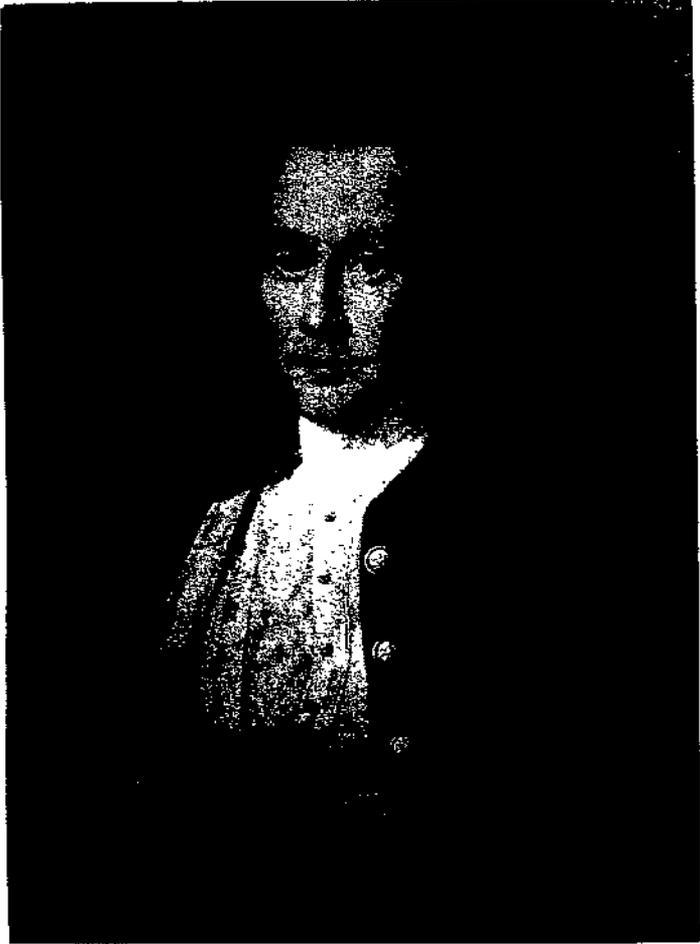
About 1774, Dr. Paine went to England, and returned to this country just after the war had begun. Finding that he was denounced as an absentee and loyalist, he re-embarked for Liverpool, deciding to devote himself to the study of medicine abroad. After a year's attendance at the hospitals, having received the degree of M.D. from the Marischal College, Aberdeen, he was appointed to the office of apothecary to the English forces in America. He held this position till 1781, when he returned to England, and also visited the continent. In 1782, he returned to America, as physician to the English army, and remained on duty at Halifax till the reduction of the forces in 1783, when he was discharged on half-pay.

In the summer of 1784, Dr. Paine took possession of La Tête, an island in Passamaquoddy Bay, which had been granted to him by the English government for his services in the war. He built a house on the island; but his wife could not content herself in such a solitary abode, and he soon afterwards removed to St. John, and practised his profession there. He was elected a member of the Assembly of New Brunswick, was appointed clerk of the House, and filled a number of other offices. But when the act of banishment was repealed, in the summer of 1787, he went to Salem.

WILLIAM PAINE.

[7- VI 15.]

FROM THE PASTEL PORTRAIT BY EARLE, NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF  
MISS SUSAN TRUMBULL, OF WORCESTER, MASS.



After his father's death in 1793, he returned to Worcester, and continued to live in the paternal mansion till his death. His grandson, the Rev. George S. Paine, of Worcester, writes that Dr. Paine liked to call himself a farmer, and "a great deal of money he spent to keep up the character."

Dr. Paine was one of the founders of the American Antiquarian Society, and its first vice-president. In 1815, he delivered an address before the society at King's Chapel, Boston. This address was printed. He was a Fellow of the Royal Society of Northern Antiquaries of Copenhagen, of the American Society of Arts and Sciences, and of several other societies.

The following letter, dated May 24, 1892, was written by his granddaughter, Mrs. Henry P. Sturgis:—

"He was very particular as to the manners of his grandchildren and they always drank his health every day at dinner with a drop of wine. He was always *first* in the town of Worcester in company with his family, and to the day of his death did not understand that manners and customs had changed, and said to my mother once when she was in a hurry to go to a lecture, 'They will not begin until you get there.' He was buried in the old cemetery on Mechanics street, Worcester, but was removed later to the Rural Cemetery with his wife Lois Orne Paine. Dr. Paine travelled with Lord Winchilsea and his daughter Lady Charlotte Finch in Portugal, as their private physician, and the latter gave him a very handsome engraved silver tea-caddy, a gold boot, and a brush, the two latter for charms to his watch. The caddy is now owned in the Paine family, & the other things are in the Lee family. Dr. Paine was an intimate friend of the Duke of Kent when they were both at Halifax and the tradition in the family is that the Duke kissed Mrs. Rose while a baby.

"The island of La Tête is now uninhabited except by fishermen. I saw one hut on the place.

"Dr. Paine is well remembered in St. John, and when I was there a few years since the Governor of New Brunswick called upon me. I was invited to Government House, Fredericton, and was invited to send Dr. Paine's picture to hang in the Governor's mansion, which I did.

"Dr. Paine was one of the early founders of the Unitarian Church in Worcester, having left The Old South (Orthodox) under the leadership of Dr. Aaron Bancroft."

Several pictures of Dr. Paine are still in existence. His portrait, by Harding, is at the family mansion in Worcester; and a miniature on ivory is now in the possession of his great-grandson, Frederick William Paine, of Brookline, Mass. A pastel, by Earle, representing him as a young man

in court costume, from which the heliotype is taken, is now in the possession of Miss Susan Trumbull, of Worcester, Mass.

Dr. Paine's residence, known as "The Oaks," is now owned by his grandson, the Rev. George Sturgis Paine. It is situated on Lincoln Street, Worcester. It was begun before the Revolution, and finished about 1777-1778. For many years it had more than a local reputation; and its large and beautiful gardens were much visited by lovers of nature. A heliotype of it is here given.<sup>1</sup>

Dr. Paine was a son of Timothy and Sarah (Chandler) Paine, of Worcester. His ancestry includes the following families: Paine, Rainsford, Sunderland, Clark, Clark, Anderson (?), Chandler, Douglas, Mattle, Raymond, Smith, Bourne, Gardiner, Wilemson, King, Ludlam. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{10}$ .

7. VI. 16. Esther Orne [Timothy 6-7. V. 4], born in Salem, baptized there April 16, 1758, died in Salem.<sup>2</sup>

Her descendants, the Misses Clarke, of Chicago, Ill., have several interesting pieces of jewelry and old plate, which belonged to her. Among them is a pair of gold and enamel bracelets set in pearls. The following description of these bracelets was written in June, 1879, by Miss Esther C. Mack [7. VIII. 77]:—

"The bracelets were made in England for grandmother Clarke, and represent my grandfather Clarke, said to be painted with paint from hair. The mate to it represents grandmother and grandfather Clarke, uncle Charles Clarke, aunt Esther, and mother. This is the whole family. Mother is picking flowers. The three dead branches represent the 3 other children who died in infancy."

The following notice of Mrs. Clarke's death appeared in the Salem Register of Thursday, Sept. 28, 1848:—

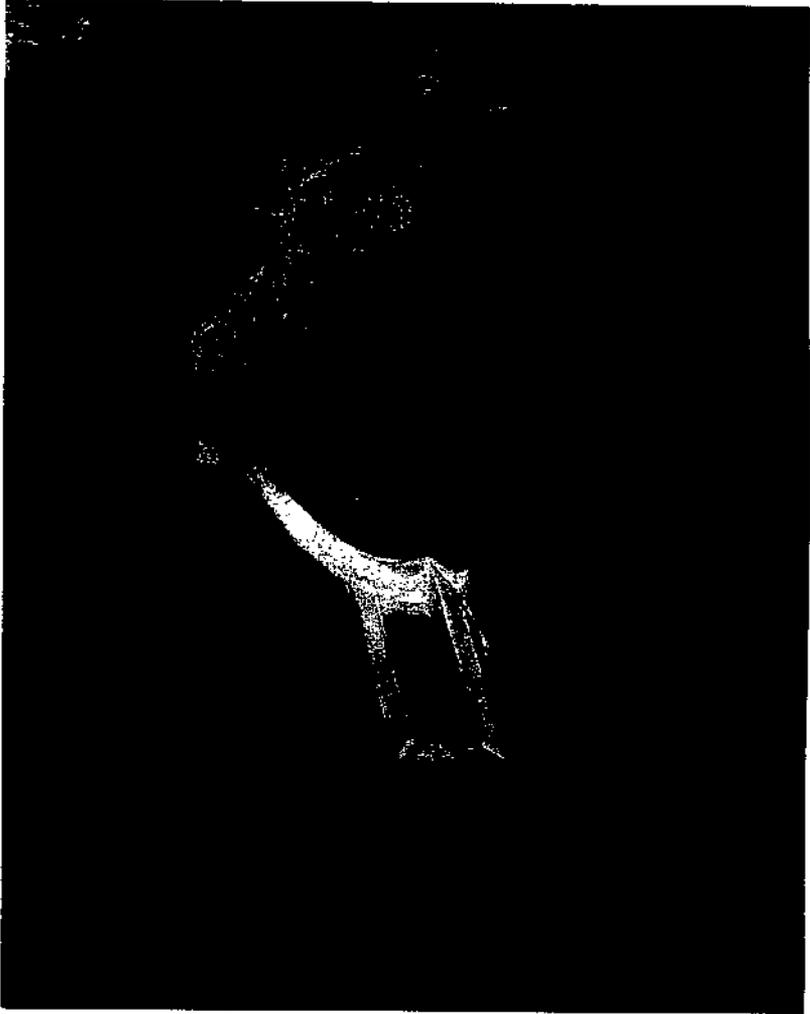
<sup>1</sup> The American Loyalists, by Lorenzo Sabine, Vol. 2, pp. 144-145; The Chandler Family, by George Chandler, pp. 240-242; The Paine Family Records, by H. D. Paine, pp. 57-58, 77-78; and the History of Worcester, Mass., by William Lincoln, 1837, pp. 255, 256.

<sup>2</sup> Francis H. Lee gives the date of her marriage as June 7; while the Nichols Family Records stated it as June 17.

THE HOUSE OF WILLIAM PAINE AT WORCESTER,  
MASS., BUILT ABOUT 1777-78.

[7. VI. 15.]





JOHN CLARKE.

[7. VI. 26.]

[48. VI. 77.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY HENRY SARGENT, PAINTED IN 1798, FORMERLY IN THE  
POSSESSION OF THE LATE WILLIAM MACK, M.D., OF SALEM, MASS.

"25th inst. Madam ESTHER CLARKE aged 90 — a daughter of Timothy Orne of Salem, and the respected and venerable relict of the late venerated and beloved John Clarke, pastor of the First Church in Boston."

The five Orne portraits now in possession of the heirs of Mrs. William G. Saltonstall [1. IX. 12], heliotypes of which appear in this work, were said by the late Dr. William Mack [6. VIII. 54] to have belonged to Esther Orne and to have been sent by her to her sister, Rebecca Cabot.

7. VI. 16. *John Clarke*, the husband of Esther Orne, born in Portsmouth, N. H.,<sup>1</sup> died in Boston. A minister. Residence: Boston.

Dr. Clarke, H. C. 1774, at first engaged in teaching, pursuing during his leisure moments the study of theology. While in college, he gained the respect of his tutors by his strict obedience to the laws, and by his high moral character. On July 8, 1778, he was ordained as the colleague of the Rev. Dr. Charles Chauncy, of the First Church, Boston. He lived on the most intimate terms with Dr. Chauncy for nine years, and then labored alone till April 1, 1798, when, in the midst of his afternoon discourse, he was seized with apoplexy and fell down in his pulpit. He died the next morning at three o'clock.

He possessed such a mild, cheerful temper, and such an easy politeness of manner, that he endeared himself to all his acquaintance. He was always a close student and fond of literary and philosophical researches; but his time was principally devoted to the investigation of every branch of theology, and his sermons bore the marks of penetration, judgment, and elegance.

A particular affection and regard always existed between him and his uncle, Colonel Timothy Pickering. They had been in frequent correspondence from the time Dr. Clarke was in college. The uncle looked upon him as one of his sons, and was proud of his usefulness, attainments, and reputation. Dr. Clarke reciprocated the personal attachment and revered his uncle's character.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol. IX., p. 76, gives the date of his birth as April 13, 1755. The Nichols Family Records and Dr. Henry Wheatland give it as April 20; while Francis Cabot gives it as April 17.

<sup>2</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. III. p. 312.

In announcing his death to his uncle, Timothy Pickering, Timothy Williams [52. VI. 90] writes, April 2, 1798, as follows:—

“A more solemn affecting and distressing scene to the family and all the relations I could not have detailed. Society and mankind will long lament the loss of so much learning urbanity, and good sense. A pure unimpeachable character secured the esteem and approbation of the virtuous and will crown him with glory and happiness in another world”<sup>1</sup>

Dr. Clarke received the degree of D.D. from the University of Edinburgh. His diploma was in the possession of the late Dr. William Mack [6. VIII. 54], of Salem. Dr. Mack had also a miniature of Dr. Clarke, and a portrait of him painted by Henry Sargent in 1798. The latter has been heliographed for this work.

An obituary notice of Dr. Clarke speaks of his death as “an irreparable loss to his profession, to science, to his country and to mankind.”<sup>2</sup>

Dr. Clarke was elected a counsellor of the American Academy, and was a corresponding secretary of the Massachusetts Humane Society. He was the author of “Letters to a Student at the University of Cambridge,” which were several times reprinted. The student to whom these letters were addressed was his cousin, the late John Pickering, LL.D. [58. VI. 109]. In 1799, Dr. Clarke’s sermons were printed in a large octavo volume of about five hundred pages, having as a frontispiece an engraving of the author. Besides those contained in this volume, others of his sermons were printed. One of these is entitled “An answer to the question ‘Why are you a Christian?’” Three editions of this sermon have been published in Boston and three in England.<sup>3</sup>

Dr. Clarke and his wife were second cousins. His number in direct descent is [48. VI. 75]:

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. III. p. 313.

<sup>2</sup> Salem Gazette, Tuesday, April 3, 1798.

<sup>3</sup> Annals of the American Pulpit, by William B. Sprague, Vol. VIII. p. 105-112; Sermons by the late Reverend John Clarke, D.D., Appendix, pp. 1-27; New England Historical Genealogical Register, Vol. IX. pp. 75, 76; The American Biographical Dictionary, by William Allen, pp. 231, 232; and the Columbian Centinel of April 7, 1798.

7. VI. 18. **Samuel Orne** [Timothy 6-7. V. 4], born in Salem, baptized there Jan. 31, 1762, died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Orne graduated from Harvard College in 1781.

The following notice of his death appeared in the Salem Gazette of Tuesday, March 1, 1785:—

“On the 20th. instant, in the 22d year of his age, Mr. SAMUEL ORNE, and on the Thursday following his remains were very respectfully interred. He was youngest son of the deceased Mr. Timothy Orne, late an eminent merchant of this place.”

7. VI. 20. **Mary Diman** [Mary 8-9. V. 6], born in Salem, died in Malden, Mass.

By her father's will she received jointly with her sister, Lois, the orchard land adjoining his garden, with the store and shop thereon, also one half of his household goods. She also had an equal share in the remainder of his property after other bequests had been paid.

8. VI. 21. **James Diman** [Mary 8-9. V. 6], born in Salem, died in Stratham, N. H. A farmer. Residence: Stratham.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Diman, H. C. 1768, is said by his granddaughter, the late Mrs. James Kimball, to have been a merchant of Newburyport and Portsmouth, and finally to have removed to Stratham, where he engaged in farming. Mrs. Kimball spoke of the old Diman house at Stratham as situated in a lovely, romantic spot.

James Diman is spoken of in his father's will as “eldest son of Stratham, N. H.” He was one of the executors of the will.

8. VI. 21. *Esther Merrill*, the wife of James Diman, died in Stratham, N. H.

Her granddaughter, the late Mrs. Kimball, thought that she was born in Salem, that she was an only child, and that the farm on which Mr. and Mrs. Diman lived had been given to Mrs. Diman by her uncle, David Robinson.

<sup>1</sup> Authorities differ as to the date of his death, which is variously given as Nov. 9, Dec. 4, and Dec. 20. The true date is probably Dec. 4, which is given by his granddaughter, the late Mrs. James Kimball.

Mrs. Diman was a daughter of ——— and Esther (Piper) Merrill.  
ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{17}$ .

9. VI. 22. **Eunice Diman** [Mary 8-9. V. 6], born in Salem, died in Salem.

Her brother-in-law, the Rev. Aaron Green, in his diary records: —

“Nov. 14, 1796 My brother and Lady went to Salem to attend y<sup>e</sup> funeral of M<sup>r</sup> Harriden.”

By her father's will she received “five and a half acres of land very advantageously situated for making fish.”

The heliotype here given was taken from a portrait of Mrs. Haraden now in possession of the widow of her nephew Ezra Green, of Lancaster, Mass. It was given to the Green family by Hannah Haraden Ropes more than forty-five years ago.

9. VI. 22<sup>1</sup>. **Thomas Mason**, her first husband, born in Salem, died at sea. A merchant. Residence: Salem.

The heliotype here given was taken from his portrait painted by Joseph Badger, which is owned by Miss Katharine Phillips, of Salem. On the back of the picture it is stated that it was painted at the age of eight years and six months, and that in September, 1775, he started to return home by sea from Charleston, S. C., in company with his cousin, Jonathan Peele, that a violent storm followed, and the vessel was never heard from.

Thomas Mason was the son of Captain Thomas and Preserved (Lambert) Mason. His father was an opulent merchant of Salem. ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{18}$ .

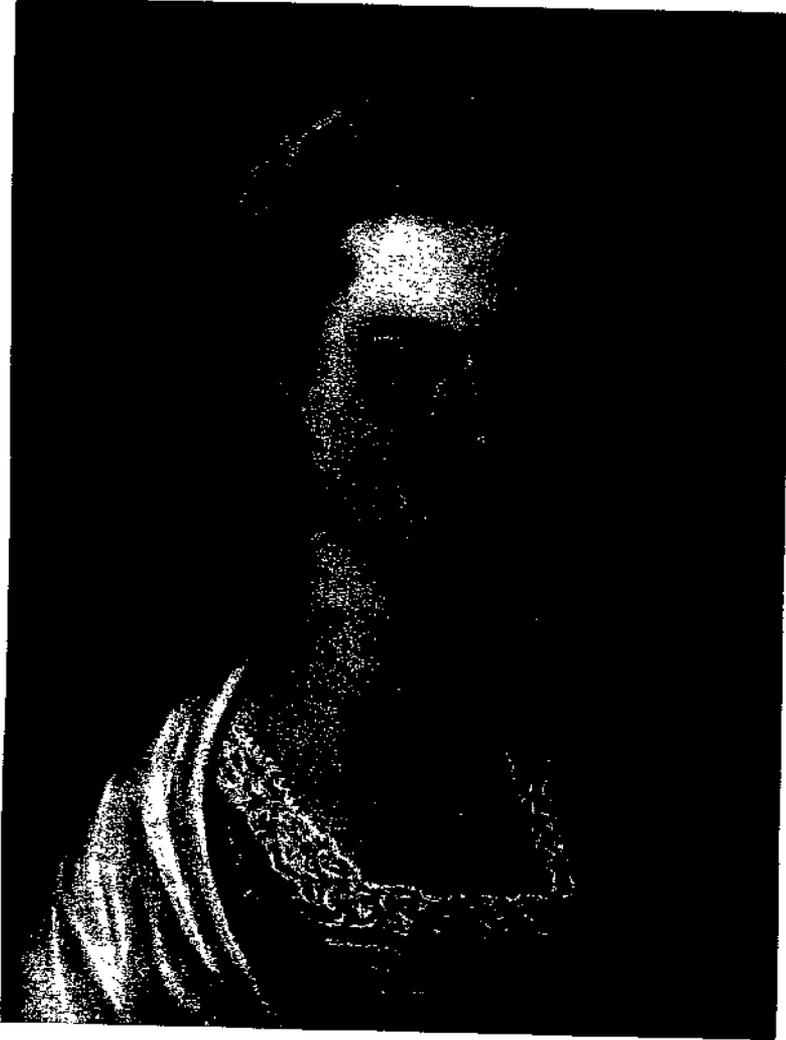
9. VI. 22<sup>2</sup>. **Jonathan Haraden**, the second husband of Eunice Diman, born in Gloucester, Mass., died in Salem, of consumption. A merchant. Residence: Salem.

Captain Haraden was a very brave and noted naval commander during the Revolutionary War. Of all the naval commanders of that day, none were more heroic. He fought some of the most desperate actions, and

EUNICE (DIMAN) MASON.

[9. VI. 22.]

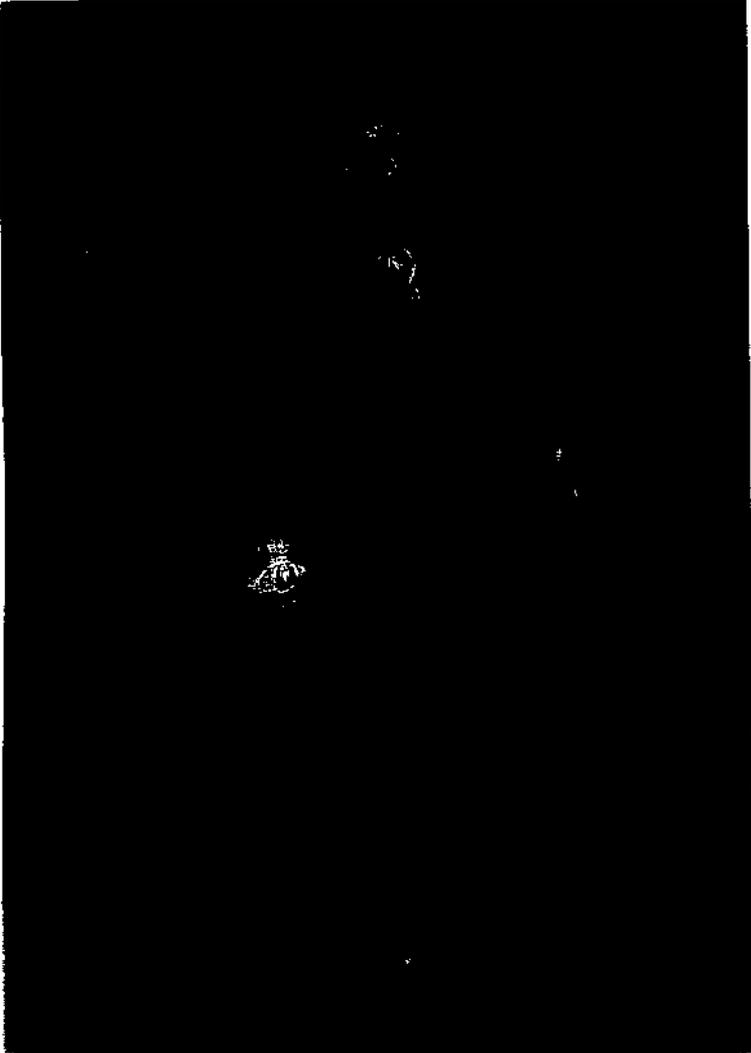
FROM THE PORTRAIT IN THE POSSESSION OF MRS. EZRA GREEN,  
OF LANCASTER, MASS.



THOMAS MASON.

[9. VI. 221.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY JOSEPH BADGER, PAINTED AT THE AGE OF EIGHT  
YEARS AND SIX MONTHS, NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF MISS KATHARINE  
PHILLIPS, OF SALEM, MASS.



achieved some of the most wonderful triumphs which the ocean has ever witnessed. In private life, Captain Haraden was amiable and upright, with a mild temper and gentle manners; but on the quarter-deck, amid the thunder of battle, his energies were displayed. The more imminent the peril, the more perfect was his self-command. He not only knew no fear himself, but he made every one around him equally fearless. This extraordinary power of inspiring his crew rendered him invincible, and made his name one of terror on the ocean. A vivid account of a battle, which occurred while he was in command of the "General Pickering," and from which battle, as usual, he came off victorious, was related by a venerable survivor of the crew.

Silver tankards and cans, with suitable emblems upon them, were presented to him by the owners of the Pickering, and are inscribed with the name of her invincible commander. Some of this silver is now in possession of the heirs of the late *J. Ingersoll Bowditch* [44. VIII. 463]. During the war, Captain Haraden captured more than one thousand guns.

Captain Haraden was of middle size, and of symmetrical proportions, remarkable for personal beauty, as well as inflexible integrity. At the close of the war, Captain Haraden successfully embarked in commerce and in the manufacture of cordage. His fortitude and amiability were apparent to the last moment of his life; and his many virtues endeared him to an extensive circle of friends.

Captain Haraden's first wife, to whom he was married June 8, 1767, was Hannah Deadman, of Salem. By her he had the following children, all baptized at the Tabernacle Church:—

HANNAH HARADEN, born Sept. 1, 1768, baptized July 29, 1770, died June 29, 1845; married Dec. 11, 1787, John Ropes, merchant, of Salem, who was born Jan. 10, 1763, and died July 9, 1828. They had several children.<sup>1</sup>

JONATHAN HARADEN, baptized July 29, 1770, probably died young.

JONATHAN HARADEN, baptized June 21, 1772.

---

<sup>1</sup> Material for a History of the Ropes Family, in Vol. VII. p. 200, of the Essex Institute Historical Collections, in which Hannah Haraden is erroneously called a daughter by his second wife, Eunice Diman.

JOHN HARADEN,       baptized Feb. 20, 1774.  
POLLY HARADEN,     baptized Oct. 15, 1775, and died Sept. 19, 1806. She married,  
Nov. 28, 1802, Thomas Pickman, of Salem.

Captain Haraden's third wife, to whom he was married Oct. 12, 1797, was Mrs. Mary Scallem. They had a daughter:—

LUCY GREGORY HARADEN, who was baptized at the Tabernacle Church Aug. 19, 1798. She is named in her father's will as his youngest daughter.

Captain Haraden's house is still standing on Charter Street, Salem. A heliotype of it is here given. His gravestone is still standing in the Broad Street Burying Ground, Salem.

Captain Haraden, when a lad, came to Salem from Gloucester and learned a trade. He belonged to a family famous for the exploits of its members in the service of the Colony, principally on the sea. His great-uncle, Edward Haraden, was in the Narragansett War, and was at the taking of the Narragansett Fort. His grandfather, Captain John Haraden, was, in 1709, in the service of the Colony as master of a sloop fitted out to capture what was supposed to be a French privateer, and, in 1711, was in an expedition against Canada as a pilot. His uncle, Andrew Haraden, was a man of great bravery, as his recapture of the sloop Squirrel, from the pirates, shows.<sup>1</sup>

Jonathan Haraden was a son of Joseph and Joanna (—) Haraden, of Squam Parish, Gloucester, Mass. *Jonathan Haraden* [28. VII. 156] was his nephew. His ancestry includes the following families: Haraden, Giddings, Lawrence. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{13}$ .

9. VI. 24. Lois Diman [Mary 8-9. V. 6], born in Salem, died in East Cambridge, Mass.

<sup>1</sup> Oration delivered at the request of the City authorities of Salem, July 4, 1842, by Charles W. Upham, pp. 29-31; *The Merchants' Magazine and Commercial Review*, conducted by Freeman Hunt; *Dictionary of American Biography*, by Francis S. Drake, pp. 405, 406; *History of the Town of Gloucester, Cape Ann*, by John J. Babson, pp. 98, 99, 287; an obituary of Captain Haraden in the *Columbian Centinel* of Nov. 30, 1803; and *The Journal and Letters of Samuel Curwen, An American in England, from 1775 to 1783*, Fourth Edition, by George A. Ward, pp. 556-558.

THE HOUSE OF JONATHAN HARADEN AT  
SALEM, MASS.

[9. VI. 22<sup>d</sup>]

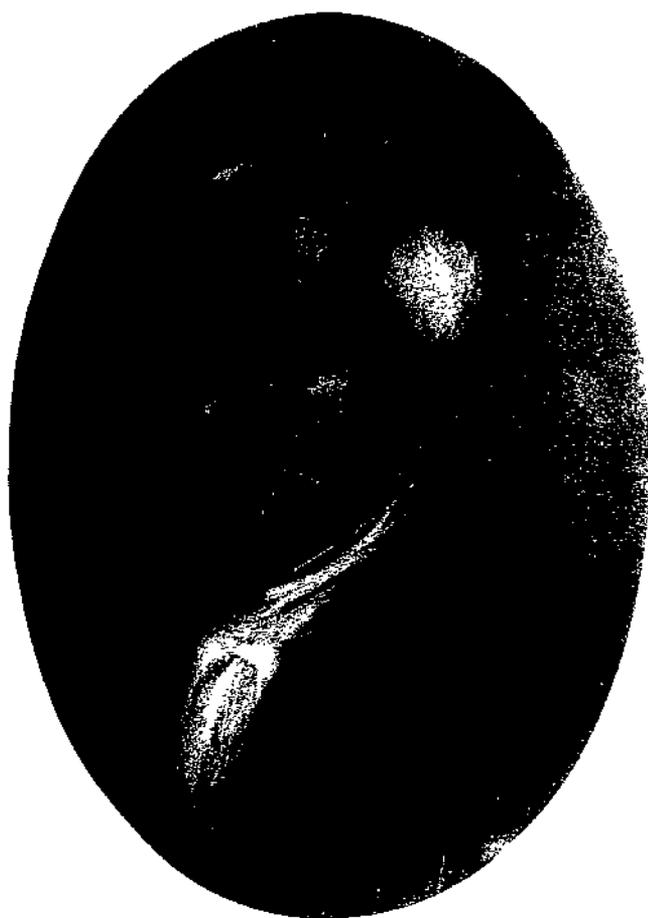


EUNICE (ORNE) GREEN.

[10. VI. 27.]

FROM THE CRAVON PORTRAIT BY CHENEY, NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF  
JOHN ORNE GREEN, M.D., OF BOSTON.





AARON GREEN.

[10. VI. 27.]

FROM THE CRAYON PORTRAIT BY CHENEY, NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF  
JOHN ORNE GREEN, M.D., OF BOSTON.

The crayon portrait of Mrs. Green, of which a heliotype is here given was drawn by Cheney. It is now owned by her grandson, Dr. J. Orne Green, of Boston.

10. VI. 27. *Aaron Green*, her husband, born in Malden, Mass., died in Andover, Mass. A minister. Residence: Malden.

Aaron Green, H. C. 1789, worked on his father's farm until he was nearly eighteen years old, when he began to prepare for college. He taught school during his senior year in college, and also in the winter and spring after graduating. It was at this time that he began a diary, and he continued it daily until Oct. 23, 1853, when he was in his eighty-fifth year. It consists of seven volumes. They are now owned by his grandson, Dr. J. Orne Green of Boston, who has also a crayon portrait of him, which was drawn by Cheney, and which has been reproduced for this work.

Mr. Green records in his diary the following account of his marriage:—

“Went to Lynnfield, and my brother and sister, and Mrs. Vinton and Bernard, where we dined, after which I was married to Miss Eunice Orne. May the most benevolent of Beings follow with y<sup>e</sup> most happy consequences so important a transaction. We returned home to tea—spent a social evening, when the company departed, Mrs. Vinton and her Polly excepted, and are to commence the important business of house keeping. Very pleasant day, snowed some in y<sup>e</sup> evening. Dec. 13, 1796.”

Mr. Green continued to teach, and occasionally to preach, till Sept. 10, 1795, when he was ordained and settled as the colleague of the Rev. Eliakim Willis, D. D., over the church in Malden. Dr. Willis died in 1801, and then the duties of the parish devolved entirely upon Mr. Green. He was not distinguished as a preacher, but his sermons were always serious and practical, as well as earnest and direct. A few of them were printed by special request.

He was for years the chaplain of the Fifth Regiment, and also held the position of chaplain of the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts. He was pre-eminently a peacemaker, and was greatly beloved by a large circle of friends. He resigned his charge, Aug. 8, 1827, after a service of thirty-two years of rare faithfulness. In April of the following year he removed to Andover,

where he filled several positions of trust and responsibility. The married life of Mr. and Mrs. Green covered a period of fifty-seven years.<sup>1</sup>

Aaron Green was a son of Ezra and Mary (Green) Green of Malden. Ezra Green [H. C. 1765], who died in Dover, N. H., aged 101; and *Bernard Green* [9. VI. 94], were his half brothers. His ancestry includes the following families: Green, Green, Cook, Green, Cook, Pratt. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{18}$ .

11. VI. 28. *Bridget Orne* [John 10-11. V. 8], probably born in Lynnfield, Mass., died in New York.

The Rev. Aaron Green in his diary has the following entry:—

“Rose very early and rode to Lynnfield with Mrs. Green to attend Bridget’s wedding where we spent the day. They were married about 4 o’clock in y<sup>e</sup> afternoon. At night we returned home. They went to Boston. We had a good time; an exceedingly hot day. July 3, 1798.”

11. VI. 28. *Perkins Nichols*, her husband, probably born in Amherst, N. H., probably died in New York. A merchant. Residence: New York.

Mr. Nichols was engaged in Boston in the importation of French goods up to about the year 1811, when he removed to New York. He owned a tomb in King’s Chapel Burying Ground, which he sold, Nov. 14, 1810.<sup>2</sup> He presented his native town of Amherst, N. H., with a clock, and the town of Milford with a bell. There is a portrait of Mr. Nichols in the possession of his granddaughter, Mrs. George W. Embree of New York.

Perkins Nichols was a son of General Moses and Hannah (Eaton) Nichols, of Amherst, N. H. General Moses Nichols was a very prominent citizen of Amherst. He was moderator of the town meetings, selectman, justice of the peace, a delegate to the Fifth Congress, which met Dec. 21, 1775, and delegate to a convention held at Concord. He served with distinction in the Revolutionary War, and at the head of his regiment he began the attack upon the Hessians at Bennington in 1777. He moved

<sup>1</sup> Sketch by his son, John Orne Green, M. D., of Lowell, Mass., in *Chaplains of the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts*, pp. 235-238; his obituary in the *Boston Journal*, Saturday, Dec. 24, 1853; and *A Genealogical Sketch of the Descendants of Thomas Green(e), of Malden, Mass.*, by Samuel S. Greene, p. 20.

<sup>2</sup> *Suffolk Registry of Deeds*, Vol. 284, p. 214.



THE HOUSE OF JOHN ORNE AT LYNNFIELD, MASS.

[PL. VI. 29.]

from Reading, Mass., to Amherst, N. H., as early as 1761. He was a physician, and remained in practice until his death in May, 1790.<sup>1</sup>

Perkins Nichols's ancestry includes the following families: Nichols, Eaton, Kendall, Perkins, Eaton. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{17}$ .

11. VI. 29. **John Orne** [John 10-11. V. 8], born in Lynnfield, Mass., died in Lynnfield, of consumption. A farmer. Residence: Lynnfield.

He was a prominent man and bore the titles of colonel and esquire. It is probable that he was a magistrate. He was a selectman in 1805, 1806, 1811, 1812, and the last two years he was the town clerk. His obituary which appeared at the time of his death in the Columbian Centinel of Dec. 5, 1812, describes him as a man of sound judgment, pure morals, and unbending integrity. His gravestone and that of his wife are standing in the Lynnfield graveyard. A heliotype of his house is here given.

11. VI. 29. **Pamela Prentiss**, his wife, born in Reading, Mass., died in Lynnfield, Mass., of consumption.

Mrs. Orne was a daughter of the Rev. Caleb and Pamela (Mellen) Prentiss, of Reading. *Grace Mellen Hopkinson* [52. VIII. 584<sup>2</sup>] is her grandniece, and *Frances Stone Hopkinson* [52. IX. 1070] is her great-grandniece. Her ancestry includes the following families: Prentiss, Dunton, Rand, Edenden, Whitman, Peirce, Whittemore, Scott, Hicks, Sill, Green, Mitchelson, Bushell, Mellen, Pratt, Parmenter, Prentiss, Stanton, Lord, Foster, Hanford, Eglin, Holland. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{18}$ .

12. VI. 30. **Benjamin Mansfield** [Sarah 12-16. V. 9], probably born in Salem.

Nothing further has been learned of him than that he was unmarried at the time of the Revolutionary War.

12-15. VI. 31. **Sarah Mansfield** [Sarah 12-16. V. 9], probably born in Salem, died in Salem. Residence: Salem.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> History of Amherst, N. H., by Daniel F. Secomb, pp. 707 *et seq.*

<sup>2</sup> Her birth is given as May 21, 1736, in the Ropes Bible and in Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. XIV. p. 285, while the Millet Bible gives it as June 21, 1736. Her death is given as Jan. 31, 1811, in Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol.

The following notice of her death appeared in the Salem Gazette of Friday, Feb. 1, 1811:—

“In this town widow SARAH MILLET, aged 74. Her death was sudden, she having just returned in the evening from a visit to her daughter's, and while sitting in her chair; her funeral will be from her late dwelling in Essex-Street, which her friends and relations are requested to attend.”

12-15. VI. 31. *Jonathan Millet*, her husband, probably born in Salem, died in Salem of a fever. A cooper. Residence: Salem.

It is stated in the Ropes Bible that Mr. Millet's house was on the corner of Herbert and Essex Streets, that it was torn down in 1848, and that the eastern end was one hundred and fifty years old.

He was a son of Jonathan and Mary (Henfield) Millet, of Salem. His ancestry includes the following families: Millet, Greenoway, Lister, Babson, Hill, Henfield, Grafton (?), Gardner, Frier, White, Herbert, Baston. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{18}$ .

16. VI. 32. *Seeth Mansfield* [Sarah 12-16. V. 9], probably born in Salem, died in Salem.

16. VI. 32. *John Collins*, her husband, probably born in Salem, died in Salem.

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{26}$ .

17. VI. 35. *Hannah Goodhue* [Martha 17-19. V. 10], probably born in Salem, probably died in Salem.

17. VI. 35. *Robert Proctor*, her husband, born in Salem,<sup>1</sup> probably died in Salem. Residence: Salem.

He was a son of Thorndike and Abigail (Wilson) Proctor. *William Proctor* [18. VIII. 190], was his grandnephew. His ancestry includes the following families: Proctor, Thorndike, Felton, Wilson. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{31}$ .

XIV. p. 285, and Vol. XVIII. p. 213, while Jan. 29, 1811, is given in Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. XIII. p. 80, and by her great-great-grandson, Nathaniel M. Brown.

<sup>1</sup> In what is now Danvers.

17. VI. 36. Stephen Goodhue [Martha 17-19. V. 10], born in Salem, baptized there Jan. 14, 1738-9, died in Salem. Residence: Salem.<sup>1</sup>

The following account of Mr. Goodhue is from the Goodhue Journals and Genealogical Records<sup>2</sup>: —

“Stephen Goodhue died after a short illness and was buried in the Tomb of his brother Benjamin. His widow died in 1828 and was also buried in the same Tomb.

“He was a man of very good understanding and had been entered at the University at Cambridge, but left it after about a year’s residence. He was of an inquisitive turn of mind, and an attentive observer of what was passing in the world, and of a cheerful temper, and fond of conversation, but much in the habit of raising objections to received opinions, and quite extreme in his notions of prudence and caution, whether regarding the conduct of public affairs or those of private life. The Banking System which had grown up in this country in his time, and before yet any development of evil had occurred, was the constant subject of his anxiety, and his opposition.

“In person he was rather above the common height, very erect in his carriage, of a complexion inclining to fair, and the expression of his countenance intelligent and agreeable. He was of very strict habits of economy and left a comfortable provision for his family, though never putting himself in the way of acquiring much property. He employed himself chiefly in the cultivation of his land of which he had several lots in the vicinity. He was a man of rigid uprightness, and affectionate in his intercourse with his family and friends.”

The Rev. William Bentley, D.D. of the East Church, Salem, thus writes of him: —

“He joined the Friends called Quakers before the Revolution and has continued with them till the close of his life, though I believe not admitted fully. He was a man of strong mind and prejudices. He served Salem in many useful town offices and was respected by all with whom he chose to become conversant. He kept the rigid manners of the sect he joined.”

<sup>1</sup> The date of his birth is given as Jan. 10, 1738-9, while it is given as Jan. 19, 1738-9, both by Charles C. Goodhue and in the History and Genealogy of the Goodhue Family, by Jonathan E. Goodhue, p. 20.

<sup>2</sup> Letter of Charles C. Goodhue, dated January, 1885, to Charles P. Bowditch, in which he gives extracts from “my grandfather and father’s journals and genealogical records.”

17. VI. 36. *Martha Prescott*, his wife, probably born in Salem, died in Salem.

Mrs. Goodhue was a daughter of Benjamin and Rebecca (Minot) Prescott, of Salem. Her father was a justice of the peace, and an enterprising merchant of Salem.<sup>1</sup> Her ancestry includes the following families: Prescott, Platt, Hoar, Hincksman, Higginson, Whitfield, Sheafe, Savage, Symmes, Gardner, Frier, Orne, Browne, Minot, Butler, Wheeler, Brooks, Lane, Reyner, Whipple, Reyner. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{22}$ .

18. VI. 37. *Sarah Goodhue* [Martha 17-19. V. 10], born in Salem, baptized there Nov. 15, 1741, died in Salem.<sup>2</sup>

18. VI. 37. *Gabriel Holman*, her husband, born in Salem, baptized there Oct. 16, 1738, died in Salem. Residence: Salem.

Captain Holman's second wife, whom he married Aug. 9, 1774, was Lydia Mansfield, who was born Sept. 21, 1754, and died in October, 1828. She was a daughter of Matthew and Hannah (Proctor) Mansfield, of Salem. By her he had the following children:—

LYDIA HOLMAN, born in Haverhill, Mass., Dec. 7, 1777; married Abijah Northey, who died Oct. 25, 1853, aged 79 years, 9 months.

JONATHAN HOLMAN, born Feb. 9, 1785; married first, Nov. 9, 1815, Betsey Barr, who was born Feb. 18, 1786, and died Dec. 29, 1829. He married second, Oct. 25, 1832, Sally Barr, who was born July 26, 1790, and died Dec. 29, 1860. He died Sept. 3, 1855.

Gabriel Holman was a son of Gabriel and Elizabeth (Reeves) Holman, of Salem. *Betsey Barr Holman* [24. VIII. 249<sup>a</sup>], was his granddaughter by his second wife, and *Samuel Holman* [23. VIII. 236], was his grandnephew. His ancestry includes the following families: Holman, Reeves, Collins, Cockerill. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{23}$ .

<sup>1</sup> The Prescott Memorial, by William Prescott, p. 52.

<sup>2</sup> The date of her marriage is given as Feb. 7, 1764; while it is given as Feb. 17, 1764, in the History and Genealogy of the Goodhue Family, by Jonathan E. Goodhue, p. 33.



BENJAMIN GOODHUE.

[19. VI. 40.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY WRIGHT, PAINTED IN 1790, NOW IN THE POSSESSION  
OF MRS. CHARLES CLARKSON GOODHUE, OF NEW YORK CITY.

19. VI. 38. **Jonathan Goodhue** [Martha 17-19. V. 10], born in Salem, baptized there Jan. 6, 1744-5, died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Goodhue, H. C. 1764, "engaged in commerce and left his family a competent property. He was always of a feeble constitution, tall, and very slender in his form. A man of sense, and cultivation, of the strictest integrity, of a gentle and benevolent disposition, and extensively beloved."<sup>2</sup>

19. VI. 38. **Dorothy Ashton**, his wife, born in Salem, baptized there May 26, 1751, died in Salem.<sup>3</sup>

Mrs. Goodhue married, July 17, 1787, as her second husband, the Hon. and Rev. John Treadwell, who was born at Ipswich, Mass., Sept. 20, 1738, and died Jan. 5, 1811. She was his second wife. By his first wife he had a son, *John Dexter Treadwell* [19. VII. 110], who married his second wife's daughter, Dorothy Goodhue.

Mrs. Goodhue was a daughter of Jacob and Mary (Ropes) Ashton, of Salem. *William Ashton* [19. VII. 111] was her nephew. Her ancestry includes the following families: Ashton, Dutch, Ropes, Wells, Warner, Bartlett. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{34}$ .

19. VI. 40. **Benjamin Goodhue** [Martha 17-19. V. 10], born in Salem, baptized there Sept. 25, 1748, died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Goodhue was a prominent citizen of Salem. He was a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1779-80; a representative of Salem in the Legislature from 1780 to 1782, and a representative of Essex County in the Senate from 1785 to 1788. He was also a representative in Congress under the new Constitution, and was afterwards a senator of the United

<sup>1</sup> The date of his birth was given by Dr. Henry Wheatland as Dec. 31, 1744; while it is given as Dec. 21, 1744-5 in the History and Genealogy of the Goodhue Family, by Jonathan E. Goodhue, p. 20.

<sup>2</sup> Letter of Charles C. Goodhue dated January, 1885, to Charles P. Bowditch, in which he gives extracts from "my grandfather and father's journals and genealogical records."

<sup>3</sup> Her name is given as "Dorothea" in the History and Genealogy of the Goodhue Family, by Jonathan E. Goodhue, p. 33.

States. The following sketch of him was furnished by his grandson, the late Charles C. Goodhue, from his family papers:—

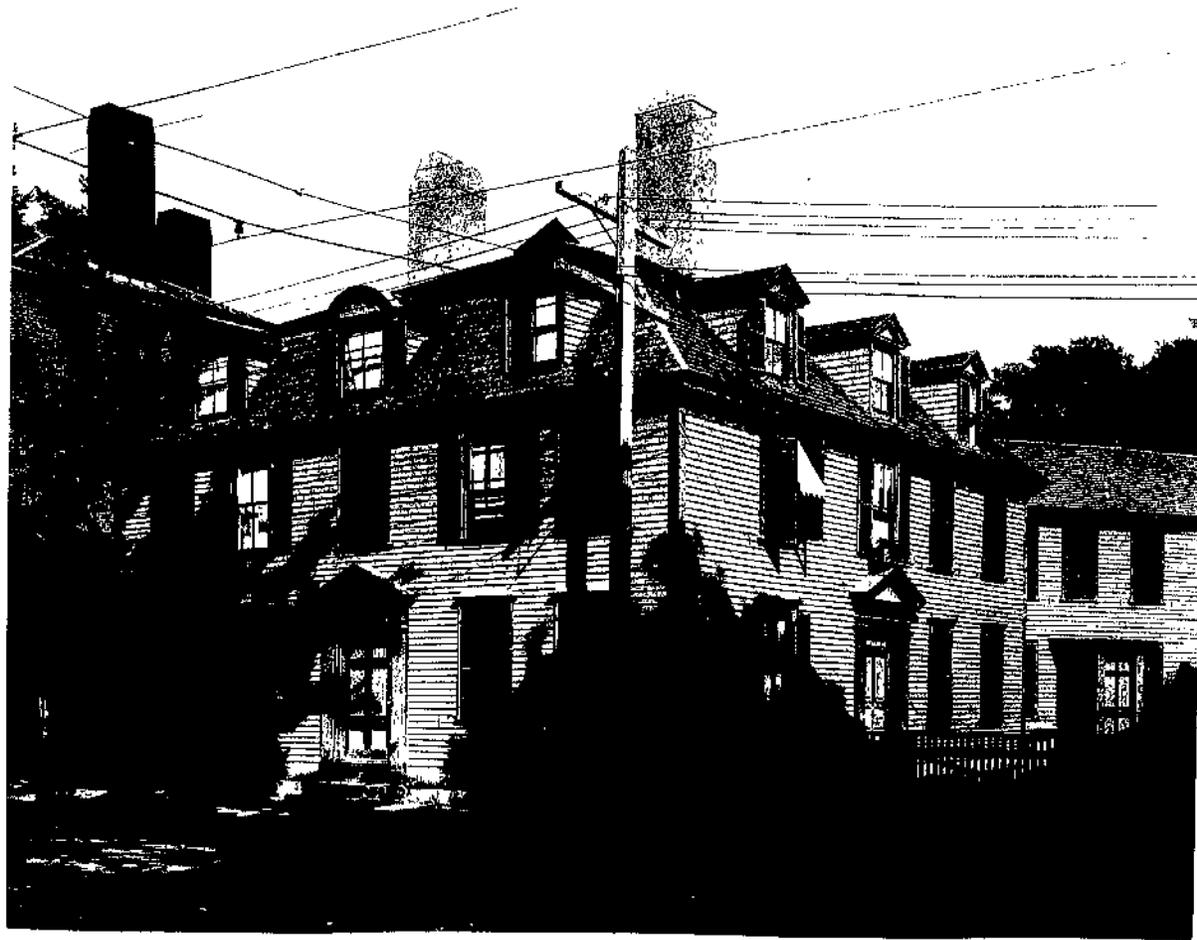
“Benjamin Goodhue entered the University in Cambridge in 1762, where he was graduated in 1766. He was a resident of Philadelphia for some time, and was there engaged in business with Andrew Cabot, brother of the Hon. George Cabot, until the breaking out of the Revolutionary war, which caused them to relinquish their establishment. He returned to Salem, and there continued to pursue business. In 1784, if not earlier, he was elected a member of the Senate of Massachusetts for the County of Essex, and was annually re-elected until on the establishment of the Federal Constitution, he was elected a member of the First Congress which assembled at New York in 1789, when Washington was inaugurated as First President of the United States. He continued to be re-elected by very large majorities, until in 1796 he was appointed to a seat in the Senate of the United States to succeed the Hon. George Cabot; and he was also appointed for another term of six years. Under this appointment, he continued to serve until Nov. 8, 1800, when he sent in his resignation. This was the close of his engagement in public affairs. . . .

“In the Legislature of Massachusetts, and afterward in the Congress of the United States, his talents and habits of business, aided by his commercial information, gave him always a high standing. In the former he was the framer and the zealous advocate of a Navigation Law, designed to give encouragement to the commerce of the State in the depressed condition of the country, which preceded the adoption of the Federal Constitution; and in the latter he took a leading part in all the measures regarding the revenue, commerce, navigation, the fisheries, and the establishment of the Navy; and such was the confidence in his judgment on the subjects, and in the integrity of his motives, that on all questions of this kind, not involving the particular interest of political parties, even those who were habitually his political opponents, were accustomed to yield him their support. In the House of Representatives he was Chairman of the Committee on Commerce, and in the Senate, he was Chairman of the Committee which had in charge the measures of defence against the French Republic in her outrages in 1798-1799. . . .

“He was for many years a member of a Conversation Club composed of the principal gentlemen of the town which met weekly at the house of the members alternately. It was established in July 1778, and continued until Thursday evening July 13, 1809, when it held its last meeting at his house, the age and infirmities of the members making it inconvenient for them to continue it longer. It had in fact been commenced as early as 1767; but during some years its meetings were suspended. The members were—Joseph Orne, M. D., John Appleton, a merchant with whom the celebrated Count Rumford had commenced as a clerk, Thomas Barnard, D. D., Jonathan Goodhue, John Pickering, Jacob Ashton, Hon. Timothy Pickering, the Rev. Asa Dunbar, Samuel Porter, Robert Gillies, (son of the Historian) Hon. William Wetmore,

THE HOUSE OF BENJAMIN GOODHUE AT SALEM,  
MASS., BUILT ABOUT 1780.

[19. VI. 40.]





FRANCES (RICHIE) GOODHUE.

[19. VI. 401]

FROM THE CRAYON PORTRAIT BY SHARPLISS, DRAWN IN 1798, NOW IN THE  
POSSESSION OF MRS. CHARLES CLARKSON GOODHUE, OF NEW YORK CITY.

Henry Gardner, William Pickman, Edward Pulling, the Rev. John Prince, LL. D., the Rev. William Bentley, LL. D., James Jeffrey, John Cabot, Hon. John Treadwell, Hon. John Morris, Hon. William Gray, William Orne, and Benjamin Goodhue."<sup>1</sup>

The heliotype of Benjamin Goodhue is taken from his portrait, which was painted by Wright in 1790. It is now in the possession of the widow of his grandson, Charles C. Goodhue. A heliotype is also given of Mr. Goodhue's house, which is said to have been built in 1780, and which is still standing on Essex Street, Salem.

19. VI. 40<sup>1</sup>. *Frances Richie*, the first wife of Benjamin Goodhue, died in Salem.

The following notice of her death is taken from the Salem Gazette of Friday, Jan. 23, 1801:—

"In this town, on Wednesday last, Mrs. FRANCES GOODHUE, wife of the Hon. Benja. Goodhue, Esq., aged 49; deeply regretted by all her friends and acquaintance. Her funeral will be tomorrow afternoon (if fair weather, if not, on the Monday following) when her friends and relations are invited to attend."

A crayon portrait of Mrs. Goodhue, drawn by Sharpless in 1798, is now in possession of the widow of her grandson, Charles C. Goodhue. A heliotype of it is here given.

Mrs. Goodhue was a daughter of Edward and Mary (Shannon) Richie, of Philadelphia. Her father was a native of Ireland, who came to this country and married her mother in Boston. She survived him, and married a second husband, Robert Annesley, of Philadelphia, and died in 1803.

ANCESTRY TABLES VI.  
2 3<sup>1</sup>.

19. VI. 40<sup>2</sup>. *Anna Willard*, the second wife of Benjamin Goodhue, probably born in Lancaster, Mass., baptized there Aug. 21, 1763, died in Lancaster.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See also Biographical Annals of the Civil Government of the United States, second edition, by Charles Lanman, p. 196; and The Journal and Letters of Samuel Curwen, An American in England from 1775 to 1783. Fourth edition, by George A. Ward, pp. 551, 552.

<sup>2</sup> Her name is given as Anna at baptism and in her husband's will. It is also so given in the Willard Memoir, by Joseph Willard, p. 417; while the History and Genealogy of the Goodhue Family, by Jonathan E. Goodhue, p. 34, gives it as Annie. This last

Mrs. Goodhue lived in Lancaster for many years on the Willard family estate. She died at the great age of ninety-five years. The following account of Mrs. Goodhue was written by one of her intimate friends:—

“Her life had not been wholly free from anxiety and change; but it was, on the whole, an eminently happy life. It was made so by a cheerful, affectionate temperament; by great good sense; by unwavering Christian faith; never murmuring or complaining, but placing herself in position on the bright side of events; always endeavoring to do her duty in her sphere, and seeking to promote the happiness of all with whom she was in any way connected. Hence she acquired ‘troops of friends,’ who were always welcome to her hospitable mansion, and never left without an increase of esteem and loving regard. Her presence was a benediction, while her winning smile revealed the beauty of the spirit within.”<sup>1</sup>

Mrs. Goodhue was a daughter of Colonel Abijah and Anna [Prentice] Willard, of Lancaster, Mass. Her father was in command of a company at the reduction of Louisburg in 1745, and commanded another company under Colonel Monckton, at the reduction of the French forts in Nova Scotia in 1755. During the Revolution he was a loyalist, and a Mandamus Counsellor. Upon the evacuation of Boston, he went with the British army to New York, where he held the office of commissary. After the war he received a grant of land from the Crown, in New Brunswick, where he settled and died. Her ancestry includes the following families: Willard, Dunster, Bell, Phelps, Andrews, Prentice, Stanton, Lord, Swan, Ruck, Lamb, Harbottle, Bayley, Emery, Carr, Ruggles, Bright, Goldstone. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{2E}$ .

20. VI. 42. **Seeth Phippen** [Seeth 20–24. V. 11], probably born in Salem.

20. VI. 42. **Thomas Needham**, her husband, probably born in Salem, probably died in Boston. A cabinet-maker. Residence: Salem.

Thomas Needham is said by the late Dr. Henry Wheatland [17. VIII.

mentioned book gives her marriage as Nov. 25, 1804, as does The Birth, Marriage and Death Register, of Lancaster, Mass., by Henry S. Nourse, p. 165, and Charles C. Goodhue; while it is given as Nov. 5, 1804, and her name as Ann, in Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. XV. p. 305.

<sup>1</sup> Willard Memoir, by Joseph Willard, pp. 237, note, 417, note.



THE HOUSE OF JOSHUA PHIPPEN AT SALEM, MASS.,  
BUILT IN 1782.

[22-24. VI. 45.]

189] to have removed from Salem to Boston with his family. He was living in Salem as late as Sept. 29, 1771, when his child Mary was baptized. She was the last of his eight children whose baptisms are recorded on the South Church Records. He is doubtless the same Thomas Needham who died in Boston, July 4, 1804, aged seventy years.

He was probably a son of Daniel and Isabella [Armstrong] Needham, of Salem. They had a son of this name born July 15, 1734. ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{28}$ .

20-21. VI. 44. **Hardy Phippen** [Seeth 20-24. V. 11], probably born in Salem, lost at sea. A fisherman. Residence: Marblehead, Mass.

Administration on the estate of Hardy Phippen, of Marblehead, fisherman, was granted, Sept. 4, 1775, to Mary Phippen, who gave bond with Thomas Stevens and Joshua Phippen.<sup>1</sup>

20-21. VI. 44. *Mary Ashton*, his wife, probably born in Marblehead, Mass., died in Manchester, Mass.

Her first husband's name was Ashton. After Mr. Phippen's death she removed to Manchester, where she was married, Sept. 28, 1775, to her third husband, William Stone of that town.

She was a daughter of — Stevens. ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{27}$ .

22-24. VI. 45. **Joshua Phippen** [Seeth 20-24. V. 11], probably born in Salem, died in Salem. A cooper. Residence: Salem.<sup>2</sup>

In 1782 Mr. Phippen built the house on the east side of Hardy Street, and the family moved into it on Dec. 31, 1782. The present occupants of the house are descendants of Joshua Phippen of the fourth generation, to whom it has come down in a direct line. A heliotype of the house is here given.

Administration on the estate of Joshua Phippen, of Salem, cooper, was granted, Oct. 21, 1811, to Ursula Phippen, who gave bond with Joseph J. and Isaac Knapp.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 351, p. 337; files, No. 21,748.

<sup>2</sup> His birth is given by two authorities as Jan. 27, 1742-3. Dr. Henry Wheatland gave it as June 27, 1742.

<sup>3</sup> Essex County Probate Records, Vol. 381, p. 303; files, No. 21,756.

22-24. VI. 45<sup>1</sup>. *Hannah Sibley*, his first wife, probably born in Salem, died in Salem.

Dr. Bentley states that she died of consumption, and that she was "very active in early life, long sick and confined."<sup>1</sup>

Mrs. Phippen was a daughter of Samuel and Meribah (Bartlett) Sibley, of Salem. Her ancestry includes the following families: Sibley, Wells, Bartlett. See ANCESTRY TABLES VI.  $\frac{VI}{23}$ .

24. VI. 45<sup>2</sup>. *Ursula Symonds*, the second wife of Joshua Phippen, probably born in Salem, probably died in Salem.

Mrs. Phippen's first husband, whom she married May 1, 1771, was Jonathan Symonds, of Salem. He was born Sept. 19, 1748, and was a son of Joseph and Mary (Very) Symonds. By him she had the following children:—

MARY SYMONDS,	born Dec. 8, 1772; died Nov. 16, 1833, unmarried.
URSULA KNAPP SYMONDS,	born, March 3, 1775; married, March 18, 1804, Hardy Phippen [24. VII. 139].
REBECCA SYMONDS,	born July 29, 1779; married first, June 7, 1799, Isaac Needham Chapman; second, <i>Peter Eaton Webster</i> [24. VIII. 251 <sup>2</sup> ].

Mrs. Phippen was a daughter of Isaac Knapp of Salem. *Ursula Knapp Symonds* [24. VII. 139] was her daughter; *Ursula Knapp Chapman* [13. VIII. 159] was her granddaughter, and *Isaac Needham Chapman* [24. VIII. 248] was her grandson. *Peter Eaton Webster* [24. VIII. 251<sup>2</sup>] was her son-in-law. ANCESTRY TABLES VI.  $\frac{VI}{23}$ .

24. VI. 46. *Joseph Phippen* [Seeth 20-24. V. 11], probably born in Salem, died at sea. A shipmaster. Residence: Salem.<sup>3</sup>

Mr. Phippen was lost at sea when a young man, while making the passage from Virginia.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Record of the Parish List of Deaths 1785-1819, by Rev. William Bentley, D. D., p. 59.

<sup>2</sup> His birth is given as 1750, in Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. III. p. 126; while the Nichols Family Records give it as March 5, 1747.

<sup>3</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. III. p. 126.



JOSEPH PEIRCE.

[25-27. VI. 47.]

FROM A WATER-COLOR PORTRAIT, PAINTED ABOUT 1800, NOW IN THE  
POSSESSION OF THE HEIRS OF THE LATE GRENVILLE MELLETT PEIRCE,  
ESQ., OF BATON ROUGE, LA.

25-27. VI. 47. Joseph Peirce [Mary 25-27. V. 14], born in Boston, baptized there Dec. 29, 1745, died in Boston. A merchant. Residence: Boston.

Captain Peirce graduated at the Boston Latin School in 1756, but did not enter college. He chose a mercantile career, and finally became established on State Street, Boston, as a merchant. That he was a man of great intelligence and a fine penman is shown by his numerous letters, which are among the Knox papers in the possession of the New England Historic Genealogical Society. He was also a man of great integrity. Like most of his relations and family connections, he was a member of the historic Old South Church of Boston, having joined that church Feb. 26, 1775. For many years he was on its standing committee, and on April 2, 1818, from reason of advanced age, he declined to serve further and received the thanks of the society for his long services. He was one of a committee of three appointed Nov. 20, 1815, to procure a new bell for the meeting-house. The bell was cast in London, and bears the following inscription: —

MEARS OF LONDON FECIT  
 BY ORDER OF  
 JOSEPH PEIRCE } COMMITTEE  
 EDW<sup>d</sup> PHILLIPS } OF OLD SOUTH  
 JOSIAH SALISBURY } SOCIETY 1816

This bell was removed from the old meeting-house on Washington Street to the tower of the new building on the corner of Boylston and Dartmouth streets, where it hung till the summer of 1895, when it was replaced by a new one.

The various military and civil positions which Captain Peirce filled give evidence of his interest in public matters. He early showed a taste for military affairs, and became first lieutenant of the Boston Grenadiers, of which he was one of the founders. Colonel Thomas Dawes, his father-in-law, was the first commander of this corps, and was succeeded in that position by Joseph Peirce. This famous corps was composed of picked men, and elicited the admiration of General Gage when he arrived in Boston just before the Revolution to take command of the British forces in America. It was in this company that General Knox acquired that love

25-27. VI. 47. *Ann Dawes*, the wife of Joseph Peirce, born in Boston, baptized there May 20, 1753, died in Boston.

Mrs. Peirce united with the Old South Church, Feb. 26, 1775.

One of her letters to her grandson, Constantius Peirce, dated Jan. 10, 1810, is still preserved. In it she speaks of having sent him a plum pudding. Her granddaughter, the late Mrs. Laura P. Holland, kept up the practice of making these English plum puddings, and sending them to absent members of her family, to the last days of her life.

Mrs. Peirce's portrait in water color, painted in or about the year 1800, is in the possession of the heirs of her great-grandson, the late Grenville Mellen Peirce, of Baton Rouge, La. A heliotype of it is here given.

Mrs. Peirce was a daughter of the Hon. Colonel Thomas and Hannah (Blake) Dawes. Judge Thomas Dawes was her brother. Her father was one of the most prominent citizens of Boston, and was devoted to the patriot party, the leading members of which sometimes held meetings in his garret, "where they smoked tobacco, drank flip, and discussed the state of the country." The tories nicknamed him "Jonathan Smoothing Plane." He took so conspicuous a part in the early scenes of the Revolution that he drew upon himself the anger of the royalists, and his beautiful stone mansion in Purchase Street was sacked by the British troops before they left Boston. Opposite this house was his wharf, which was known as Dawes's wharf.

He was one of the first great mechanics of Boston, and designed and built a number of its prominent buildings.

Colonel Dawes represented Boston in the Massachusetts Senate for twenty successive years, and as the president of that body acted as governor when Governor Increase Sumner died, there being no lieutenant governor at that time. He was three times chosen elector of Presidents of the United States.<sup>1</sup> He was a member and deacon of the Old South Church. His family tomb is in the King's Chapel Burying Ground, over which is

<sup>1</sup> The History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, by Zachariah G. Whitman, p. 302; The Merchants' Magazine and Commercial Review, conducted by Freeman Hunt, Vol. XX. p. 621; King's Chapel Epitaphs, by Thomas Bridgman, pp. 125, 293; and William Dawes and his Ride with Paul Revere, by Henry W. Holland, pp. 60-67.

ANN (DAWES) PEIRCE.

[25-27. VI. 47.]

FROM A WATER-COLOR PORTRAIT, PAINTED ABOUT 1800, NOW IN THE  
POSSESSION OF THE HEIRS OF THE LATE GRENVILLE MELLETT PEIRCE,  
ESQ., OF BATON ROUGE, LA.



a white monument bearing a long inscription. The fine portrait of him by Stuart represents a distinguished looking man. It was given to Colonel Dawes's descendant, the late Hon. Thomas Dawes Elliot, by Colonel Dawes's great-grandson, the Hon. Henry A. Peirce.

Mrs. Peirce's ancestry includes the following families: Dawes, Mills, Bumstead, Story, Underwood, Plaice, Blake, Clap, Bachiler, Smith, Gray, Harrison, Peirce. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{28}$ .

27. VI. 49. **John Peirce** [Mary 25-27. V. 14], born in Boston, baptized there Sept. 30, 1750, died near Vickburg, Miss. An officer in the United States Army.<sup>1</sup>

Captain Peirce is said to have been one of the "Indians" who destroyed the tea in Boston Harbor. In June, 1776, he was commissioned second lieutenant in General Knox's Regiment of the Continental Artillery. In January, 1777, he was made first lieutenant in the 3d Continental Artillery, and Sept. 12, 1777, he held the position of second lieutenant in Callender's Company, Crane's Artillery. On Sept. 12, 1778, he was captain-lieutenant, serving in Rhode Island, and was transferred to the Corps of Artillery, June 17, 1783, serving till Nov. 3, 1783. He saw much active service, beginning with the siege of Boston, and ending only with the close of the war in 1783. Re-entering the service under the Confederation, he was commissioned a lieutenant in the United States Artillery Battalion, Oct. 20, 1786; lieutenant of the Artillery Battalion, United States Army, Sept. 29, 1789; captain, Oct. 15, 1791; and captain of Artillerists and Engineers, May 9, 1794.

Captain Peirce signed the roll and became one of the Cincinnati in 1783 at the cantonment of the Massachusetts Line on the banks of the Hudson River. He was succeeded in the society by his brother Joseph.

He died at Fort McHenry, Walnut Hills, near Vicksburg, Miss., of a climatic disease contracted while in garrison at Fort Adams, on the left bank of the Mississippi River, where he had been for some time stationed.

<sup>1</sup> The date of his death is given by several authorities as July 22, 1798; while July 24, 1798 is given in the Historical Register of Officers of the Continental Army, by F. B. Heitman, p. 323.

In an obituary notice of him which appeared in the Salem Gazette of Tuesday, Nov. 20, 1798, he is spoken of as a veteran of twenty years of uninterrupted devotion to his country's cause, etc.<sup>1</sup>

27. VI. 50. **Isaac Peirce** [Mary 25-27. V. 14], born in Boston, baptized there Dec. 30, 1753, died in Boston. A soldier. Residence: Boston.

June 7, 1776, he was appointed aide-de-camp to Major General Horatio Gates, with the rank of major in the Continental Army. He is said to have been a friend of the Marquis de Lafayette. He was buried in the Peirce tomb in the King's Chapel Burying Ground.

The heliotype of him here given is taken from his miniature now in the possession of the heirs of his great-grandnephew, the late Grenville Mellen Peirce, of Baton Rouge, La.<sup>2</sup>

27. VI. 51. **Hardy Peirce** [Mary 25-27. V. 14], born in Boston, baptized there July 25, 1756, died in Fort Lee, New York. A soldier. Residence: Boston.

Hardy Peirce was a lieutenant of the American Train of Artillery of the Continental Army, and was killed by a cannon-ball from the enemy's lines. He was an active officer, and was much lamented. Major Troop-addressed to his parents a consolatory poem on his death. It is inscribed as follows:—

“A Consolatory thought addrest to M<sup>r</sup> Isaac and M<sup>rs</sup> Mary Peirce on the Suddain and Awful death of their Son Lieu<sup>t</sup> Hardy Peirce, who was Unfortunatly killed by a Cannon in Fort Lee at New York, November 5<sup>th</sup> 1776 in the 20<sup>th</sup> year of his age; Sic transit gloria Mundi!”<sup>3</sup>

The original poem was in the possession of his grandniece, the late Mrs. Laura P. Holland.

<sup>1</sup> Historical Register of Officers of the Continental Army during the War of the Revolution, April, 1775, to December, 1783, by F. B. Heitman, p. 323; Dictionary of the Army of the United States, by Charles K. Gardner; Memorials of the Massachusetts Society of the Cincinnati, edited by James M. Bugbee, pp 383-386; The Merchants' Magazine and Commercial Review, conducted by Freeman Hunt, Vol. XX. p. 621; Peirce Family Record, by Edward W. West, p. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Peirce Family Record, by Edward W. West, p. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Peirce Family Record, by Edward W. West, p. 2.

ISAAC PEIRCE.

[27. VI. 50.]

FROM A MINIATURE IN THE POSSESSION OF THE HEIRS OF THE LATE  
GRENVILLE MELLE PEIRCE, ESQ., OF BATON ROUGE, LA.



27. VI. 52. **Sarah Peirce** [Mary 25-27. V. 14], born in Boston, baptized there Nov. 26, 1758, probably died in Boston.<sup>1</sup>

27. VI. 53. **Mary Peirce** [Mary 25-27. V. 14], born in Boston, baptized there April 12, 1761.<sup>2</sup>

27. VI. 54. **Grafton Feveryear Peirce** [Mary 25-27. V. 14] born in Boston, baptized there Sept. 18, 1763, probably died in Boston.

The peculiar name given to this child seems to have been chosen from the fact that his great-grandmother, Mary (Grafton) Hardy, married, June 6, 1688, as her second husband, Edmund Feveryear, of Boston, and had a son, Grafton Feveryear, born March 31, 1689.

28-29. VI. 55. **Joseph Henfield** [Lydia 28-40. V. 15], probably born in Salem, died in Salem.<sup>3</sup> Residence: Salem.

The Salem Gazette of Friday, March 17, 1809, speaks of him as follows:—

“In this town, Mr. JOSEPH HENFIELD aged 66, a man who has long been a faithful servant of the town, as an Assessor of the taxes, and whose integrity, ability and experience in that office has amidst all the conflicts of party, commanded the general suffrage of his fellow townsmen. It was a rare and honorable tribute to his worth, that even while on his death-bed they would not consent to relinquish him, but gave him, as an earnest of their hopes, about 1500 votes. Funeral this day at 4 o'clock, which his friends and relations are desired to attend.”

28-29. VI. 55. **Anna Mansfield**, his wife, probably born in Salem, baptized there May 13, 1744, probably died in Salem.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The Peirce Family Record, by Edward W. West, p. 6, gives the date of her birth as Nov. 4, 1758; but this is undoubtedly wrong, as the Boston Records give it as Nov. 24, 1758.

<sup>2</sup> Mary Peirce probably died young, though we have found no record of this fact. The Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, by Thos. B. Wyman, Vol. I. p. 108, mentions a Mary Peirce who married Abel Boynton, both of Westford, on May 18, 1798; and the Nichols Family Records state that this was the Mary Peirce above mentioned.

<sup>3</sup> His gravestone gives his death as March 16, 1809; while March 15, 1809, is given in Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. V. p. 209.

<sup>4</sup> The family give the date of her death as Jan. 8, 1832, as inscribed on her gravestone; while Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. V. p. 209, gives it as Jan. 7, 1832.

Mrs. Henfield's first husband was Jonathan Mansfield, of Salem, whom she married Oct. 27, 1762. Mrs. S. A. Weston, of Salem, one of Mr. and Mrs. Mansfield's descendants, writes that Mrs. Henfield was a handsome woman, and that Joseph Henfield was a suitor before Mr. Mansfield. She adds, that the Mansfields were fond of high living, so that when Mr. Mansfield died there was not much property left to support the widow and the children. Mr. Henfield was still unmarried at Mr. Mansfield's death, and on hearing the news he remarked that it was the happiest day of his life. He renewed his offer of marriage to the widow, and she accepted him. Mrs. Weston also writes that there was a small picture of Mrs. Henfield in the Haraden family some years ago.

Jonathan and Anna Mansfield had the following seven children baptized at the Tabernacle Church in Salem; and one was born to them whose name is not on that church record:

DORCAS MANSFIELD,	baptized April 28, 1765.
ANNE MANSFIELD,	baptized April 28, 1765.
ANNA MANSFIELD,	baptized Jan 25, 1767, and died April 5, 1846. She married, May 8, 1785, John Rust, who was born April 4, 1762, and died May 26, 1834, having removed from Salem to Norway, Me.
LUCY MANSFIELD,	baptized Jan. 22, 1769, died Dec. 16, 1831. She married, Sept. 17, 1786, Thomas Bowditch, who was born Sept. 22, 1761, and died April 12, 1807. <i>William Henry Archer</i> [22. IX. 339] was their grandson, and <i>Clara Henfield Bowditch</i> [31. IX. 511] was their granddaughter.
DORCAS MANSFIELD,	baptized March 31, 1771, married William Godshall.
MEHITABLE MANSFIELD,	born 1773, died July 25, 1825, married, Sept. 14, 1794, William Luscomb, who was born in 1774, and died Feb. 8, 1820.
ELIZABETH MANSFIELD,	baptized Jan. 9, 1774.
PATTY MANSFIELD,	baptized March 1, 1788, married Andrew Tucker.

Mrs. Henfield was a daughter of Miles and Hannah (Derby) Ward, of Salem. Her brother, Nathaniel Ward (H. C. 1765), was librarian of Harvard College. *Andrew Ward* [35-37. VI. 58] was her cousin. Her ancestry includes the following families: Ward, Flint, Massey, Wells, Warner, Derby, Hilman, Youngs, Budd. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{80}$ .

29-34. VI. 56. **Lydia Henfield** [Lydia 28-40. V. 15], probably born in Salem, probably died in Salem.

29-34. VI. 56. **George Chapman**, her husband, probably born in Salem, baptized there July 26, 1741, died in Salem. A mariner. Residence: Salem.<sup>1</sup>

In early life Captain Chapman was actively engaged in maritime affairs, and taught navigation in the old Henfield house on Washington Street, Salem. Dr. Nathaniel Bowditch is said to have been one of his pupils. In 1798 he was appointed the first keeper of the Baker's Island light, and he held this position for seventeen years. During the last years of his life he was blind. One of his descendants says that his teeth were double all the way round. He is said to have been a man of a pleasant disposition. The Chapman family homestead stood on the upper corner of Essex and Summer Streets, Salem, which used to go by the name of Chapman's corner.<sup>2</sup>

George Chapman was a son of Isaac and Hannah (Dean) Chapman. *John Chapman* [40. VI. 64] was his nephew; *Ursula Knapp Chapman* [13. VIII. 159] was his grandniece, and *Isaac Needham Chapman* [24. VIII. 248] was his grandnephew. His ancestry includes the following families: Chapman, Cook, Birdsall, Buxton, Dean, Daniell, Prince, Ruck, Spooner, Bufum, Pope. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{31}$ .

34. VI. 57. **Edmund Henfield** [Lydia 28-40. V. 15], probably born in Salem, died in Salem. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Henfield is said to have been drowned at night near the South Mills.

34. VI. 57. **Mary Beadle**, his wife, probably born and died in Salem.

Mrs. Henfield was a daughter of John and Mary (West) Beadle.

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{31}$ .

<sup>1</sup> The date of his birth is given on the Sheets as July 26, 1741. This is certainly the date of his baptism, and the notice of his death in the Salem Gazette, of March 23, 1824, speaks of him as being 84 years old.

<sup>2</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. XIII. p. 310; The First Centenary of the North Church and Society in Salem, p. 201.

35-37. VI. 58. **Sarah Henfield** [Lydia 28-40. V. 15], probably born in Salem, died in Salem.<sup>1</sup>

35-37. VI. 58. **Andrew Ward**, her husband, probably born in Salem, and died in Salem. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Ward was a son of John and Hannah (Higginson) Ward, of Salem. *Anna Mansfield* [28-29. VI. 55] was his cousin. His ancestry includes the following families: Ward, Flint, Massey, Wells, Warner, Higginson, Whitfield, Sheafe, Savage, Symmes, Gerrish, Lowell, Ruck, Spooner. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{83}$ .

38-39. VI. 59. **Mary Henfield** [Lydia 28-40. V. 15], born in Salem, died in Salem.

Mrs. Goodale's grandson, the late Samuel H. Gooch, wrote, that:—

“With limited means, she maintained unstinted hospitality, and made her house in Cambridge Street a paradise for her children and a large circle of friends and relatives. . . . If space permitted, numerous anecdotes might be given, illustrative of the social idolatry which she inspired. Her oldest grandson, now (1893) 87 years of age, happened to be present at the time her house was moved, subsequent to her death. One of the old townspeople, standing by, said, ‘there has been goodness enough in that house to sanctify a neighborhood.’ . . . One incident, apparently trifling, but remembered for so many years by one of her now aged grandchildren will show a certain phase of her character. It was one evening, while in company she felt a mouse in her dress. She calmly pinned him in the folds and when the company had dispersed, as calmly let him out.”

Mr. Gooch remembered a beautiful ivory miniature of her, but it has not been found.

38-39. VI. 59. **Joshua Goodale**, the husband of Mary Henfield, probably born in Salem, baptized there June 17, 1753, probably died in Salem. A blacksmith. Residence: Salem.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> A Family Bible gives the date of their marriage as May 11, 1773. Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. V. p. 209, gives it as May 21, 1773.

<sup>2</sup> We have the date of his birth given as June 20, 1753; while his baptism is given as above in the “Eighteenth Century Baptisms in Salem, Mass.,” by James A. Emmerton, p. 48.

Mr. Goodale was a son of Joshua and Anne (Derby) Goodale, of Salem. His ancestry includes the following families: Goodale, Beacham, Rhodes, Derby, Hilman, Youngs, Budd. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{34}$ .

39. VI. 61. **John Henfield** [Lydia 28-40. V. 15], probably born in Salem, died in Salem of apoplexy.

39-40. VI. 62. **Martha Henfield** [Lydia 28-40. V. 15], probably born and died in Salem.

39. VI. 62<sup>1</sup>. **David Neal**, her first husband, probably born and died in Salem. Residence: Salem.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Neal was a son of David and Hannah (Webb) Neal. His ancestry includes the following families: Neal, Lawes, Buffum, Small, Webb, Bray, Collins, Cockerill. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{35}$ .

40. VI. 62<sup>2</sup>. **John Dowst**, the second husband of Martha Henfield, probably born in Salem, baptized there Sept. 20, 1761, probably died in Salem. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Dowst belonged to a family remarkable for its strength. An article printed in the Salem Observer of Aug. 4, 1877, which relates to his brother William, entitled "Strong Men of Salem in the Past," states that the strongest man who ever lived in Salem was William Dowst, who was born in Salem and died there in 1801. He was nearly seven feet high and weighed three hundred and fifty pounds. During the Revolutionary War he was on board a privateer which got among the breakers off Cape Breton, and it became necessary to cast anchor. The anchor being in the hold of the vessel, the crew could not raise it; but Dowst seized it, carried it upon deck, bent a cable to it, threw it overboard, and saved the vessel just as it was on the point of being dashed upon the rocks. The anchor weighed seven hundred pounds.

<sup>1</sup> His name is given as David Neal on page 450 of *The Driver Family*, by Harriet Ruth (Waters) Cooke, and on page 452 of the same work it is erroneously given as Daniel Neal.

When on board of the *Rochampton*, he complained to the captain that he did not have enough to eat. The captain told him if he could do more than any other man on board, he should have more. Whereupon Dowst went to the fore-castle, took a gun, carriage and all, carried it to the quarter-deck and then good-naturedly asked the captain to see how many men it would take to carry it back. It was found that five were needed for this purpose. After that Dowst never had reason to complain of a lack of rations.

John Dowst was a son of William and Jane (Aborn) Dowst, of Salem.  
ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{88}$ .

40. VI. 63. **Jonathan Henfield** [*Lydia* 28-40. V. 15], probably born and died in Salem.

40. VI. 64. **Ruth Henfield** [*Lydia* 28-40. V. 15], probably born and died in Salem.

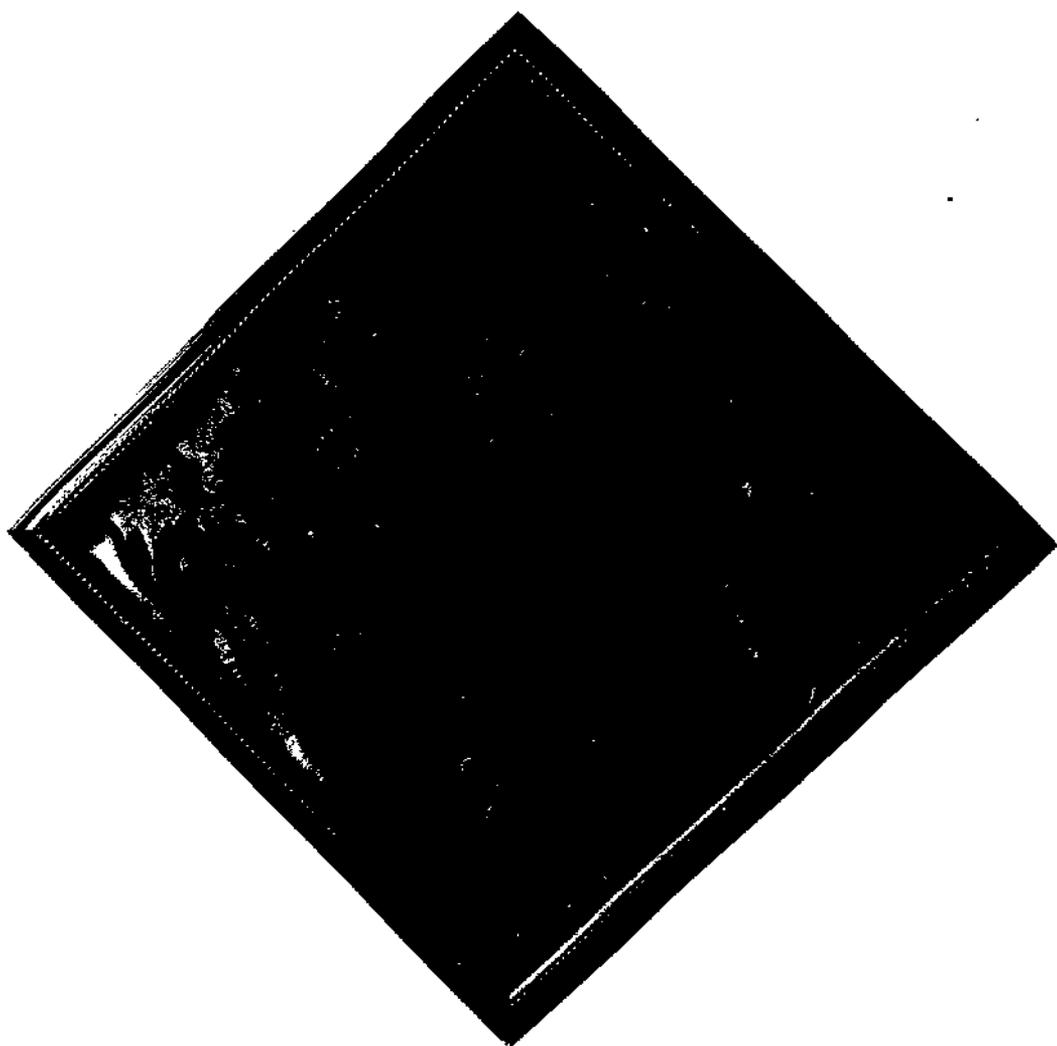
40. VI. 64. **John Chapman**, her husband, born in Salem, died at sea. A sea captain. Residence: Salem.

Captain Chapman was a son of Benjamin and Sarah (Buffington) Chapman. *George Chapman* [29-34. VI. 56] was his uncle; *Ursula Knapp Chapman* [13. VIII. 159] was his niece, and *Isaac Needham Chapman* [24. VIII. 248] was his nephew. His ancestry includes the following families: Chapman, Cook, Birdsall, Buxton, Dean, Daniell, Prince, Ruck, Spooner, Buffum, Pope, Buffington. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{88}$ .

41-42. VI. 65. **Benjamin Ropes** [*Ruth* 41-47. V. 16], probably born in Salem, baptized there July 13, 1747. A cooper. Residence: Salem.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Ropes's house was situated on the corner of North Street and a street leading from North Street to the laboratory in North Salem. He served in the Revolutionary War. In his commission as second lieutenant of a company of Matrosses, stationed at Salem, of which John Symonds was captain, he is spoken of as Benjamin Ropes, Jr., gentleman. The

<sup>1</sup> The date of his marriage is given as Feb. 6, 1772, in Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. p. 164, and by the Nichols Family Records as Dec. 31, 1771.



PEIRCE COAT OF ARMS.

FROM AN EMBROIDERY, WROUGHT BY SARAH NICHOLS IN 1796, NOW IN THE  
POSSESSION OF THE MISSES NICHOLS, OF SALEM, MASS.

commission which is dated at Boston, June 21, 1777, is still in possession of his descendants. He appears to have seen some service in Rhode Island, in 1778. This we learn from a letter from his parents, dated Aug. 17, 1778, and addressed to "Mr. Benja. Ropes & Brethren at Rhode Island in the Salem Company, commanded by Capt. Sam'l Flagg."<sup>1</sup>

41-42. VI. 65. *Margaret Symonds*, his wife, probably born and died in Salem.

Mrs. Ropes was a daughter of Benjamin and Margaret (Skerry) Symonds, of North Salem. Her ancestry includes the following families: Symonds, Browning, Stone, Skerry, Lunt, Silsbee, Tompkins. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{87}$ .

43. VI. 66. *Joseph Ropes* [Ruth 41-47. V. 16], probably born in Salem, baptized there Oct. 29, 1749, probably died in Salem. A mariner. Residence: Salem.

A brief family record calls Joseph Ropes a mariner and a fine young man.

43. VI. 68. *Sarah Ropes* [Ruth 41-47. V. 16], probably born in Salem, baptized there Oct. 22, 1752, probably died in Salem.<sup>2</sup>

From an obituary of Mrs. Peirce which appeared in the Salem Gazette, of Tuesday, Aug. 23, 1796, we learn that for several years before her death she suffered from bodily infirmity, which she bore with patience; that she was amiable in disposition, of agreeable manners, and charitable to the poor, and that in early life she publicly professed religion.

43. VI. 68. *Jerathmeel Peirce*, her husband, born in Charlestown, Mass., baptized there Feb. 1, 1746-7, died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. pp. 164, 165.

<sup>2</sup> Several authorities give the date of her death as Aug. 17, 1796. It is given as Aug. 6, 1796, in Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. XVIII. p. 172. The same work, Vol. VII. p. 165, gives the date of her marriage Feb. 9, 1772; while the Peirce Genealogy, being the Record of the Posterity of John Pers of Watertown, by Frederick C. Peirce, p. 52, gives it as Feb. 6, 1772.

<sup>3</sup> The date of his death is given as Aug. 19, 1827, in Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. p. 165; while two Salem papers give it as Aug. 20, 1827.

Mr. Peirce was apprenticed to the trade of a leather dresser in Charlestown. After serving his apprenticeship, he worked at his trade for several years in that town, his chief employment being the manufacture of deer-skin breeches. His showy sign, which represented a stag running between the distended legs of a pair of small clothes, and which bore the inscription in gilt letters: "Leather Breeches made in the neatest manner and sold by J. P.," was in existence as late as 1830. He moved to Salem, and there engaged in foreign commerce in company with Aaron Wait under the style of Peirce & Wait. Their warehouse and counting-room were situated in the rear of Mr. Peirce's house. They met with success in their business, and the partnership continued until about 1820, when the senior member formed a new partnership with his sons Benjamin and Henry Peirce, and his son-in-law George Nichols. The new firm however met with reverses, and failed in 1826. The firm of Peirce & Wait subscribed two thousand dollars towards building the frigate Essex for the purpose of protecting American commerce.

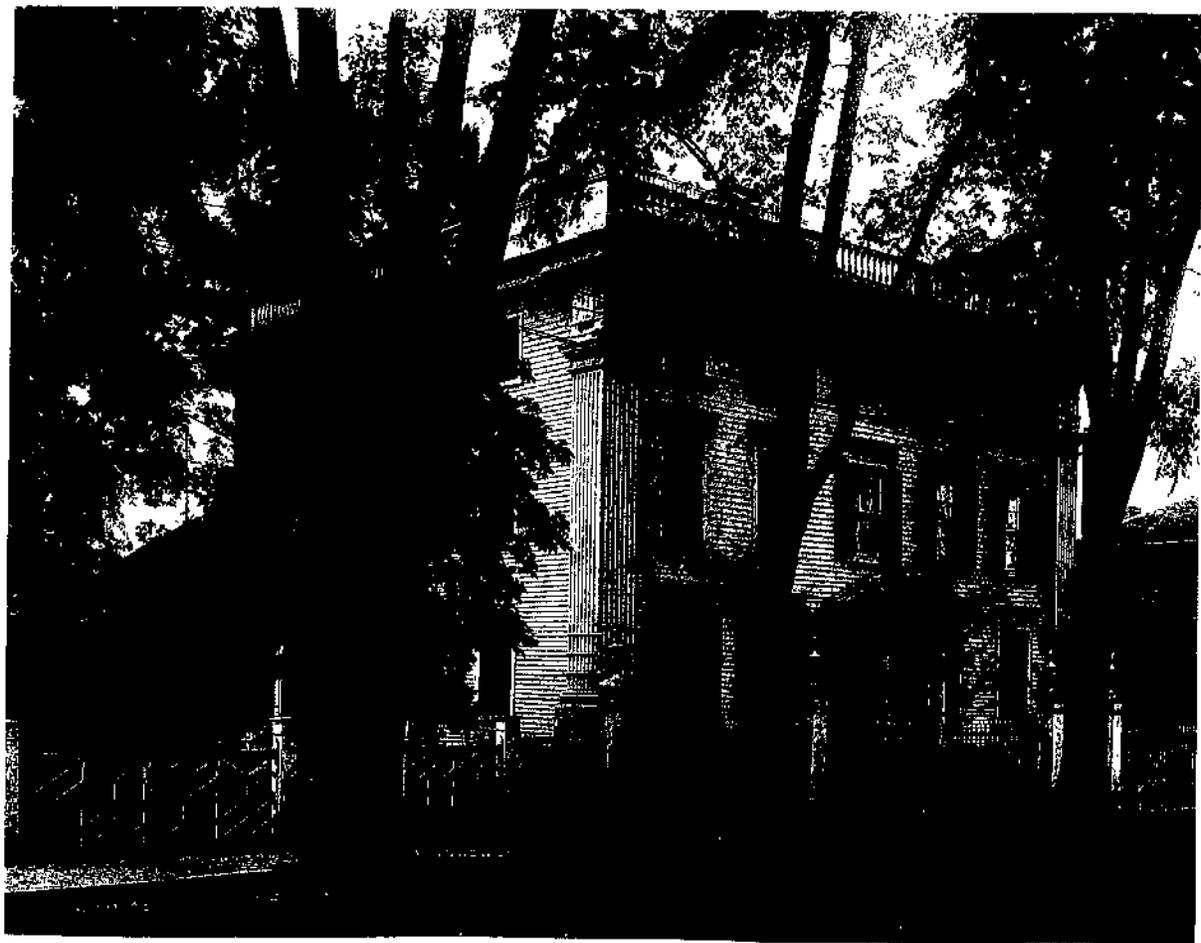
In 1782, Mr. Peirce built the mansion house on Federal Street, Salem, which is now occupied by his granddaughters, the daughters of George Nichols. It is still one of the most beautiful and spacious old mansions in New England, and shows no signs of its age. A heliotype of it is here given. Mr. Peirce gave up this house to his creditors and removed to a house in Warren Street, which was then occupied by his son. Here he died within sixty days after leaving his old home.

Mr. Peirce was somewhat above the medium height, well proportioned, erect, of dignified and courteous manners, — a perfect gentleman of the old school. In the prime of life he was considered one of the wealthiest and most successful of the merchant princes of Salem.

His obituary notice, which appeared in the Salem Register of August 23, 1827, gives him a high character and speaks of him as one of the most enterprising and successful merchants of Salem. A very handsome white marble altar tomb, inscribed with his name and the date 1800, is in the Broad Street Burying Ground. A heliotype is here given of an embroidery of a Peirce coat of arms, which was worked by his daughter, Sarah (Peirce)

THE HOUSE OF JERATHMEEL PEIRCE AT SALEM,  
MASS., BUILT IN 1782.

[13. VI. 68.]



Nichols, in 1796. It is now in possession of his granddaughters, the Misses Nichols, of Salem.<sup>1</sup>

Jerathmeel Peirce was a son of Jerathmeel and Rebecca (Hurd) Peirce, of Charlestown. His ancestry includes the following families: Peirce, Knight, Bowers, Worthington, Hurd, Wilson, Tufts, Peirce, Lynde. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{\frac{8}{8}}$ .

44. VI. 69. Lydia Ropes [Ruth 41-47. V. 16], probably born in Salem, baptized there Dec. 8, 1754, probably died in Salem.<sup>2</sup>

In personal appearance Mrs. Nichols was somewhat above the average height, well proportioned, rather stout, though by no means corpulent, very erect, and exceedingly dignified. Her remarkable executive ability was particularly manifested while living in Portsmouth, N. H. When her husband was absent at sea, she received from him consignments of merchandise, and attended in person to the weighing, selling, and delivering of the goods, although at the time she had a large family of young children.

After her return to Salem, she was a prominent member of the North Church while Dr. Barnard, John Emery Abbot, and Dr. Brazer were pastors. At the time when the "Seaman's Orphan and Children's Friend Society" was organized, she was made one of the managers, and she filled this position for many years. Three of the Society children, Lydia English, Hannah Francis, and Lydia Ann Petty, were bound to her until they were eighteen years of age, according to the custom of the time. Hannah Francis and Lydia Petty were, in 1892, inmates of the Old Ladies' Home in Salem.

Mrs. Nichols was very much beloved and respected by everyone, especially by her grandchildren.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. p. 165; the Peirce Genealogy being the Record of the Posterity of John Pers an early Inhabitant of Watertown, by Frederick C. Peirce, pp. 52-53; also a letter of his grandson, John H. Nichols, dated Jan. 17, 1888.

<sup>2</sup> Several authorities give the date of her death as Feb. 25, 1835. The Ropes Bible gives it as March 25, 1835, and Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. XVIII. p. 172, as Feb. 15, 1835.

<sup>3</sup> Letter of her grandson, John H. Nichols, dated Salem, Oct. 3, 1892.

44. VI. 69. *Ichabod Nichols*, the husband of Lydia Ropes, born in Salem, died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.

Ichabod Nichols's father died while he was young, and his mother, a woman of great energy, apprenticed him to a blacksmith's trade; but, to his regret in after life, he did not serve the whole term of his minority. He was a person of great energy, and when his master was pressed with orders, it was not uncommon for him to finish his day's work before breakfast. When he was eighteen years old, he walked from Salem to Kittery, Me., a distance of sixty-two miles in about fifteen hours.

At the age of twenty, he gave up working at his trade and went to sea. He was soon put in command of one of Mr. Derby's vessels, and made several successful voyages to China. During the Revolutionary War he was engaged in privateering, and on that account he was read out of the Society of Quakers with which the entire Nichols family had been long identified, and of which some of their descendants are still members.

At a critical period of the Revolutionary War, he joined a company of Salem merchants who offered their services to General Washington for a special object, and went to the Jerseys, but did not have an opportunity to engage in any fighting. On account of his services in the war, he was introduced to Lafayette at the dinner given him in Hamilton Hall, Salem, in 1824, at which time he was embraced by the marquis. After the war, he moved to Portsmouth, N. H., where he occupied the house which Governor Wentworth built for his son. This house is still standing on the southeast corner of Gardner Street. Before 1800 he returned to Salem and engaged in commerce with Benjamin Hodges under the firm name of Nichols & Hodges. Their store was on Union Wharf, at that time the principal wharf in Salem, since the Derby and Crowninshield Wharves had not been built. Mr. Nichols, when he died, occupied the house which adjoined the post-office on the south, on Washington Street.

On April 27, 1798, Congress passed an act for the protection of commerce, providing for the acceptance of twelve vessels of war to be built on the credit of the United States. Subscriptions were raised for this purpose in the principal cities, and among others in Salem, where it was voted to build a frigate of thirty-two guns. Captain Ichabod Nichols, who had sub-

ICHABOD NICHOLS.

[44. VI. 69.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF JOHN WHITE TREADWELL  
NICHOLS, ESQ., OF NEW YORK CITY.



scribed one thousand dollars for the purpose, was a member of the committee chosen to carry the vote into effect. A vessel was built and named the *Essex*.<sup>1</sup>

When he was about sixty years old, he bought large tracts of pasture land situated on both sides of the Salem and Boston turnpike. The land was so rocky and sterile that some one called it "the abomination of desolation," and yet, in the course of the twenty years or more that Mr. Nichols owned it, he succeeded in making it a highly productive farm, yielding, as he told a friend, "six per cent on the investment — three per cent in money and three per cent in health." This was probably true, for, although not a robust man, he lived to be ninety years old. Mr. Nichols was below the medium height, and was so active that he bent forward in order to make as rapid and long strides as possible, using for that purpose a cane longer than would have otherwise been needed.<sup>2</sup> An obituary in the *Salem Gazette* of Friday, July 5, 1839, speaks of him as "for many years a distinguished shipmaster and merchant."

There is now in the possession of his great-grandson, John W. T. Nichols, of New York, a portrait of him, which is said to have been painted in Russia. A heliotype of it is given.

Ichabod Nichols was a son of David and Hannah (Gaskill) Nichols, of Salem, both of whom were Friends in faith as were their ancestors. *David Nichols* [17. VIII. 182] was his grandnephew. His ancestry includes the following families: Nichols, Moulton, Gaskill, Southwick, Gardner, Frier. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{89}$ .

45. VI. 70. **Samuel Ropes** [Ruth 41–47. V. 16], probably born in Salem, baptized there March 13, 1757, died in Salem. A ship-chandler. Residence: Salem.

In early life Mr. Ropes was a cooper, but he afterwards engaged in the ship-chandlery business with Colonel *John Page* [3. VII. 18], under the firm-name of Page & Ropes. The store of this well-known firm was in a two-

<sup>1</sup> *Essex Institute Historical Collections*, Vol. X. part III. pp. 1–108.

<sup>2</sup> Letter of his grandson, John H. Nichols, dated Salem, Jan. 17, 1888, and *Essex Institute Historical Collections*, Vol. IV. p. 133; Vol. XVIII. p. 172.

story building on the northeast corner of Derby and Union Streets, Salem.<sup>1</sup> They subscribed one hundred dollars toward building the frigate *Essex*.

His grandson, Joseph S. Ropes, says that Samuel Ropes lived in Charlestown, Mass., at the time of the battle of Bunker Hill. He also says that he was a religious man and regularly conducted family prayers, always using the same words. Samuel Ropes occupied, during the latter part of his life, the house on the corner of Bridge and Northey streets.

45. VI. 70. *Sarah Cheever*, the wife of Samuel Ropes, probably born in Salem, died in Cambridge, Mass.<sup>2</sup>

For some time Mrs. Ropes was a member of the East Church, Salem; but in 1823 she joined the Tabernacle Church.

She was a daughter of Ezekiel Cheever. ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{40}$ .

45. VI. 72. *Ruth Ropes* [Ruth 41-47. V. 16], born in Salem, baptized there Feb. 15, 1761, died in Salem.<sup>3</sup>

The gravestone of Mrs. Leach is still standing in the Broad Street Burying Ground, Salem.

45. VI. 72. *John Leach*, her husband, born in Salem, died at sea. A shipmaster and merchant. Residence: Salem.<sup>4</sup>

During the Revolutionary War, Captain Leach was very active, and commanded the following armed vessels: the ship *Brutus* of twenty guns and one hundred and ten men; the brig *Franklin* of eighteen guns and

<sup>1</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. p. 198.

<sup>2</sup> The date of her death is given on the State Record as Oct. 12, 1842. Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. p. 198, and the Salem Gazette of Oct. 17, 1842, give it as Oct. 11, 1842; while the Nichols Family Records give it as Oct. 9, 1842. The date of her birth is given as March 17, 1758, in Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. p. 198; while the same work, Vol. IV. p. 140, gives it as March 7, 1758.

<sup>3</sup> The date of her death is given as May 3, 1850, in the Ropes Bible and in the Salem Gazette of May 4, 1850; while the State Record, Vol. 48, p. 142, gives it as May 7, her gravestone as May 10, and Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. p. 198, as May 18, 1850.

<sup>4</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. p. 198, gives the date of his birth as Nov. 5, 1741, while the same work, Vol. III. p. 91, gives it as 1747.

ninety men; the brig *Eagle* of fourteen guns and seventy men; the schooner *Dolphin* of six guns and twenty-five men, and the schooner *Greyhound* of eight guns and thirty-five men.

Captain Leach's first wife was Sarah Hooper. He was a son of Robert and Mary [Trask] Leach.<sup>1</sup> See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{XI}$ .

46-47. VI. 73. **Hardy Ropes** [Ruth 41-47. V. 16], probably born in Salem, baptized there Jan. 23, 1763, died in Woodstock, N. H. A shipmaster. Residence: Orford, N. H.

Mr. Ropes was a shipowner of Salem, and suffered losses through the spoliations of the French Government. These losses were paid to his descendants under the French Spoliation Claim Act. He subscribed two hundred dollars toward building the frigate *Essex* for the protection of American commerce from the French in 1798.

About the year 1800, his health having failed, he purchased a farm in Orford, N. H., to which he removed, and where he lived during the remainder of a long life.

46-47. VI. 73. **Hannah Elson**, the wife of Hardy Ropes, probably born in Salem, baptized there May 26, 1765, died at Lyme, N. H.<sup>2</sup>

Mrs. Ropes was a daughter of Joseph and Hepsibah (Rea) Elson. ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{XII}$ .

47. VI. 74. **George Ropes** [Ruth 41-47. V. 16], probably born in Salem, baptized there Sept. 1, 1765, died at sea. A shipmaster. Residence: Salem.

About the year 1800, George Ropes removed with his brother Hardy to Orford, N. H., but becoming weary of a farmer's life, he returned to Salem, and resumed a seafaring life. For a time he lived in the old Crowninshield house on Brown Street, Salem. He was lost at sea, off the Rock of Gibraltar, on the fourth of April, 1807, while he was master of the ship *Venus*,

<sup>1</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. III. p. 91.

<sup>2</sup> The date of her death is given as February, 1823, in Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. p. 198. The Salem Gazette of Feb. 7, 1823, announces her death. The late Dr. Henry Wheatland gave it as January, 1823.

having been washed overboard in a gale of wind. In the notice of his death, he is spoken of as "a very worthy man."<sup>1</sup> There is a photograph of a portrait of Captain Ropes in possession of the Salem Marine Society.

47. VI. 74. *Seeth Millet*, George Ropes's wife, probably born and died in Salem.

Mrs. Ropes was a member of The East Church, Salem.

The following notice of her death is taken from the Salem Gazette of Aug. 1, 1823:—

"In this town, on Wednesday, after a lingering illness, which she sustained with Christian fortitude, Mrs. Seeth Ropes, widow of the late Capt. George Ropes, aged 54 years."

Mr. and Mrs. Ropes were first cousins, once removed. Her number in direct descent is [14. VII. 97].

47. VI. 75. *Joseph Ropes* [Ruth 41-47. V. 16], probably born in Salem, baptized there Feb. 11, 1770, died at sea in the schooner *Active*. Residence: Salem.

47. VI. 76. *Timothy Ropes* [Ruth 41-47. V. 16], probably born in Salem, died in Salem. A cooper and shipmaster. Residence: Salem.<sup>2</sup>

Timothy Ropes learned the cooper's trade, but abandoned it for a sea-faring life, and rose to the command of a vessel, making voyages to European ports. He seems to have been successful, until the embargo and the war of 1812 checked his prosperity. Between the years 1815 and 1825, or thereabouts, he made frequent voyages to the West Indies, bringing cargoes of molasses to Salem; but subsequently business fell off, and he resorted to his trade as an occupation. His declining years were spent happily and in comfort in the midst of a loving family.

In 1796 and 1799, he bought his father's house of the other heirs. It was

<sup>1</sup> The Salem Gazette of June 5, 1807, and Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. p. 198.

<sup>2</sup> The date of his death is given in the Salem Register of Feb. 21, 1848, as Feb. 17, 1848, and also in Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. p. 199, while the Nichols Family Records give it as Feb. 18, 1848.

situated on the corner of Essex and Monroe streets. In it all his children were born. The house, in a reconstructed form, is now owned by his daughter, Mrs. John Bertram. Jan. 6, 1813, the house passed into the hands of *Ichabod Nichols* [44. VI. 69]. Mr. Ropes moved into a house nearly opposite to it, in Essex Street, where he died.<sup>1</sup>

47. VI. 76. *Sarah Holmes*, the wife of Timothy Ropes, probably born in Salem, died in Salem.

Mrs. Ropes was a daughter of Thomas and Sarah (Delhonde) Holmes. Her ancestry includes the following families: Holmes, Delhonde, Stedman, Remington, Gibson, Pemberton, Pike, Ormes. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{44}$ .

48. VI. 77. *John Clarke* [Sarah 48. V. 17].

For an account of Mr. Clarke, see page 192-194.

48. VI. 77. *Esther Orne*, his wife.

Her number in direct descent is [7. VI. 16.] For an account of Mrs. Clarke, see pages 191-192.

48. VI. 80. *Ann Clarke* [Sarah 48. V. 17], probably born in Salem, died in Salem.

Mrs. Cabot was sometimes called Nancy. She was the twin-sister of Mary Clarke, who died young. She was admitted to the First Church Nov. 5, 1780.

The following obituary of Mrs. Cabot is taken from the Salem Mercury of Tuesday, Sept. 19, 1788:—

“On Tuesday evening last, was suddenly summoned by death from this frail existence, beloved and lamented by a numerous acquaintance, Mrs. ANN CABOT in the 28th year of her age, consort of Mr. FRANCIS CABOT, merchant, and eldest daughter of Capt. JOHN CLARKE, of this town. In the meridian of usefulness and happiness, her relatives and friends had indulged the hope of enjoying her long; Heaven has seen fit to cut short that hope, and claim her, we trust, a fit ornament for purer regions.”

There is a very small and unsatisfactory miniature of Mrs. Cabot in the possession of her grandson, John H. Cabot, of Brookline.

<sup>1</sup> Letter of his son Joseph Ropes, dated Salem, Dec. 21, 1891; also Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. VII. p. 199.

48. VI. 80. *Francis Cabot*, her husband, probably born in Salem, baptized there June 19, 1757, died in Natchez, Miss. A merchant. Residence: Salem.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Cabot was for a time engaged in business in Salem, but he afterwards went to Natchez, Miss., his family, however, remaining in Salem. An obituary notice printed in the Salem Register of Aug. 9, 1832, says of him that "He was aid to Gen. Lincoln in the days of Shay's conspiracy, marched as a volunteer private against the insurgents at the time of the whiskey insurrection, then about 45 years of age, and did duty as a private at New Orleans during the invasion of that city by the British in the last war."

Mr. Cabot is said to have been a very agreeable man, and to have made many friends. The heliotype of him here given is taken from a small miniature belonging to his grandson, John H. Cabot, of Brookline.

Francis Cabot was son of Joseph and Elizabeth (Higginson) Cabot, of Salem. *Elizabeth Cabot* [1-2. VI. 2<sup>1</sup>] was his sister; *Joseph Cabot* [6. VI. 11] was his brother; *Francis Higginson* [3. VI. 4<sup>1</sup>] was his uncle; *Marianne Cabot* [48. VII. 26.4], who became his daughter-in-law, was his niece; *Elizabeth Perkins Cabot* [2. VIII. 15] is his grandniece; *Richard Clarke Cabot* [51. IX. 1032] is his great-grandnephew, and *Deborah Cabot* [2. VI. 2<sup>2</sup>] was his first cousin. His ancestry includes the following families: Cabot, Orne, Thompson, Higginson, Whitfield, Sheafe, Savage, Symmes, Gardner, Frier, Orne, Brown, Boardman, Bull, Truesdale, Halton. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{4}$ .

48. VI. 81. *Elizabeth Clarke* [Sarah 48. V. 17], probably born in Salem, died in Salem.<sup>2</sup>

She was called Betsey. Her gravestone is still standing in the Broad Street Burying Ground.

49. VI. 83. *Mary Leavitt* [Mary 49-50. V. 18], probably born in Salem, baptized there Feb. 9, 1755, probably died in Salem.

She was called Polly. There is, at the Pickering house in Salem, a full-length picture of her painted by Joseph Badger, when she was about ten

<sup>1</sup> Francis H. Lee gives the date of his birth as June 19, 1757, which is the date of his baptism. The Salem Records give it as June 14, 1757.

<sup>2</sup> The date of her death is given as Oct. 4, 1810, by several authorities. It is given as September, 1819, by Francis Cabot.

FRANCIS CABOT.

[48. VI. 80]

FROM THE MINIATURE NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF JOHN HIGGINSON CABOT,  
ESQ., OF BROOKLINE, MASS.



MARY (LEAVITT) ORNE.

[49. VI. 83.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY JOSEPH BADGER, PAINTED AT ABOUT THE AGE OF  
TEN YEARS, NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF JOHN PICKERING, ESQ., OF  
SALEM, MASS.



years old. A heliotype of it is here given. Her gravestone is still standing in the Broad Street Burying Ground, Salem.

49. VI. 83. *Joseph Orne*, her husband, born in Salem, baptized there June 18, 1749, died in Salem, of consumption. A physician. Residence: Salem.

Dr. Orne, H. C. 1765, as a child was very precocious, and entered Harvard College when he was only twelve years old. Immediately after graduation he began the study of medicine under Dr. Edward A. Holyoke. In 1770, he removed to Beverly and there practised his profession. In 1777, he returned to Salem, where he followed his profession until his death.

He was a man of genius, wit, and learning. His ardor for the advancement of his favorite study is shown by his importing from Europe the most recent valuable publications, and by his dedicating all his leisure time to the investigation of new subjects. He had a decided taste for poetry and also for painting and *belles lettres*. He was considered an excellent poet, although it is thought that none of his poems were ever printed. He was one of the original members of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences.<sup>1</sup>

His second wife, whom he married in October, 1781, was Theresa Emery, a daughter of Noah and Joanna (Perryman) Emery of Exeter, N. H. She was born April 4, 1761, and died at Exeter, N. H., Nov. 14, 1843, aged 82 years. By her he had the following child:—

TERESA ORNE, born in 1782; married Charles Norris, and died in 1870.

*Robert Emery* [5. VII. 25], who was her nephew, married for his first wife Dr. Orne's half-sister, Eunice Orne.

Dr. Orne was a son of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Putnam) Orne of Salem. *Timothy Orne* [1-11. IV. 1] was his granduncle, and *Charles Henry Orne* [53. VII. 300] was his nephew. His ancestry includes the following families: Orne, Thompson, Ingersoll, Felton, Putnam, Porter, Hathorne, Putnam, Prince. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{47}$ .

<sup>1</sup> An obituary notice of him in the Massachusetts Gazette of Monday, Feb. 6, 1786; American Medical Biography, by James Thacher, Vol. I. pp. 411-413, and Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. IV. p. 276.

49. VI. 84. **Sarah Leavitt** [Mary 49-50. V. 18], born in Salem, baptized there Oct. 9, 1757, died in Portsmouth, N. H.

Mrs. White lived in Salem and Haverhill, Mass., Plaistow, N. H., Northwood, N. H., and she finally removed to Portsmouth, N. H.<sup>1</sup>

Her portrait, taken as a small child standing by the side of her mother, is now in the Pickering house in Salem. A heliotype of this painting is given facing page 112.

49. VI. 84<sup>1</sup>. **Isaac White**, her first husband, probably born in Charlestown, Mass., where he was baptized, Dec. 30, 1753; died at sea about the year 1780. A merchant. Residence: Salem.

The following account of him is taken from the *Life of John Pickering*, by his daughter, Mary Orne Pickering.<sup>2</sup>

"Isaac White was in active mercantile business in Salem during his married life, and in the spring or summer of the year 1780, embarked for Amsterdam, Holland, to purchase goods, leaving his wife and two daughters at home, the eldest of them between three and four years old, the other two years younger. The vessel in which he was returning from Holland was lost at sea."

Isaac White was a son of John and Mary (Henley) White, of Charlestown, Mass. *Rebecca White* [58. V. 24] was his cousin. His ancestry includes the following families: White, Bowles, Heath, Green, Jones, Greenwood, Allen, Henley. See ANCESTRY TABLES VI.

49. VI. 84<sup>2</sup>. **Jonathan Payson**, the second husband of Sarah Leavitt, born in Boston, died in Portsmouth, N. H. An upholsterer. Residence: Portsmouth.

Mr. Payson's advertisement as an upholsterer appears in the *Salem Gazette* of the year 1773. He moved from Salem to Haverhill, and engaged in business. The following is taken from a letter dated at Haverhill, May 10, 1785, written by Nathaniel Peaslee and Mary Sargeant, and addressed to Colonel Timothy Pickering:—

". . . Your coz, Sally White, is safely married to Mr. Payson, and I hope happily too. He and Mr. Johnston are in trade here, and in partnership. Their business is

<sup>1</sup> Manuscript Pedigree made by Judge Charles W. Goddard.

<sup>2</sup> Page 214.

very large for this place, and they support a very good character; and I hope they will make their business turn to good account. I suppose you might know them both when they lived in Salem, about ten years ago."<sup>1</sup>

The following account is taken from a manuscript Payson Genealogy, which states that Jonathan Pickering married a Miss Pickering. This of course is a mistake.

"Jonathan Payson in early life removed with his father to Boston from Rowley, and went into business. After his father's death he removed to Haverhill, where he met with heavy losses, and later went to Portsmouth, N. H. Here he opened a hotel at the Northend so called (now Market St.), near the corner of Hanover St. He was appointed postmaster of Portsmouth, which he held till his death in 1826."

Mr. Payson was a son of Jonathan Payson. Perhaps his father was the Jonathan Payson who was married in Boston, Dec. 27, 1743, to Anne Griffiths, by the Rev. Timothy Cutler, D.D. His ancestry includes the following families: Payson, Eliot, Phillips, Sargent, Appleton, Everard.  
SEE ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{\frac{1}{8}}$ .

50. VI. 85. Elizabeth Leavitt [Mary 49-50. V. 18], probably born in Salem, baptized there Sept. 16, 1759, died in Salem.<sup>2</sup>

Mrs. Pickman was called Betsey. Her stepfather, Judge Sargeant, in writing to his brother-in-law, Colonel Timothy Pickering, Sept. 29, 1783, about the health of Mrs. Sargeant, says:—

"She feels trouble for a long time, but this last [the death of her daughter, Mrs. Pickman] was peculiarly distressing. She certainly lost one of the most amiable children I ever knew. I loved her as one of my own children, and feel her loss as severely. It gives me a melancholy pleasure to speak, to think, to write of her."<sup>3</sup>

Colonel Pickering writes to his sister, Mrs. Sargeant, Feb. 9, 1783: "I should have mourned sincerely the loss of a niece so amiable as Betsey."

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. II. p. 179.

<sup>2</sup> Francis H. Lee gives the date of her birth as Sept. 16, 1759, while the Nichols Family Records give it as Sept. 14, 1759. The date of her death is given by the Salem Gazette of Thursday, Oct. 24, 1782, as Oct. 20, 1782, while several other authorities give it as Oct. 13, 1782.

<sup>3</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. II. p. 172.

The following obituary notice of Mrs. Pickman appeared in the Salem Gazette of Thursday, Oct. 24, 1872:—

“Died last Sunday morning, Mrs. ELIZABETH PICKMAN, Wife to Mr. WILLIAM PICKMAN, Merchant, and youngest Daughter of the late Reverend DUDLEY LEAVITT, aged 23 years.

“If a pure and benevolent mind; if the utmost softness and delicacy of manners; if the most amiable deportment in every relation of life, have merit among mankind, this excellent Lady truly dignified and adorned that station in which Heaven had placed her. The deep sorrow visibly impressed on the countenance of every friend, through an extensive circle of social connections, testifies the high place she held in their affections; and the undissembled grief of the poor, who shared her bounty, mark the beneficence of that open and liberal heart, which death has locked up forever.”

There is a beautiful miniature of her, very handsomely set in gold, in the possession of her granddaughter, Mrs. Richard Sullivan Fay, but Mrs. Fay was not willing that it should be reproduced in this work.

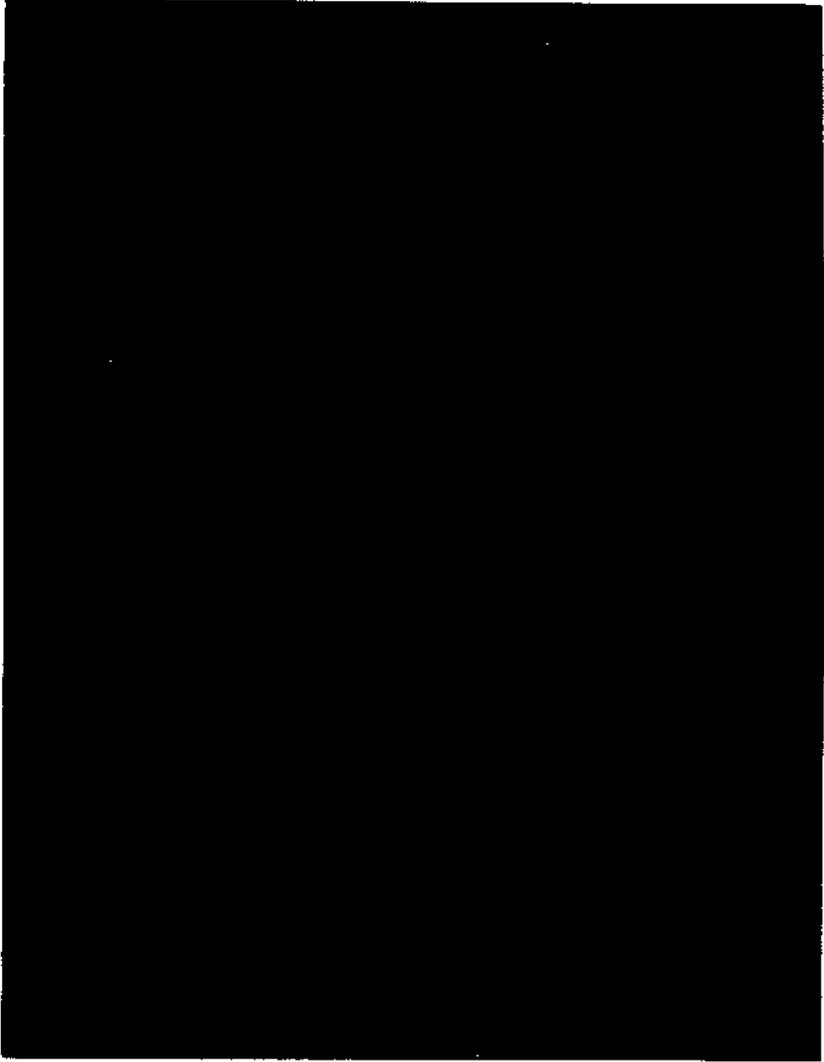
50. VI. 85. *William Pickman*, Elizabeth Leavitt's husband, probably born in Salem, baptized there March 13, 1747-8, died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.<sup>1</sup>

William Pickman, H. C. 1766, was bred a merchant in the counting-room of his father, and embarked in business before the Revolutionary War commenced. At the close of the war, he was appointed by President Washington Naval Officer of the Port of Salem, and held the position fourteen years. He was a representative from Salem in the General Court in 1786, 1788, and 1789, and a delegate to the Constitutional Convention in 1779-80.<sup>2</sup>

An unpublished letter from Mrs. Rebecca Pickering to her husband, Colonel Timothy Pickering, dated at Philadelphia, June 1, 1783, speaks of a visit from Captain Goodhue, and says he was “led to speak of Betty Pickman's death, which he lamented very much. He says Mr. Pickman is exceedingly dejected with the loss of his wife, and his circumstances, which

<sup>1</sup> The date of his death is given as Nov. 3, 1815, by several authorities. It is given as Nov. 5, 1815, in the First Centenary of the North Church and Society, in Salem, p. 214.

<sup>2</sup> The Journal and Letters of Samuel Curwen, An American in England, from 1775 to 1783. Fourth edition by George A. Ward, pp. 628-630.



SAMUEL WILLIAMS.

[51. VI. 87.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY WASHINGTON ALLSTON, NOW IN THE POSSESSION  
OF MRS. THEODORE LYMAN, OF BROOKLINE, MASS.

Captain Goodhue tells me are very bad. He says the war has left him in such a situation that he scarce knows which way to support his family."

Mr. Pickman was a son of the Hon. Colonel Benjamin and Love (Rawlins) Pickman, of Salem. Colonel Pickman, William Pickman's father, was a distinguished man, and belonged to one of the most important families of Salem. He was a representative in the General Court in 1744, and was one of the Committee of War in 1745 for carrying on the siege of Louisburg. For the services he performed the Province gave him a very handsome silver punch-bowl, which descended to his great-great-grandson, Benjamin Pickman, M.D., who died at Montclair, N. J., June 4, 1893. Colonel Pickman, in 1756, was elected a member of the governor's council, and in the same year he was appointed a Judge of the Superior Court. He was one of the richest merchants of Salem, and in 1750 he built the house on Essex Street, which was noted for its beauty. It is still standing.<sup>1</sup>

*Clarke Gayton Pickman* [6. VI. 13] was his brother, and *Mary Toppan Pickman* [6. IX. 72<sup>r</sup>] was his grandniece. His ancestry includes the following families: Pickman, Hardy, Lindall, Veren, Rawlins, English. See

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{48}$ .

51. VI. 87. **Samuel Williams** [Lydia 51-52. V. 19], born in Salem, died in Boston. A banker. Residence: London, England.

Samuel Williams, H. C. 1780, first began business in Boston as a flour merchant. In 1793, in the early part of the French Revolution, he was appointed by President Washington consul at Hamburgh, and about the year 1796, he was transferred to London, where he remained till about 1801. In London he acted as consul, and also as the agent appointed by President Adams to attend to the American claims under Jay's treaty, the provisions of which were so beneficial to our suffering merchants. In London he established himself as a merchant and banker. He lived at No. 13, Finsbury Square, where he kept open house.

In his business relations he was considered as safe as the Bank of England. For thirty years he was the faithful and honorable representative on

<sup>1</sup> For an account of the Pickman Family, see the *Heraldic Journal*, Vol. II. pp 26-28, and *Essex Institute Historical Collections*, Vol. VI p. 95.

the Exchange of the commercial interests of the United States, and not long ago our older merchants still looked back to him with great respect and pride. He was an excellent man of business, but finally became embarrassed in his pecuniary affairs by becoming surety for his friends. He returned to the United States, and died at the house of his brother in Boston.

He is said to have been a charming man, very much beloved and respected. He was tall, with blue eyes, and he retained his florid complexion even after he had grown to be an old man.

Mr. Williams was a fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, and a corresponding member of the Massachusetts Historical Society.

A fine large portrait of him, painted by Washington Allston, and another by Stuart Newton, are in the possession of his grandnephew, Colonel Theodore Lyman, of Brookline. A heliotype is here given of the picture by Washington Allston.<sup>1</sup>

51. VI. 88. **Henry Williams** [Lydia 51-52. V. 19], born in Salem, baptized there Jan. 3, 1762, died in Boston.<sup>2</sup>

51-52. VI. 89. **Lydia Williams** [Lydia 51-52. V. 19], born in Salem, baptized there Oct. 2, 1763, died in Boston.

Mrs. Lyman is said to have been a lovely and accomplished woman. In the winter of 1784, Colonel Timothy Pickering visited Salem, and on his return to Philadelphia in a sleigh he took with him his niece, Lydia Williams, who passed several months in his family, and returned by water July 3, 1784. Colonel Pickering often refers to the happiness which her visit brought the family. He expresses his estimate of her as follows, in a letter to his sister Lois, dated May 17, 1784: —

<sup>1</sup> Salem Gazette, Friday, Jan. 22, 1841; *The Genealogy and History of the Family of Williams in America*, more particularly of the Descendants of Robert Williams of Roxbury, by Stephen W. Williams, M.D., A.M., p. 329, and the note book of Colonel Theodore Lyman.

<sup>2</sup> The date of his birth is given as Nov. 2, 1761, by Robert M. Pratt, also in a manuscript genealogy of the Williams Family, of Salem. It is given as Nov. 3, 1761, by two other authorities.

"Lydia is a charming girl. My wife and I shall be very unwilling to part with her. I hope her mother will not be in haste to send for her, unless Lydia herself should desire it; which I imagine she will not do yet."<sup>1</sup>

The Rev. John Clarke, in a letter to his uncle, Colonel Timothy Pickering, dated Feb. 16, 1793, says:—

"Our friends at Salem are well. Mrs. Lyman is the same lovely woman which you predicted from the accomplishments of Lydia Williams. And she is happy, very happy, with a man who knows how to appreciate her merits, and who has few equals in judgment and understanding."<sup>2</sup>

Rebecca Pickering, in a letter to her daughter, Mrs. Elizabeth Dorsey, dated at Wenham, May 5, 1818, in which she writes of going to Boston to have her portrait by Stuart finished, says: "An invitation came from Mrs. Lyman for me to go to her house, which I did. She looked remarkably well. I think she is one of the finest women I know. Your father has passed six weeks last winter there, much to his satisfaction."

51-52. VI. 89. *Theodore Lyman*, the husband of Lydia Williams, born in York, Me., died in Waltham, Mass. A merchant. Residences: Boston and Waltham.

While still a young man, Theodore Lyman went to Kennebunk, Me., and became a clerk in the store of Waldo Emerson. At the age of twenty-one he built a store and went into business on his own account. His first wife, whom he married Nov. 21, 1776, was Sarah Emerson. She died Jan. 21, 1784. She was a daughter of his employer, Waldo Emerson, and through her he became possessed of all the property of his father-in-law. This materially assisted him in his large business enterprises. He built and employed a large number of vessels, and engaged profitably in the West India trade. His wealth increased rapidly, and he built at great expense the largest and finest house in that part of the country. To this beautiful home he brought his second wife, Lydia Williams, Feb. 7, 1786. But its splendor did not compensate for the social life of Salem, where she had been surrounded by a cultivated circle of relatives and friends. This fact, added

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. II. p. 36.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., Vol. III. p. 65.

to his desire of enlarging the scale of his business, led him to remove to Boston in 1790. Here he widely extended his trade, sending his ships to the East Indies, to Europe, and to the northwest coast of America. His trade with the northwest coast was extensive. Loading his ships in Boston with a cargo of comparatively small value, it was there exchanged for a cargo of furs, which were taken to China, and there exchanged for a cargo of teas, silks, and the other commodities of that country. Such a voyage frequently made the owner rich. He acquired a large fortune, and was one of the merchant princes of his time. The names of few merchants are better known than that of Theodore Lyman.

By his first wife, Sarah (Emerson), Mr. Lyman had the following children:—

WALDO LYMAN	who died Oct. 23, 1780.
OLIVE LYMAN	who married Jan. 25, 1805, Henry Paine.
SARAH LYMAN	who died at Waltham, July 30, 1819.
RUTH LYMAN	who died Jan. 16, 1784, aged 8 days.

Mr. Lyman died at his beautiful seat in Waltham, which was one of the finest and oldest in America. The place, comprising several hundred acres, he bought in 1793, and on it he built a spacious house, which he made his summer home. The following description of the place was made after a visit to it, June 1, 1803, by Mrs. Eliza Southgate Bowne:—

“I have no time to tell you of this elegant place of Mr. Lyman’s, great taste in laying out the grounds. It surpasses everything of the kind I ever saw; beautiful serpentine river or brook, thickly planted with trees, and elegant swans swimming about — you can’t imagine, ’twas all most like enchantment.”<sup>1</sup>

The following is a more recent description of the place:—

“*Waltham House*, about nine miles from Boston, was, 25 years ago, one of the oldest and finest places as regards Landscape Gardening. Its owner, the late Hon. T. Lyman, was a highly accomplished man, and the grounds at Waltham House bear witness to a refined and elegant taste in rural improvement. A fine level park, a mile

<sup>1</sup> *A Girl’s Life Eighty Years Ago*. Edited by Clarence Cook, p. 149. It contains an engraving of Mr. Lyman’s place. See also an account of his place in *The Memorial History of Boston*, edited by Justin Winsor, Vol. IV. p. 635.



MARY (WILLIAMS) PRATT.

[52 VI 91]

FROM THE CRAYON PORTRAIT BY CIENEY, NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF  
MRS. PHILIP H. SEARS, OF BOSTON.

in length, enriched with groups of English limes, elms and oaks, and rich masses of native wood, watered by a fine stream and stocked with deer, were the leading features of the place at that time; and this and Woodlands were the two best specimens of the modern style, as Judge Peter's seat, Lemon Hill, and Clermont, were of the ancient style, in the earliest period of the history of Landscape Gardening among us."<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Lyman's place is now owned and occupied as a country seat by his grandson, Arthur Theodore Lyman.

Theodore Lyman was a son of the Rev. Isaac and Ruth (Plummer) Lyman, of York, Me. His ancestry includes the following families: Lyman, Osborne, Plum, Sheldon, Woodford, Blott, Warner, Plummer, Cheney, Jewett, Newman, Winthrop, Forth, Read, Emerson, Symonds, Read. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{64}$ .

52. VI. 90. Timothy Williams [Lydia 51-52. V. 19], born in Salem, baptized there Sept. 1, 1765, died in Boston. A merchant. Residence: Boston.

Mr. Williams, H. C. 1784, was a man of sterling worth, but not widely known. He was an excellent specimen of the Boston merchant, honorable in his dealings, simple, high-minded, generous, and manly in his character. To worthy young men who needed aid in their first struggles to gain a place and a name, he was a sound adviser and a generous friend. He was very shy and silent. As to appearance, he was a tall man with red hair. He died at the United States Hotel, Boston.<sup>2</sup>

52. VI. 91. Mary Williams [Lydia 51-52. V. 19], probably born in Salem, baptized there Aug. 9, 1767, died in Watertown, Mass.

Mrs. Pratt was a woman of great beauty of character. She was ever

<sup>1</sup> Landscape Gardening and Rural Architecture, by A. J. Downing, p. 33; The History of Wells and Kennebunk, Me., by Edward E. Bourne, LL. D., pp. 494-495; The Lyman Genealogy, by Lyman Coleman, D.D., pp. 361-362.

<sup>2</sup> The Genealogy and History of the Family of Williams in America, more particularly of the Descendants of Robert Williams of Roxbury, by Stephen W. Williams, M.D., A.M., pp. 327-329, in which it is erroneously stated that Mr. Williams's parents came from Portsmouth, England, and settled in Salem. An obituary notice of him was printed in the Boston Daily Atlas, and was copied into the Christian Register, and again into the Williams Genealogy.

kind, disinterested, and thoughtful of others, neglecting herself. The daily interests, the anxieties, the pleasures, and the sorrows of her friends, were subjects of her unflinching sympathy, and her charities were ample, but unobtrusive. Even when she was treading on the confines of a century, age had not visited her bright eye, her fair hair, nor her unruffled brow.<sup>1</sup>

After her husband's death, she and her three daughters removed, in 1852, from the Summer Street house to No. 85 Mount Vernon Street. When her daughter, Mary Pratt, died, the heirs sold the house to Miss Pratt's niece, Mrs. Philip H. Sears. This house is a fine example of the architecture of Thomas Bulfinch.

The excellent crayon portrait of Mrs. Pratt, by Cheney, which is here reproduced, is in the possession of her granddaughter, Mrs. Philip H. Sears, of Boston.

52. VI. 91. *William Pratt*, the husband of Mary Williams, born in Derbyshire, England, died in Boston. A merchant. Residences: Boston and Watertown, Mass.

Mr. Pratt left Derbyshire in 1783, and went to London. In 1784, or about that time, he came to Boston, where he engaged in the importation of dry goods, being a partner in the firm of Boott & Pratt, whose store was on Butler's Row,<sup>2</sup> and who, in 1787, advertised in a Boston newspaper, "Fresh Woollens, Arrived by the *Mercury* and *Neptune*, the last ships from London. And to be sold by *wholesale* at Boott & Pratt's Store, Butler's Row." He accumulated a large fortune, and is said to have left at his death, in 1844, an estate of over a million dollars.

Mr. Pratt removed from his house on Pearl Street to the residence on Summer Street, formerly occupied by the Hon. William Gray. It was the most conspicuous estate on the easterly side, next to Trinity Church and bordering on Hawley Street.<sup>3</sup> "Oakley," Mr. Pratt's country seat at

<sup>1</sup> Obituary in the Boston Daily Advertiser of Aug. 29, 1864.

<sup>2</sup> From 1789-1835 from Merchant's Row to Spear's Wharf. Chatham Street now includes a part of it.

<sup>3</sup> The Boston Daily Advertiser of Aug. 31, 1881.

WILLIAM PRATT.

[52 VI 27.]

FROM THE MINIATURE NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF ROBERT MARION PRATT,  
ESQ., OF BOSTON, MASS.





STEPHEN WILLIAMS.

[52. VI. 93.]

FROM THE MINIATURE, NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF JEFFRIES WYMAN,  
ESQ. OF NEWTON, MASS.

Watertown, now owned and kept up by his grandson, Robert M. Pratt, was one of the most beautiful and extensive estates in the vicinity of Boston. It was celebrated for its fine trees, and its fruit and flower gardens.

A miniature of Mr. Pratt, now in the possession of his grandson, Robert M. Pratt, is here reproduced.

Mr. Pratt was a son of Samuel and Anne [Storer] Pratt, of Derbyshire, England. *Jane Pratt* [58. VI. 116] was his niece. ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{51}$ .

52. VI. 92. **John Williams** [Lydia 51-52. V. 19], probably born in Salem, baptized there Aug. 13, 1769, died in Northborough, Mass.<sup>1</sup>

52. VI. 93. **Stephen Williams** [Lydia 51-52. V. 19], born in Salem, baptized there May 8, 1774, died in Northborough, Mass. A farmer. Residence: Northborough.

In early life he was engaged in business in Boston, at one time with Theodore Lyman; but he afterwards removed to Northborough, Mass., where he became one of the most skilful farmers of Worcester county. He was a justice of the peace, and his fellow citizens put the utmost confidence in him. He was public-spirited and benevolent, and a man of the strictest integrity.

The miniature of him, which is here reproduced, is now in the possession of his great-grandson, Jeffries Wyman, of Newton, Mass.

52. VI. 93. *Alice Orne*, the wife of Stephen Williams, born in Salem, baptized there April 23, 1769, died in Northborough, Mass.

Mrs. Williams was a daughter of Captain Josiah and Alice (Palmer) Orne, of Salem. *Edward Orne* [52. VII. 288] was her nephew, and *Elizabeth Putnam Orne* [52. VIII. 592<sup>1</sup>] and *Anne Fiske Orne* [52. VIII. 592<sup>2</sup>] were her grandnieces. Her ancestry includes the following families: Orne, Thompson, Ingersoll, Felton, Elvins, Beadle, Palmer. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{51}$ .

<sup>1</sup> The date of his birth is given as Aug. 6, 1769, by his niece, Sarah P. Pratt; as Aug. 5, 1769, by W. Dudley Pickman; as Aug. 16, 1769, by his grandnephew, Robert M. Pratt, and as June, 1769, by the Gardner Family Records and by Dr. Henry Wheatland. The date of his death is given as June 19, 1839, by his niece, Sarah P. Pratt; and as June 20, 1839, by the Gardner Family Records and by Dr. Henry Wheatland.

52. VI. 94. **Elizabeth Williams** [Lydia 51-52. V. 19], born in Salem, baptized there May 8, 1774, died in Salem, of consumption.<sup>1</sup>

52. VI. 94. **Moses Little**, her husband, born in Newburyport, Mass., died in Salem. A physician. Residence: Salem.<sup>2</sup>

Moses Little, H. C. 1787, studied medicine with Dr. Jonathan Swett of Newburyport, Mass., and in 1791 began the practice of his profession in Salem. He became very celebrated, and ranked among the leading physicians in Essex County. He built a house which is still standing directly opposite Plummer Hall, Salem. He did not live to occupy it long. He himself, his wife, and his three children all died of consumption. At his request, the following lines were inscribed upon his tombstone:—

“ Phthisis insatiabilis,  
Patrem matremque  
Devorasti.  
Parce, O ! Parce,  
Liberis.”<sup>3</sup>

Dr. Little was a son of Richard and Jane (Noyes) Little. His ancestry includes the following families: Little, Poor, Coffin, Thember, Stevens, Greenleaf, Dole, Rolfe, Brocklebank, Noyes, Parker, Brown, Greenleaf, Coffin, Thember, Stevens, Smith, Kent. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{53}$ .

52. VI. 95. **Francis Williams** [Lydia 51-52. V. 19], probably born in Salem, baptized there June 23, 1776, died in Holland. Residence: Europe.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The date of her birth is given as April 25, 1776, by Sarah P. Pratt and Robert M. Pratt, and as 1773 by the Gardner Family Records and by Dr. Henry Wheatland. The date of her death is given as May 29, 1808, by Sarah P. Pratt and Robert M. Pratt, and in The Descendants of George Little, by George T. Little, p. 94, and as May 28, 1808, in Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. IV. p. 83.

<sup>2</sup> The date of his birth is given by Sarah P. Pratt, and in The Descendants of George Little, by George T. Little, p. 94, as July 4, 1766, while Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. IV. p. 83, gives it as July 3, 1766.

<sup>3</sup> The Descendants of George Little, by George T. Little, p. 94; also Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. IV. p. 83.

<sup>4</sup> The date of his birth is given by Sarah P. Pratt and Robert M. Pratt as June 17, 1776, and by the Gardner Family Records and Dr. Henry Wheatland as 1775. The date of his death is given by Robert M. Pratt and Miss Sarah P. Pratt as June 22, 1847, while Colonel Theodore Lyman's note book, p. 5, says he died some time before 1821 in Holland.



LOAMMI BALDWIN.

[52. VI. 36.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY CHESTER HARDING, NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF  
MRS. CATHERINE R. GRIFFITH, OF QUEBEC, CANADA.

Francis Williams, H. C. 1796, did not meet with much success in business. He wrote a very good letter. He is said to have once been engaged to a daughter of the banker Hottinguer, but the match was broken off. He lived most of the time in Europe.<sup>1</sup>

52. VI. 96. *Anna Williams* [Lydia 51-52. V. 19], born probably in Salem, baptized there March 14, 1779, as Anna, died in Boston.

Mrs. Baldwin was called Nancy.

52. VI. 96. *Loammi Baldwin*, her husband, born in North Woburn, Mass., died in Charlestown, Mass., of paralysis. A civil engineer. Residence: Charlestown.<sup>2</sup>

Colonel Baldwin, H. C. 1800, was fitted for college at Westford Academy. While in college his inclination seems to have been toward mechanical subjects, and he made with his own hands a clock which kept very good time, and was the wonder and admiration of his class. He does not seem to have found out at once for what he was intended. Upon graduating from college he entered the law office of Timothy Bigelow of Groton. During his studies here he constructed a fire engine, of which the village stood in great need; and this small machine was still, in 1885, in active service after a use of over eighty years, and would then throw a stream over the highest roof in town. He completed his legal studies in 1804, and then opened an office in Cambridge. But his taste for mechanical arts asserted itself so strongly that, in 1807, he closed his office and went to England for the purpose of examining the various public works of that country. On his return he opened an office in Charlestown, and entered upon the life of a civil engineer, for which he was so admirably fitted.

His services were in demand by very many of the States of the Union, as is testified to by his scientific surveys for canals, roads and aqueducts. One of his earliest works was Fort Strong on Noddle's Island in Boston harbor. From 1817 to 1820, he was engaged on public works in Virginia; and, in 1821, he was appointed engineer of the Union Canal in Pennsyl-

<sup>1</sup> Colonel Theodore Lyman's note book, p. 5.

<sup>2</sup> The date of his birth is given as May 16, 1780, by several authorities, while the Baldwin Genealogy, by Charles C. Baldwin, p. 628, gives it as May 18, 1778.

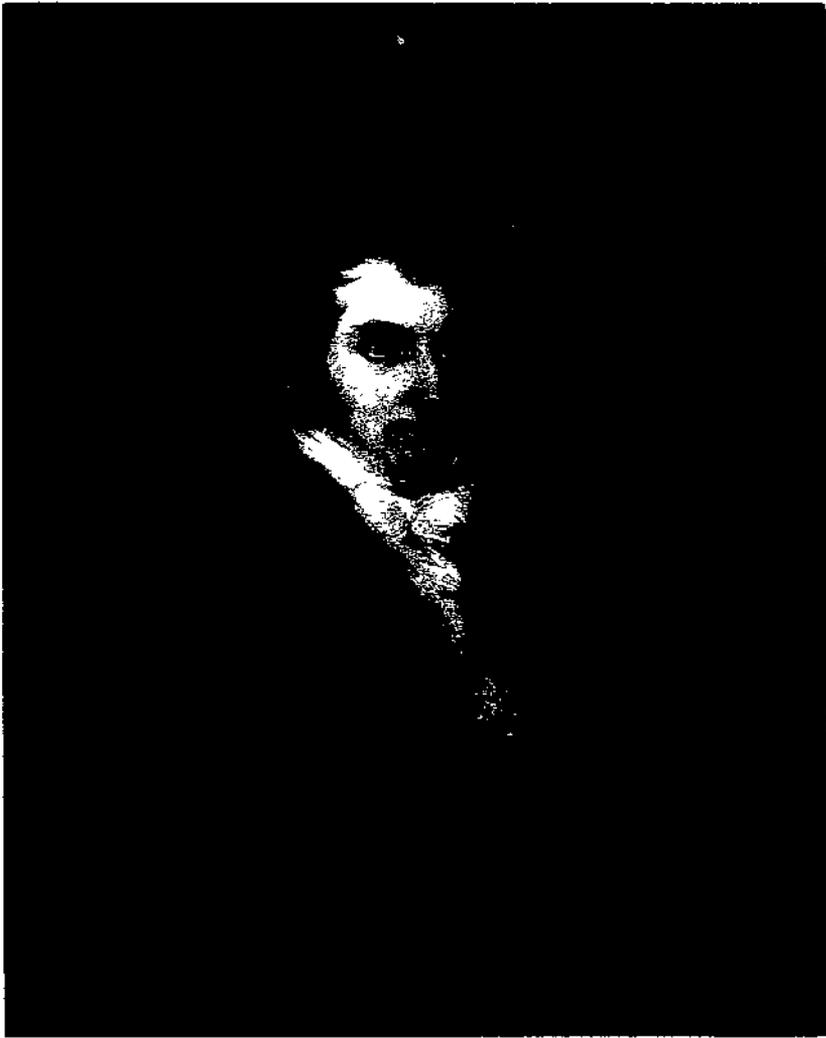
vania. In 1824, he went to Europe and devoted a year to the public works of France. He also went to Antwerp to inspect the docks. At this time he laid the foundation of the largest and best professional library of engineering works that was to be found in America. He also owned some of the best paintings of his classmate Washington Allston. When a committee was appointed to decide upon the plan of Bunker Hill Monument, he was made its chairman. From 1827 to 1834, he was engaged on the two great works of his life — the naval dry docks at Charlestown, Mass., and those at Norfolk, Va. Although he was so constantly employed that he had but little time for other engagements, yet he was a public-spirited man, and served as a member of the governor's council in 1835, and as a presidential elector in 1836.

Colonel Baldwin had a keen sense of wit and humor, and was a most genial companion. He was the delight of all circles — the gayest of the young and the instructor of the old — the playful companion or wise counsellor. His friends were captivated by his wit and humor. They gloried in the purity and sternness of his principles — his avoidance of all that was mean, selfish, and little. His attachment to a few devoted friends began early in life, and ended only with his last breath. He was liberal and hospitable, and to his professional abilities he added those virtues which adorn private life, and sweeten social intercourse. He was over six feet in height and superbly built. His face, as is shown by his admirable portrait, presents a rare combination of intelligence, of manliness, and of dignity.<sup>1</sup>

On June 22, 1828, Colonel Baldwin married as a second wife Mrs. Catherine, widow of Captain Thomas Beckford, of Charlestown. She died May 3, 1864, aged 77 years.

Colonel Baldwin's portrait was painted in early life by Leslie. Washington Allston made a sketch of him, and Powers a bust. The portrait which we have had reproduced was painted by Chester Harding. It is in the possession of his niece, Mrs. Catherine R. Griffith, of Rumford House, Mt. Pleasant, Quebec, Canada, and hangs in the old family mansion of the

<sup>1</sup> Obituaries in Salem Gazette of July 3, 1838, and in the Boston Daily Advertiser of July 2 and July 3, 1838; and A Sketch of the Life and Works of Loammi Baldwin, Civil Engineer, by George L. Voss.



CHARLES WILLIAMS.

[52. VI. 98.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY LESLIE, PAINTED IN '87, NOW IN THE POSSESSION  
OF THE MISSES WHITNEY, OF CAMBRIDGE, MASS.



SAMUEL BLANCHARD.

[53. VI. 29.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY SPILUM, PAINTED IN CANTON, CHINA, IN 1790, NOW  
IN THE POSSESSION OF ROBERT CHARLES WINTHROP, ESQ., OF BOSTON.

Baldwins, in North Woburn. This house is a fine specimen of Colonial architecture.

Colonel Baldwin was a son of Loammi and Mary (Fowle) Baldwin. His father was a distinguished citizen of Woburn, and served in the Revolutionary War as the colonel of a regiment. He was much interested in the cultivation of fruit, and to him we are indebted for the well-known Baldwin apple, which he perfected and brought into use. His ancestry includes the following families: Baldwin, Richardson, Fisk, Wilson, Richardson, Green, Blodgett, Iggleden, Fowle. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{I}$ .

52. VI. 98. **Charles Williams** [Lydia 51-52. V. 19], born in Salem, baptized there Jan. 18, 1784, died in London, England. A banker. Residence: London.

Mr. Williams was in business in London with his brother, Samuel Williams. The two brothers set up housekeeping as early as 1801, at No. 13, Finsbury Square, London, where they entertained a great deal. He thought it beneath a gentleman to write a book, and seems, though an American, to have been a tory of the old school. He is said to have been something of an artist, and Leslie, Allston, and Newton were frequent visitors at his house. He became poor.<sup>1</sup>

A heliotype is here given of his portrait, painted by C. R. Leslie, R. A., in 1817. It is now in the possession of his grandnieces, the Misses Whitney, of Cambridge, Mass.

53. VI. 99. **Elizabeth Gardner** [Elizabeth 53. V. 20], born in Salem, baptized there Feb. 11, 1759; died in Wenham, Mass.

Mrs. Blanchard was buried in Wenham, where her gravestone is still standing.

53. VI. 99. **Samuel Blanchard**, her husband, born in Boston, died in Wenham, Mass. A surgeon. Residence: Wenham.

Mr. Blanchard received a medical education, and for a short time was a surgeon in the army of the Revolution. After leaving the army, he became the surgeon of several privateers. After the war, he gave up his

<sup>1</sup> Note book of Colonel Theodore Lyman.

profession and went to France and to the East Indies as supercargo. For several years he was a merchant in Salem and in Baltimore. About the year 1797, he purchased a farm in Wenham, where he lived many years. He represented the town in the General Court for the years 1797, 1798, 1799, 1800, 1803, 1808, 1809, and 1810. He was buried at Wenham, where his gravestone is still standing.

A heliotype of his portrait is here given. It was painted in Canton, China, in December, 1790, by a Chinese artist. It is owned by his great-grandson, Robert C. Winthrop, of Boston.

Samuel Blanchard was a son of Joshua Blanchard, of Boston, a member of the Committee of Public Safety. ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{55}$ .

53. VI. 100. **John Gardner** [Elizabeth 53. V. 20], born in Salem, baptized there Aug. 31, 1760, died in Charleston, S. C. A merchant. Residence: Charleston.

Mr. Gardner lived about eight years in Charleston, where he was engaged in business with his brother, Samuel Pickering Gardner.

53. VI. 101. **Samuel Pickering Gardner** [Elizabeth 53. V. 20], born in Wenham, Mass., baptized in Salem, May 31, 1767, died in Boston. A merchant. Residence: Boston.

Mr. Gardner, H. C. 1786, soon after leaving college, engaged in commercial pursuits in Charleston, S. C., sailing for that place Sept. 28, 1787. He returned to Boston, Aug. 8, 1793, and established himself in business there. Having acquired a fortune, he retired from active business, devoting his leisure to society and the enjoyment of cultivated tastes. In 1800, he bought the Summer Street estate, thenceforward his hospitable home. This house, built by Leonard Vassall, was a fine specimen of Colonial architecture. An excellent photograph of it is in possession of the family.

To avoid the inconvenience of having the same name as that of two other persons then in Boston, he had his name changed from Samuel Gardner to Samuel Pickering Gardner, by an Act of the General Court of Massachusetts, passed the fifteenth of February, 1796.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Obituary in the Boston Daily Advertiser, Friday, Dec. 22, 1843; New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol. XXV. pp. 48, 50; and the Gardner Family Records

SAMUEL PICKERING GARDNER.

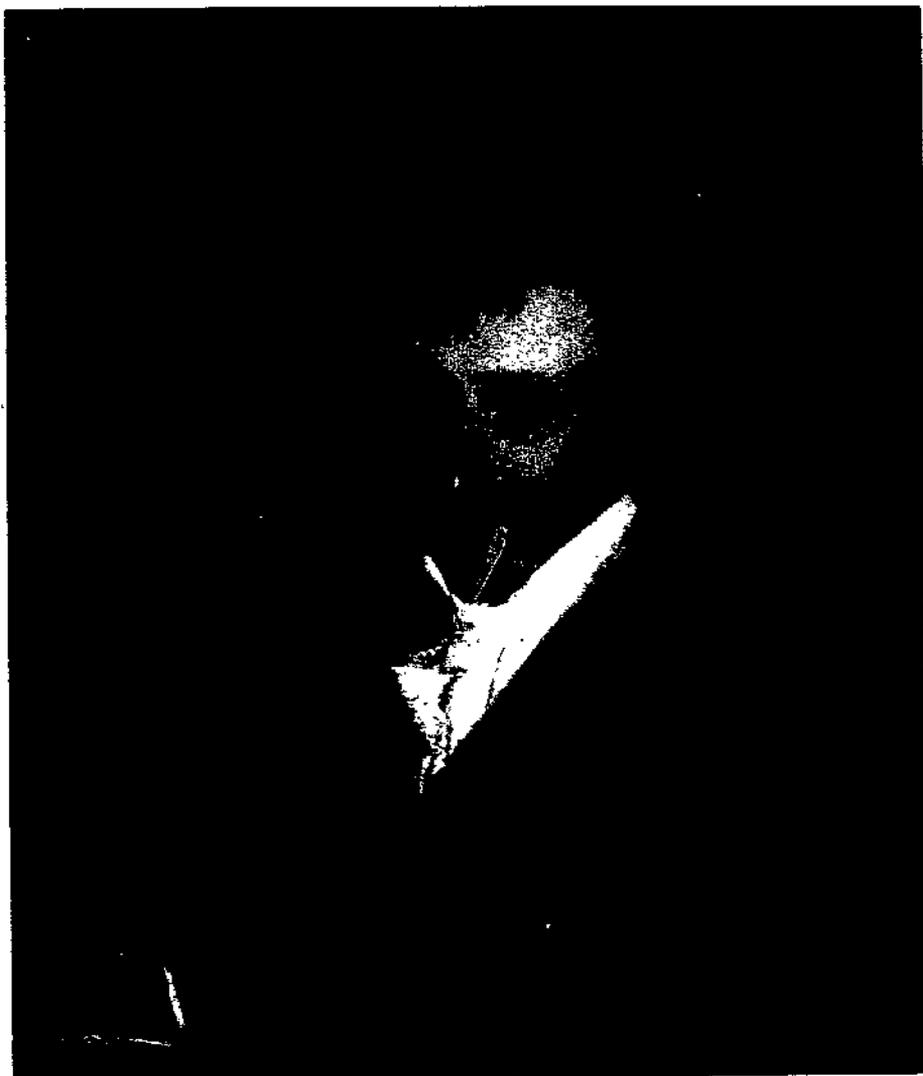
[53. VI. 101.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY GILBERT STUART, NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF  
MISS GEORGINA LOWELL, OF BOSTON.

REBECCA RUSSELL (LOWELL) GARDNER.

[53. VI. 101]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY GILBERT STUART, PAINTED IN NOVEMBER, 1810, NOW  
IN THE POSSESSION OF JOHN LOWELL GARDNER, ESQ., OF BOSTON.





There is an excellent portrait of Mr. Gardner, painted by Stuart, now in the possession of his granddaughter, Miss Georgina Lowell. It is here reproduced.

53. VI. 101. *Rebecca Russell Lowell*, the wife of Samuel P. Gardner, born in Boston, died in Boston.

Mrs. Gardner inherited from her father, Judge Lowell, not a little of that strong sense and energy which have rendered the name of Lowell distinguished in so many fields of intellectual and material enterprise. No one ever enjoyed the privilege of her society without being impressed by her vivid intelligence and ardent enthusiasm. But the moral element of her character is yet more fondly cherished in the memory of her friends. Her devoted fidelity to every duty of life, her untiring attention to all who were connected with her, her unostentatious charity, and her unwavering religious faith are the characteristics which have secured for her a permanent and loving remembrance.<sup>1</sup>

Her portrait, painted by Stuart in November, 1810, when she was thirty-one years old, is said to have been a perfect likeness of her at the time it was taken. It is now in the possession of her grandson, John Lowell Gardner. A heliotype of it is here given.

Mrs. Gardner was a daughter of the Hon. John and Rebecca (Russell) Lowell. The Hon. James Russell Lowell, late United States Minister to England, and *John Amory Lowell* [55. VII. 312], were her nephews; *Mary Lowell* [54. VII. 307] is her niece, and *Frances Temple Cordis* [25-26. VII. 143<sup>2</sup>] was her second cousin. Her father [H. C. 1760] was a member of the Continental Congress, and was appointed by that body one of the three judges for the trial of appeals from courts of admiralty. He was a member of the Convention which framed the Constitution of Massachusetts. He was appointed by Washington, in 1789, Judge of the District Court of Massachusetts, and, in 1801, was appointed Chief-Justice of the First Circuit. He was also a fellow of the Corporation of Harvard College for eighteen years. Mrs. Gardner's ancestry includes the following families:

in manuscript compiled by Samuel P. Gardner, to which we are indebted for much information. This family record is now in possession of his grandson, George A. Gardner.

<sup>1</sup> Obituary in the Boston Daily Transcript of Saturday, May 14, 1853.

Lowell, Sylvester, Torrey, Shaller, Champney, Bridge, Turrell, Moore, Hodges, Russell, Pitt, Curwen, Herbert, Chambers, Patefield, Graves, Gray, Stedman, Avery, Sparhawk, Angier, Newman. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{58}$ .

54-55. VI 102. **Sarah Gool** [Lois 54-55. V. 22], born in Salem, died in Boston.

The girlhood of Sarah Gool was chiefly passed with her mother in the Pickering mansion, where her uncle, John Pickering, would read aloud the masterpieces of English literature to his sister and niece, who were diligently employed upon the household needlework. Under her mother's tuition, she acquired skill in the domestic arts, those of taste and ornament not excluded. This early training in practical usefulness, combined with intellectual culture, was a fitting preparation for the life that was before her.

On her marriage her household, of which she had the direction, offered, as years went on, a more and more ample field for her energy and activity. She entered bravely and warmly into her husband's love for a large hospitality. When she had arranged for the material success of a dinner party, she was ready to enjoy the conversation of the eminent guests who met at her table and to enliven it by the quickness of her apprehension and the readiness of her repartee. This hospitable home was the home of happiness in every sense. Never were children more gratefully affectionate than hers. The daughters, brought up under her influence and guidance, repaid her, not only by their devoted attention, but by renewing her example for their own children, and by the loving joy she found in their beauty, dignity, and grace.

Dear as she was to the yet younger generation, to whom her house was a paradise of pleasure, she did not win them to it by any undue indulgence. She possessed their respect as well as their affection. She inculcated upon her grandchildren the active use of the faculties: "If you have a gift, dear, use it," is recollected by them as one of her precepts.

The gift of embroidery, which she added to so many others, she continued to practice through life. She designed her own patterns, sometimes

SARAH (GOOLL) PUTNAM.

[54-55. VI. 102.]

FROM THE CRAYON PORTRAIT BY CHENEY. NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF  
ROBERT HALE BANCROFT, ESQ., OF BOSTON.





SAMUEL PUTNAM.

[54-55. VI. 102.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY CHESTER HARDING, NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF  
AUGUSTUS LOWELL, ESQ., OF BOSTON.

forming wreaths or sprays of flowers from her garden, and transferring them in crewel to aprons or little dresses for her younger descendants. At the age of ninety or more, she was earnestly engaged in embroidery for the fairs held in behalf of our soldiers. She was one of those women who, in their devotion to the home, do not forget that they have a country.<sup>1</sup>

At the time of Mrs. Putnam's death, a printed notice of her was distributed among her relatives and friends. She is therein spoken of as greatly revered by them, and as one whose daily life was of unsurpassed beauty, and whose example contributed to the best influences upon society during every period of her lengthened days. Dr. Bartol preached a funeral sermon, Nov. 27, 1864, the Sunday after her death. The crayon portrait, by Cheney, which is here reproduced, is now in possession of her grandchildren, Robert H. Bancroft and Miss Ellen Bancroft.

54-55. VI. 102. *Samuel Putnam*, the husband of Sarah Gooll, born in Danvers,<sup>2</sup> Mass., baptized there June 19, 1768, died in Boston. A lawyer. Residences: Boston and Danvers.

Samuel Putnam, H. C. 1787, LL.D. 1825, began the study of law with the Hon. Theophilus Bradbury, of Newburyport. In 1790, he opened a law office in Salem, and soon had a large practice. While at the bar, he was distinguished for his knowledge of commercial law, his chivalric sense of honor, and his pleasant manners. He was liberal in his religious views, and could not endure any dogmatic or ecclesiastic tyranny. In 1808, 1809, 1813, and 1814, he represented Essex County in the Massachusetts Senate, and, in 1812, he was a representative from Salem in the General Court. In 1814, he was made a Justice of the Massachusetts Supreme Court. This position he filled for twenty-eight years, exhibiting powers of mind and elements of character that gained universal respect. His opinions on commercial law are considered among the most valuable contributions to juris-

<sup>1</sup> A large part of these facts have been kindly given by a daughter-in-law of Mrs. Putnam.

<sup>2</sup> The date of his birth is given as May 13, 1768, by his daughter-in-law, Mrs. Mary L. Putnam, and Mrs. Arthur T. Lyman. Several other authorities give it as April 13, 1768.

prudence to be found in the Reports of the State of Massachusetts. While at the bar, Judge Putnam, like his associates, was an ardent Federalist of the school of Washington, Hamilton, and Pickering, and took a decided interest in public affairs. His zeal in politics had no reference to office or political promotion, which he never sought, and which he was always reluctant to accept when it was pressed upon him. He removed with his family from Salem, in 1833, to Boston, and at first lived on Essex Street, and afterwards on Allston Street. His summer home was the ancestral farm at Danvers, which had descended to him in a direct line from the first Nathaniel Putnam. He cherished this farm, and loved to set out trees, whose full growth only his posterity could see.

Judge Putnam was a man of unsullied character, and enjoyed the friendship of a wide and distinguished circle of friends. His house was noted for its hospitality. He was remarkably fond of music and society. He had a large and interesting family, the daughters being quite famous for their beauty and musical talent. His children all removed to Boston at about the same time, and all grouped themselves around him. Twice a week in winter the whole family came together. Many visitors joined these gatherings, and as there were a large number of grandchildren, the rooms were always well filled. As a host, Judge Putnam had a peculiar charm of manner, which made his welcome and his conversation delightful to his guests. He was an accomplished horseman, and made a fine appearance on horseback. After he had grown to be an old man, he rode out every day till he was nearly eighty years old.<sup>1</sup>

The portrait of him which is here reproduced was painted by Chester Harding. It is now in the possession of his grandson, Augustus Lowell, of Boston. A heliotype of his residence in Salem is also given.

Samuel Putnam was a son of Gideon and Hannah (Brown) Putnam, of Danvers. His ancestry includes the following families: Putnam, Hutchinson, Bosworth, Bacon, Richardson, Giles, Morse, Brown, Raymond. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{57}$ .

<sup>1</sup> A Discourse on the Life and Character of Samuel Putnam, by Rev. O. A. Bartol; Obituaries in the Boston Daily Advertiser of July 6, 1853, and in the Salem Gazette of July 8, 1853; also Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. XV. p. 291.

THE HOUSE OF SAMUEL PUTNAM AT SALEM, MASS.,  
BUILT IN 1769.

[54-55 VI. 102.]



56. VI. 104. *Mary Wingate* [Eunice 56-57. V. 23], born in Hampton Falls, N. H., died in Stratham, N. H.

Mrs. Wiggin's gravestone is still standing in the Burying Ground of Stratham.

56. VI. 104. *Andrew Wiggin*, her husband, born in Stratham, N. H., died in Stratham. A farmer. Residence: Stratham.<sup>1</sup>

Major Wiggin was a prominent citizen, holding the office of magistrate. He was also a major in the militia. By his first wife, Mary Hill, or Mary Brackett,<sup>2</sup> whom he married Jan. 29, 1774, he had the following child:—

MARY WIGGIN, born Oct. 9, 1780. She married George Hilton, Esq., of Newmarket, N. H.

Major Wiggin's ancestor, Governor Thomas Wiggin, came to New Hampshire in 1631 as agent for the proprietary for the Upper Plantation. He returned to England on the business of the Province, and by his "good testimony," as Governor Winthrop says, "in behalf of the Massachusetts Colony," did much to avert the evils that threatened it from the enmity of Gorges and Mason. On his return to New Hampshire, he brought with him a considerable number of families from the west of England. He continued at the head of the plantation under Lords Say and Brooke. He was one of the principal men of the Province during his life. It is thought that at the present time one half of the inhabitants of Stratham can claim him as an ancestor. The estate owned and occupied by Major Wiggin descended to him from Governor Thomas Wiggin.<sup>3</sup>

Andrew Wiggin was a son of Andrew and Dorothy (Sweet) Wiggin. His ancestry includes the following families: Wiggin, Bradstreet, Dudley, Sweet. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{58}$ .

<sup>1</sup> The date of his birth is given as July 2, 1752, in Caleb Wiggin's Family Bible, while the History of the Wingate Family, by C. E. L. Wingate, p. 153, and the History of Rockingham County, N. H., p. 550, give it as July 14, 1752.

<sup>2</sup> Given as Mary Hill in Caleb Wiggin's Family Bible, and as Mary Brackett in the History of Rockingham County, N. H., p. 550.

<sup>3</sup> The History of Rockingham County, N. H., p. 548.

56. VI. 105. **Sarah Wingate** [Eunice 56-57. V. 23], born in Hampton Falls, N. H., died in Stratham, N. H.<sup>1</sup>

56. VI. 105. **Josiah Bartlett**, her husband, born in Kingston, N. H., died in Stratham, N. H. A physician. Residence: Stratham.<sup>2</sup>

Dr. Bartlett, like his father and brothers, was a distinguished and popular physician with a large practice. He was a politician of the Jefferson school, and was chosen State senator in 1809 and 1810. In 1810, he was elected a representative in Congress, where he served two years. In 1824, he was one of the presidential electors, was again chosen a State senator, and was elected president of the Senate. For several years he served as treasurer of Rockingham County. He continued the practice of his profession until a few years before his death. In 1812, he married as a second wife Miss Hannah Weeks, of Greenland, N. H., by whom he had no children.<sup>3</sup>

Josiah Bartlett was a son of the Hon. Josiah and Mary (Bartlett) Bartlett. His father was a Signer of the Declaration of Independence and a governor of New Hampshire. His ancestry includes the following families: Bartlett, Emery, Webster, Shatswell, Webster, Bartlett, Emery, Webster, Shatswell, Hoyt, Brown, Huntington, Bayley, Hunt. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{59}$ .

56. VI. 106. **George Wingate** [Eunice 56-57. V. 23], born in Stratham, N. H., died in Stratham. A farmer. Residence: Stratham.

George Wingate, H. C. 1796, was for a short time instructor of mathematics in Phillips Exeter Academy. He represented Stratham in the Legislature in 1847, and was a member of the Convention of 1850 for revising the constitution of New Hampshire. He never sought office, but was often called upon to serve as selectman and to give advice and assistance in his own and neighboring towns. He was usually called "The Squire," and

<sup>1</sup> The date of her birth was given by the late John Wingate Thornton and by Isabel C. Wingate as Nov. 27, 1769, while it is given as Nov. 7, 1769, in the History of the Wingate Family, by C. E. L. Wingate, p. 154.

<sup>2</sup> The date of his death is given as April 16, 1838, by the Nichols Family Records and in the Genealogical and Biographical Sketches of the Bartlett Family in England and America, by Levi Bartlett, and as April 6, 1838, by the late John Wingate Thornton.

<sup>3</sup> Genealogical and Biographical Sketches of the Bartlett Family in England and America, by Levi Bartlett, pp. 57, 58, and obituary in the Exeter News Letter of April, 1838.

GEORGE WINGATE.

[56. VI. 106.]

FROM THE DAGUERROTYPE, TAKEN ABOUT 1847, NOW IN THE POSSESSION  
OF JOSEPH C. A. WINGATE, ESQ., OF STRATHAM, N. H.



was perhaps better entitled to that name than any other citizen of Stratham. He was distinguished for his benevolence and urbanity.<sup>1</sup> There is a daguerrotype of him, taken about the year 1847, which is owned by his nephew, J. C. A. Wingate, of Stratham. A heliotype of it is here given.

56-57. VI. 107. **John Wingate** [Eunice 56-57. V. 23], born in Stratham, N. H., died in Stratham. A farmer. Residence: Stratham.

Mr. Wingate inherited the family estate, and engaged in agricultural pursuits. During the war of 1812-1814, he was captain of an artillery company which was for a time stationed at Portsmouth. He was a trustee of Hampton Academy, and was especially prominent in the religious work of his own and the neighboring towns. He gave his time and money freely for the support of every good work. With a meekness of deportment, an honesty of heart, and a fixedness of purpose which gained the affection and respect of every one who knew him, he seemed raised up to meet the needs of the church in Stratham, when its strength was fast ebbing away. He was a simple, sincere, and godly man.<sup>2</sup>

56-57. VI. 107. *Sally Piper*, his wife, born in Stratham, N. H., died in Stratham.

Mrs. Wingate was a daughter of Samuel and Mary (Robinson) Piper, of Stratham, N. H. ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{87}$ .

57. VI. 108. **Elizabeth Wingate** [Eunice 56-57. V. 23], born in Stratham, N. H., died in Stratham.

Miss Wingate was a woman whose prominent traits were amiability and kindness. A Christian worker of a truly charitable disposition and of no ordinary piety, she was instrumental in reviving the languishing and almost dying hopes of the church in Stratham at a time when it was threatened with extinction. She was also an unwearied worker in the Sunday School.

Miss Wingate died in 1829, and was the second person who had ever

<sup>1</sup> J. C. A. Wingate and Necrology of Alumni of Harvard College, by Joseph Palmer, p. 12.

<sup>2</sup> Obituary in the New Hampshire Observer of Feb. 9, 1831, written by the Rev. Jacob Cummings, of Stratham.

died in the old Wingate house. The other death occurred more than eighty years previous, and yet the house had been most of the time inhabited by large families.<sup>1</sup> There is a silhouette of her in the possession of her nephew, J. C. A. Wingate.

58. VI. 109. **John Pickering** [Timothy 58. V. 24], born in Salem, baptized there, died in Boston. A lawyer. Residence: Salem.<sup>2</sup>

John Pickering, H. C. 1796, LL. D. 1835, was sent by his parents to live in the family of his uncle, John Pickering, who occupied the homestead in Salem. Here his childhood was spent attending school, and here he was fitted for college by Mr. Thomas Bancroft. He was an amiable youth of a rather retiring and studious nature. Throughout his college course, he maintained a very high standard of scholarship and morality; and he had an English oration as his part at Commencement. On July 24, 1796, just after Commencement Day, his cousin, the Rev. John Clarke, wrote to the boy's father as follows:—

"I have only time to inform you that your son did himself and the college honor by his performance on the commencement Day. His elocution was excellent, and made the most favorable impression on an admiring auditory. It is impossible to describe the sentiments of respect with which he has inspired all who know him. He is, without exception, the *best youth* in the whole circle of my acquaintance. In composing the small volume of letters which accompany this, I had your son in contemplation. Consider them as addressed to your son."<sup>3</sup>

The small volume of letters spoken of was entitled, "Letters to a Student in the University of Cambridge, Mass., By John Clarke, Minister of a Church in Boston."

On graduating from college, he entered the office of Edward Tilghman, of Philadelphia, for the study of law. He continued with him about eight months, when he accepted an appointment as Secretary of Legation at Lisbon. He remained at Lisbon two years, filling the position with great credit, and making marked improvement in his knowledge of foreign lan-

<sup>1</sup> Obituary in the New Hampshire Observer of Sept. 30, 1829.

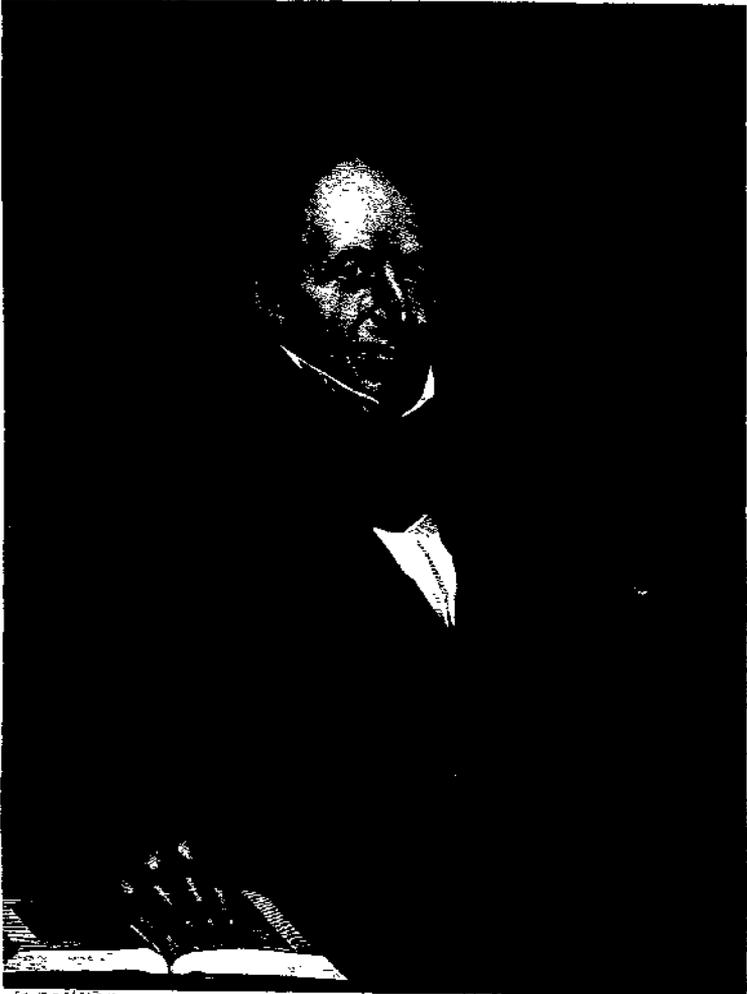
<sup>2</sup> The date of his birth is given as Feb. 7, 1777, by several authorities; while it is given as Feb. 17, 1777, in Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. XV. p. 315.

<sup>3</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. III. pp. 293-294.

JOHN PICKERING.

[§. VI. 109.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT, PAINTED BY CHESTER HARDING, NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF JOHN PICKERING, ESQ., OF SALEM, MASS.



guages. From Lisbon he went to London, where he was Secretary of Legation under Rufus King, the United States Minister to England. Before coming home he spent four months in travel on the Continent. He left England for home in August, 1801. Just before his departure, Mr. King wrote, on the sixteenth of August, to Colonel Pickering as follows:—

“As your son will in a few days leave me to return home, I cannot omit the occasion to renew to you my congratulations upon his good conduct and amiable disposition. During the time he has been with me he has been uniformly prudent and industrious; his information, to which he is constantly making useful additions, is much greater and more extensive, as well as correct, than we commonly find in young men of his age; and what you will judge of equal importance, his moral character is pure and unblemished. In a word, you will find in him what I am sorry to part with,—an instructive companion and a prudent friend.”<sup>1</sup>

On his return to Salem, he entered the law office of his cousin, Judge Samuel Putnam, to fit himself for his chosen profession. Early in March, 1804, he was admitted to the bar, and, on the sixth of the same month, he opened his office in Salem.

While in Europe, Mr. Pickering had collected a choice library, and in his leisure moments he continued to indulge in his favorite study of the languages. In 1806, he was chosen Hancock Professor of Hebrew and other Oriental languages in Harvard College, but this appointment he declined. In 1809, he was elected a corresponding member of the Anthology Society. In 1810, he was made a Fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences; and, in 1839, he succeeded Dr. Bowditch as its president. He was asked to accept the Greek professorship at Harvard College, but this also he declined.

In 1812, 1814, and in 1826, he represented Salem in the General Court. In 1814, he was appointed attorney for Essex County. In 1815–1816, he represented Essex County in the Massachusetts Senate. In 1816, he published his *Vocabulary*.<sup>2</sup> In 1818, he was a member of the Governor's Council, and in the same year he was chosen one of the overseers of Har-

<sup>1</sup> *Life of John Pickering*, by his daughter, Mary Orne Pickering, p. 199.

<sup>2</sup> A *Vocabulary or Collection of Words and Phrases* which have been supposed to be peculiar to the United States of America.

vard College. In 1826, he published his Greek Lexicon.<sup>1</sup> In 1827, he removed to Boston, and rented a house on Franklin Street. His law office was on Court Street. He was welcomed with great cordiality by a large circle of friends, relatives, and new acquaintances. In 1828, he served as an alderman of the city, and in the same year was chairman of the committee of the Latin School. In 1829, he represented Suffolk County in the State Senate. In this year he was chosen city solicitor of Boston, and he retained this office till 1846. In the year 1829, he was also vice-president of the Boston Society for the Diffusion of Useful Knowledge.

In August, 1832, he removed to No. 75 Beacon Street. In this and the adjoining house he lived for nine years. In June, 1833, he was chosen orator of the Phi Beta Kappa Society; but he declined to accept the position. In the course of the following years, he was elected an honorary member of the Pennsylvania Historical Society, a corresponding member of the Philosophical and Historical Class of the Royal Academy of Science of Prussia, a corresponding member of the Oriental Society of Paris, and a member of the Massachusetts Society of the Cincinnati.

Although he was much in public life, his tastes were those of a man of letters. He was best known as a distinguished scholar and author and by his connection with learned societies. There were few so eminent in scholarship as he, and none so skilled in the modern and Indian languages. He was more or less familiar with twenty-two languages. Besides being the author of several books, he contributed important papers to the periodicals of the time.

Mr. Pickering was a tall man of commanding presence, but benignant and courteous. He had a small, well-formed mouth, a Roman nose, and a serene and ample forehead. Familiarity with the diplomatic circles of European Courts had added to his natural dignity of presence, and had given a polished refinement to the courtesy and gentleness of his manners. Pure and elevated in mind and heart, in taste and feeling, he was at the same time beloved as a Christian gentleman, and admired as a learned and accomplished scholar.

<sup>1</sup> A Comprehensive Lexicon of the Greek Language, adapted to the use of Colleges and Schools in the United States.



THE HOUSES OF JOHN PICKERING AND OF HENRY  
PICKERING AT SALEM, MASS. BUILT IN 1814-15.

[58. VI. 109]

[58. VI. 111.]

In 1839, a bust was made of Mr. Pickering, by the sculptor Henry Dexter, of Boston. Several plaster casts were made from it for the family, who regarded the likeness as excellent in every way. His portrait was painted by Chester Harding, and is now in the Pickering house at Salem. It was engraved for the volume of his *Life*, by his daughter. The engraving is here given. A heliotype is also given of the brick block on Chestnut Street, Salem, which was built by Mr. Pickering and his brother, Henry Pickering. Mr. Pickering moved into it, Dec. 10, 1815.

The diplomas which Mr. Pickering received from the learned societies of which he was elected a member are at the Pickering house in Salem.<sup>1</sup>

58. VI. 109. *Sarah White*, the wife of John Pickering, born in Salem, died in Salem.

Mr. and Mrs. Pickering were doubly related, being first cousins once removed through the Pickering family, and second cousins through the White family.

It was while on a visit to her relations in Massachusetts that she met her future husband. They were married in the western parlor of the old mansion, and began housekeeping on Chestnut Street. According to the custom of the time for receiving bridal visits, they were dressed in bridal attire every afternoon for two successive weeks, and received the ceremonious visits of their friends.

May 5, 1805, she and her husband were admitted to full communion with the Rev. Dr. Prince's Church in Salem.

Mrs. Pickering's husband was greatly indebted to her for the wise judgment, the executive ability, the faithful economy, and the generous hospitality with which she conducted his household. She relieved him of domestic care, and gladly gave him, unasked, his quiet hours for study and the society

<sup>1</sup> The *Life of John Pickering*, by his daughter, Mary Orne Pickering, from which the greater part of the above sketch has been made; *Appleton's Cyclopædia of American Biography*, Vol. V. p. 3; A Memoir in the *Massachusetts Historical Society*, Third Series, Vol. X. pp. 204-224; *The American Biographical Dictionary*, by William Allen, p. 662; and *Dictionary of American Biography*, by Francis S. Drake, p. 716. Many notices of him appeared in the Boston and Salem papers at the time of his death.

of his friends. She fully appreciated all the knowledge and honor these hours gained for him.<sup>1</sup>

Her number in direct descent is [49. VII. 268].

58. VI. 110. **Timothy Pickering** [Timothy 58. V. 24], born in Philadelphia, Pa., baptized there, died at Starucca, Pa. Residence: Starucca.

Timothy Pickering, H. C. 1799, did not have the scholarly tastes of his brother John, and left college with a strong repugnance to academical life and the learned professions. He was of an independent mind, and an active life accorded better with his tastes. He obtained a midshipman's warrant, and was ordered to the frigate Philadelphia. On his return from his cruise, he heard that his father had gone into the woods. Realizing the hardships incident to such a life, and seeing that war with France would not occur, he resigned his place in the navy and joined his father. He selected for his abode the Starucca tract, about two miles south of the State of New York, on the east bank of the Susquehanna River. His life, however, was soon cut short by a distressing throat disease, and he was buried at Starucca. Another account states that he was mortally injured by a falling tree, which apparently struck his neck, and that he died several weeks after.<sup>2</sup>

His character was strong and decided. He was a man of few words, of an independent spirit, of immovable integrity, of the purest morality, and of marked energy. As a naval officer he was intrepid and efficient. His integrity and meekness gained him the esteem of all, and the poor neighbors whom he employed viewed him with the respect and affection that children feel for a father.<sup>3</sup>

58. VI. 110. **Lurena Cole**, the wife of Timothy Pickering, born in Farmington, Conn., died in Boston.

On the death of her husband, Mrs. Pickering and her children became inmates of Colonel Timothy Pickering's family, — an event which added great happiness to his life. At this time he writes of her: "I am more and

<sup>1</sup> Life of John Pickering, by his daughter, Mary Orne Pickering.

<sup>2</sup> Told by his widow, Lurena Pickering, to her daughter-in-law, Charlotte Pickering.

<sup>3</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. III. pp. 43, 325-326, and Vol. IV. pp. 31, 32, 113, 117, 119.



HENRY PICKERING.

[58. VI. III.]

FROM THE MINIATURE BY RICHARD, PAINTED IN PARIS, FRANCE, IN 1812,  
NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF HENRY PICKERING, ESQ., OF BOSTON.

more pleased with the good sense and discretion of Lurena."<sup>1</sup> In a letter to his wife, dated at Washington, Feb. 21, 1808, he thus alludes to her: "Her good sense and amiable qualities entitle her to our love. For these and for her husband's sake she will be ever dear to us." Her sweet and beautiful temperament, her cheerful spirit and manners, and her practical wisdom were of great value to all the inmates of the family. She was the companion of Colonel Pickering and his wife to the end of their days, and proved a constant blessing to them. She gradually assumed the management of the household, and relieved them, as they grew older, of burdens they were becoming less able to bear.<sup>2</sup>

Mrs. Pickering was a woman of decidedly scholarly tastes, and read Rees' Cyclopædia from beginning to end. During the latter part of her life she was much interested in the treatment of the Indians, in travels in the East, and in various matters, such as the treatment of Mary Queen of Scots and the mystery of the Man in the Iron Mask. She devoted a great deal of labor and time to tapestry work, and executed about thirty large pictures of landscapes, figures, flowers, etc. She continued this tapestry work even to the last year of her life.

She was a daughter of Zebulon and Sarah (Hart) Cole, of Wells, Vt.  
See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI.}{82}$ .

58. VI. 111. **Henry Pickering** [Timothy 58. V. 24], born at Newburgh, N. Y., probably baptized in Philadelphia, died in New York, of apoplexy. A merchant. Residence: Salem.<sup>3</sup>

Henry Pickering did not go to college, but entered the counting-room of a merchant in Philadelphia. When his father decided to go into the woods, Henry felt it his duty to join him, and at once gave up his situation and went with him. From that time his life was one of filial love and duty, watching over and caring for his parents with the utmost constancy, fidelity, and tenderness. On the removal of the family to Massachusetts, he resumed

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. IV. p. 119.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. Vol. IV. p. 120.

<sup>3</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. IV. p. 396, gives the date of his death as May 9, 1838; but the Salem Gazette of May 15, 1838, the Gardner Family Records, and Francis H. Lee, all give it as May 8, 1838, as it is given on the Sheets.

his business life, and in November, 1803, he entered the counting-room of his cousin, Pickering Dodge, of Salem. He engaged successfully in commercial enterprises, and accumulated a handsome estate. A commercial revulsion swept away his property, and he went to New York to make a new start. He failed, however, in this, owing to the previous embarrassments of the firm with which he was connected. Finding that all endeavors to recover his affairs were useless, he went to Newburgh, N. Y., where he maintained himself by literary work. In 1837 he was editor of the *Scientific Journal*, published in Boston.

Although not a college graduate, he was familiar with Latin, Greek, and French literature. He collected works of art, was a connoisseur in statuary, had studied architecture as a science, and was something of a poet. An edition of his poems was published in 1831. He took an interest in the genealogy of his family, and made notes upon the subject. Mr. Pickering used a bookplate engraved with the crest of a demi-lion. He also had a seal engraved with a demi-lion and his initials under it; also one of Pickering quartering the arms of White. These are in the possession of his nephew, Henry Pickering. He was a man of great refinement and cultivation, and was very much beloved by all his kindred and friends. In person he was five feet eleven inches in height, with a dignified and commanding presence. His countenance was of a Roman cast. He was at one time (1807) engaged to Elizabeth Peirce [43. VII. 211].

A miniature of him, painted in London, is in the possession of his grand-nephew, Dr. Henry Pickering Bowditch. Another, of which a heliotype is here given, was painted in Paris in 1812 by Richard. It is owned by his nephew, Henry Pickering.<sup>1</sup>

58. VI. 112. **Charles Pickering** [Timothy 58. V. 24], born at Philadelphia, Pa., baptized there, died at Germantown, Pa., of consumption.

He was a boy of brilliant promise and engaging qualities, distinguished for his sagacity and fortitude, as well as for generous and amiable virtues.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. IV. pp. 412-425; Dictionary of American Biography, by Francis S. Drake, p. 716; Cyclopædia of American Literature, Vol. II. pp. 25-28, by Evert A. and George L. Duyckinck, which contains a portrait; also an obituary notice in the Salem Gazette of May 15, 1838.

<sup>2</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, Vol. III. p. 286.



OCTAVIUS PICKERING.

[58. VI. 116.]

FROM THE NEGATIVE NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF HENRY PICKERING, ESQ.,  
OF BOSTON.

58. VI. 113. **William Pickering** [Timothy 58. V. 24], born at Philadelphia, Pa., baptized there, died at Philadelphia.

In the winter of 1802-3 he showed signs of mental derangement. The disorder gradually increased, and in 1807 he was sent to the Pennsylvania Hospital, Philadelphia. He did not improve, however, and his mind became more and more feeble until the time of his death.<sup>1</sup>

58. VI. 115. **George Pickering** [Timothy 58. V. 24], born in Wilkesbarre, Pa., died at Charlestown, Mass.

George Pickering was a youth of fine promise. He attended both the Exeter and Andover Academies, and was admitted to Harvard College at the same time with his brother Octavius. From a letter of his father, dated March 29, 1806, it appears that he had decided to study divinity. About a year after entering college, he showed signs of mental derangement, and was taken home to Wenham. For a while he did a little work on the farm; but he grew worse, and was finally sent to the asylum at Charlestown, where he remained until he died.<sup>1</sup>

58. VI. 116. **Octavius Pickering** [Timothy 58. V. 24], born at Wilkesbarre, Pa., died in Boston. A lawyer. Residence: Boston.

Octavius Pickering, H. C. 1810, created a favorable impression on his friends while he pursued his studies in college. Under date of March 29, 1806, his father writes to his wife as follows: —

“The capacity and disposition of Octavius will insure him all the advantages which a young man can wish for, in any profession he shall choose — divinity, law or physic, or in merchandise, should he prefer that course of life. Should he go into the counting room of a wealthy and honorable merchant I persuade myself he would so recommend himself to his patronage as to insure him an early establishment in business.”<sup>2</sup>

Mr. Pickering chose law as a profession, and began its study in the office of his brother, John Pickering. He was admitted to the Suffolk Bar March 6, 1816, and opened an office in Boston. His great accuracy and fidelity led

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. IV. p. 69.

<sup>2</sup> From a manuscript volume of letters in possession of Henry Pickering.

to his being employed in the most responsible trusts. He was one of the reporters of the Massachusetts Constitutional Convention in 1820, and was the writer of "Pickering Reports." These reports of the decisions of the Supreme Court of Massachusetts consist of twenty-four volumes, and cover a period of eighteen years, from 1822 to 1840. Soon after giving up his position of reporter, Mr. Pickering took his family abroad, and remained in England and on the continent for seven years, returning home in 1849. Neither before nor after his stay abroad was he ever actively engaged in the practice of his profession.

Octavius Pickering was an assiduous reader and student of history. For many years he was engaged in arranging and preparing for publication the large collection of papers left by his father. The first volume of the life of his father, which came down to the year 1786, was published by him in the fall of 1867. This was the first of several volumes which he proposed to publish as fast as circumstances would permit, but he was prevented from carrying out his plans.<sup>1</sup>

He was much interested in science and natural history, and was for many years a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, and was one of those who, in December, 1814, organized "The New England Society for the Promotion of Natural History." Mr. Pickering's religious views were those of a Unitarian. He was of a quiet, retiring disposition, domestic in his habits, fond of study and of books, a genial, witty companion, a kind friend, and was beloved and respected by those who knew him best.<sup>2</sup> His son, Henry Pickering, has an excellent crayon portrait of his father. The heliotype here given is from a photograph from life.

58. VI. 116. *Jane Pratt*, the wife of Octavius Pickering, born in England, died in Boston.

Mrs. Pickering lived in Tottenham Court Road, just out of London,

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Colonel Timothy Pickering was finished by Rev. Charles W. Upham in three additional volumes.

<sup>2</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. IV. pp. 410-411; obituary notices in the Boston Daily Advertiser of Friday, Nov. 6, 1868; and in the Boston Evening Transcript; Dictionary of American Biography, by Francis S. Drake, p. 717; Appleton's Cyclopædia of American Biography, Vol. V. p. 4.

JANE (PRATT) PICKERING.

[58. -VI. 116.]

FROM THE NEGATIVE NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF HENRY PICKERING, ESQ.,  
OF BOSTON, MASS.



England. She was a good deal of a traveller, and undertook three Atlantic voyages without escort before the days of steam navigation. Her journal gives daily records of these voyages, which took place in sailing vessels of from seven to nine hundred tons. Her first voyage was made for the purpose of visiting her uncle, *William Pratt* [52. VI. 91]. It was on this visit to Boston in the year 1835 that she met Octavius Pickering, whom she afterwards married. The heliotype here given of Mrs. Pickering was taken from a photograph from life.

Mrs. Pickering was a daughter of Joseph and — (Peace) Pratt, of England. *William Pratt* [52. VI. 91] was her uncle. Her ancestry includes the following families: Pratt, Storer, Peace. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{87}$ .

58. VI. 117. **Mary Pickering** [Timothy 58. V. 24], twin of Elizabeth [58. VI. 118], born in Philadelphia, Pa., died in West Roxbury, Mass.

Mrs. Nichols' early childhood was passed in Philadelphia, where her father resided. In 1801, Colonel Pickering removed to his native home in Essex County, Mass., — the family making the long journey in a private carriage. They lived successively in Beverly and Danvers, and afterwards on Colonel Pickering's farm in Wenham, where the education of herself and sister was for a time intrusted to the Rev. Dr. Anderson, a noted divine of Wenham or its vicinity.

In 1813, on her marriage, she removed to Salem, where her husband was settled as a lawyer. In 1824, they removed to Boston, in which place, and in Canton, Mrs. Nichols resided until a few years after the death of her husband. In 1854, Mrs. Nichols removed with her children to West Roxbury, where she resided until her death, in 1863. Mrs. Nichols, like her father, was a great lover of country life, and devoted much time to horticultural pursuits.

She was a woman of great activity, energy, and industry, though not possessing great physical health. These qualities were shown in the care of her family, in clerical assistance given to her husband in early years, upon the many changes of the family residence, and in long and frequent journeys taken on account of the health of her husband and children. She made two journeys with him to South Carolina and Georgia in 1835

and 1837, travelling home, before the day of railroads, through the deep sands and corduroy roads of the Carolinas, and fording streams. Of these journeys she often spoke. In 1857-58, she passed a year in Europe with her children and a niece, travelling for weeks by carriage in Italy, the Tyrol, and Switzerland, and crossing the Alps many times, sometimes on horseback.

She was a most devoted wife and mother at all times; and this was especially shown during frequent illnesses in her family, and a long, painful, and fatal illness of a daughter.

She was fond of literature, and had a decided poetic taste, and wrote much poetry for the amusement of her children. She was familiar with the poets of the eighteenth century, and often quoted from them, especially from Goldsmith and her favorite, Cowper.

Mrs. Nichols was a woman of a very affectionate and gentle nature, and at the same time was distinguished for firmness, endurance, decision, and good judgment.

58. VI. 117. *Benjamin Ropes Nichols*, the husband of Mary Pickering, born in Portsmouth, N. H., baptized in Salem, Aug. 13, 1798, died in Boston. A lawyer. Residence: Boston.

When Mr. Nichols was about seven years old his parents returned from Portsmouth, N. H., to Salem. He graduated at Harvard College, in 1804, with distinction. On leaving college he studied law, and became a prominent lawyer in Salem. He was clerk of the town of Salem, and as such he put the ancient town records in admirable order. In 1818, he was appointed, by the Legislature of Massachusetts, a commissioner, with the Rev. Dr. James Freeman and the Hon. Samuel Davis, to arrange the records of the Plymouth Colony, and a large part of the work was done by him. Seventeen large volumes of copies of the records were made by him, and are preserved in the office of the Secretary of State. In 1824, he removed to Boston, and continued in the practice of his profession until his decease. About the year 1825, he was employed by the corporation of Harvard College to arrange and systematize the accounts of the college. He was also employed by the Trustees of the Charity of Edward Hopkins, in a long and laborious



ELIZABETH (PICKERING) DORSEY.

[58. VI. 118].

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY GILBERT STUART, NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF  
MRS. THOMAS DONALDSON, OF MARYLAND.

investigation of the title to their large tract of land in the towns of Hopkinton and Upton, Mass. He was elected a trustee of this charity, June 30, 1831, and was its treasurer, from May 3, 1838, to April 30, 1848, when he was succeeded by his son, Benjamin White Nichols, and, in 1872, by his grandson, Charles Pickering Bowditch, the present treasurer, — the office thus having been held for more than half a century in one family, and, with the exception of one year, uninterruptedly.

Mr. Nichols was solicitor for the Boston and Lowell Railroad, and was at one time clerk of the Boston and Providence Railroad. He was treasurer of the Proprietors of the Mill Pond Wharf, of Boston, and president and counsellor of the South Cove Corporation. His services to the latter company were very important at the time of its financial embarrassment. He was a director and counsellor of the Suffolk Bank, and was also a director of the Massachusetts Hospital Life Insurance Company. Mr. Nichols had a great taste for historical research, and was a member of the Massachusetts Historical Society. He was distinguished for great energy, industry, and thoroughness, both in his profession as a lawyer and in all the offices which he filled.<sup>1</sup>

His number in direct descent is [44. VII. 218].

58. VI. 118. **Elizabeth Pickering** [Timothy 58. V. 24], twin of Mary Pickering, born in Philadelphia, Pa., died at Elk Ridge, Maryland.

As a young lady, she was of a most interesting character, and of uncommon personal attractions. She resembled her father so remarkably, especially in the nobility of her mien, that no one could fail to recognize the likeness. Of this resemblance to himself, her father writes: —

“When Elizabeth has appeared in the gallery of the House of Representatives, she has been at once distinguished and known in a row of her sex, by her resemblance to me.”

In November, 1815, while her father was in Congress, she accepted an urgent invitation to visit his friends, the Hon. and Mrs. Alexander Contée Hanson, whose estate, Belmont, was about twelve miles from Baltimore. It

<sup>1</sup> Obituary in the Salem Gazette of Friday, May 5, 1848; the Massachusetts Historical Society's Proceedings, 1838-1855, p. 427; also sketch by Benjamin W. Nichols.

was while on this visit that she became engaged to Mr. Dorsey, who was Mrs. Hanson's brother. Miss Pickering remained with her father through the winter and into the spring. During this time they were the recipients of distinguished social attention, and Miss Pickering's beauty and charming manners were very much admired. Colonel Pickering appears to have been very proud of his daughter. In a letter to his wife, dated at Washington, Feb. 12, 1816, he writes as follows:—

“ Her beauty and good sense procure attention wherever she goes. I have seen many young ladies since I left home, and some handsome and agreeable, but not one equal to E. in beauty, and of beauty you know I profess to be a judge, and in this instance I am sure that E. is not indebted to the partiality of a father.”

Again, after a ball at Washington, he says: “ For personal beauty I saw not one equal to a certain Wenham girl.”

It was during this visit to her father that a large miniature was painted of her by Wood of Philadelphia. It was considered at the time a beautiful picture, but it faded out almost entirely, and consequently was destroyed by its owner. The picture here reproduced was painted by Stuart. It is owned by Mrs. Dorsey's daughter, Mrs. Thomas Donaldson. A copy of it by Hunt is owned by the family of Mrs. Dorsey's niece, the late Mrs. J. Ingersoll Bowditch.

58. VI. 118. *Hammond Dorsey*, the husband of Elizabeth Pickering, born at Belmont, Howard County, Md., died in Baltimore. A planter. Residence: “ The Manor,” Baltimore County, Md.

The following description of Hammond Dorsey is taken from a letter of Colonel Timothy Pickering to his wife, announcing the engagement of his daughter Elizabeth. It is dated Washington, Jan. 14, 1816:—

“ Of Mr. Dorsey's person you will wish to know something. In stature I should say he was above the height of Mr. Putnam—in figure well proportioned, in features not homely, nor handsome, and yet you may see a plain resemblance between him and his sweet sister Mrs. Hanson. He was educated at Princeton College, and in the conversation in which his modesty permitted him but in a small degree to participate, he expressed himself with propriety. In age he is younger than Elizabeth, which I should not have suspected but his sister Hanson accidentally mentioned that he was twenty-one when I was at Belmont in Christmas week.”

THE HOUSE OF HAMMOND DORSEY,  
BALTIMORE COUNTY, MD.

[58. VI. 118.]



Of Mr. Dorsey, Colonel Pickering again writes as follows:—

“Having in repeated conversations, become better acquainted with him, I am able to pronounce him possessed of an excellent understanding; and he manifests the evidences of a pure, liberal, and good heart. He is also attentive to the management of his farm.”

Mr. Dorsey was left an orphan at an early age, and was educated at Princeton College. His father, who had large iron furnaces on the Patapsco at a place, about two miles from his home, called Avalon, was a large landed proprietor, from whom Mr. Dorsey inherited an estate called “The Manor.” It is one of the finest country places in Maryland, situated in Baltimore County, eight miles from Baltimore, and commanding a view of the bay. Colonel Timothy Pickering describes the place in a letter to his wife as follows: “Mr. Dorsey’s house is roomy and very convenient. It presents from its elevated site an uncommonly fine prospect of great extent.” Belmont, the homestead of Mr. Dorsey’s grandfather, was built in 1752 of English birch. The lands were given under Lord Baltimore, and the deeds bear his signature, and begin thus: “To Caleb Dorsey, Gent.” Caleb Dorsey owned such an amount of land that though his country estate of Belmont was nine miles from Baltimore, he could ride to that city on his own land. A heliotype of Hammond Dorsey’s residence, which was built in 1818, is here given.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Dorsey died suddenly, and his remains were interred in the family burying ground at Belmont. An obituary notice of him which appeared in the Baltimore Patriot of Monday, Feb. 10, 1823, speaks of his dying suddenly on Friday morning at his residence in Charles Street, Baltimore, of his leaving a numerous circle of friends, and of the sensibility, disinterestedness, and frankness uniformly displayed in his life.

He was the son of Edward and Elizabeth (Dorsey) Dorsey. *Thomas Donaldson* [58. VII. 336] was his nephew. His ancestry includes the following families: Dorsey, Ely, Warfield, Hill, Dorsey, Todd, Hammond, Bowan. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{65}$ .

<sup>1</sup> The Life of Timothy Pickering, by Charles W. Upham, Vol. IV. p. 318; and letter of Mrs. Thomas Donaldson, dated Sept. 28, 1893.

59. VI. 119. **Lucia Dodge** [Lucia 59. V. 25], probably born in Salem, baptized there Dec. 1, 1768, died in Salem.

Mrs. Gardner was admitted to the First Church, Salem, in September, 1806. There is a silhouette of her in the possession of her grandnephew, John Robinson.

59. VI. 119. **Jonathan Gardner**, her husband, probably born in Salem, baptized there March 16, 1755, died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Gardner is said to have been a man of large property. He owned a tan-yard on Winter Street, Salem. His house stood on the site of the mansion of the late Tucker Daland, on Essex Street.

His first wife, whom he married Nov. 26, 1791, was Sarah Fairfield. She was a daughter of Dr. William and Sarah (White) Fairfield, of Wenham. By her he had the following child:—

WILLIAM F. GARDNER (H. C. 1815), who died June 12, 1851.<sup>1</sup>

Jonathan Gardner was a son of Jonathan and Sarah (Putnam) Gardner. *Samuel Gardner* [3-5. V. 3] was his granduncle, and *John Gardner* [53. V. 20] was his first cousin once removed. His ancestry includes the following families: Gardner, Frier, White, Herbert, Porter, Hathorne, Gardner, Frier, Orne, Browne, Weld, Clap, Mitchelson, Bushell, Putnam, Porter, Hathorne, Putnam, Prince. See ANCESTRY TABLES VI.  $\frac{VI}{68}$ .

59. VI. 120. **Israel Dodge** [Lucia 59. V. 25], probably born in Salem, died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Dodge was of the firm of Pickering Dodge & Co., merchants, of Salem.

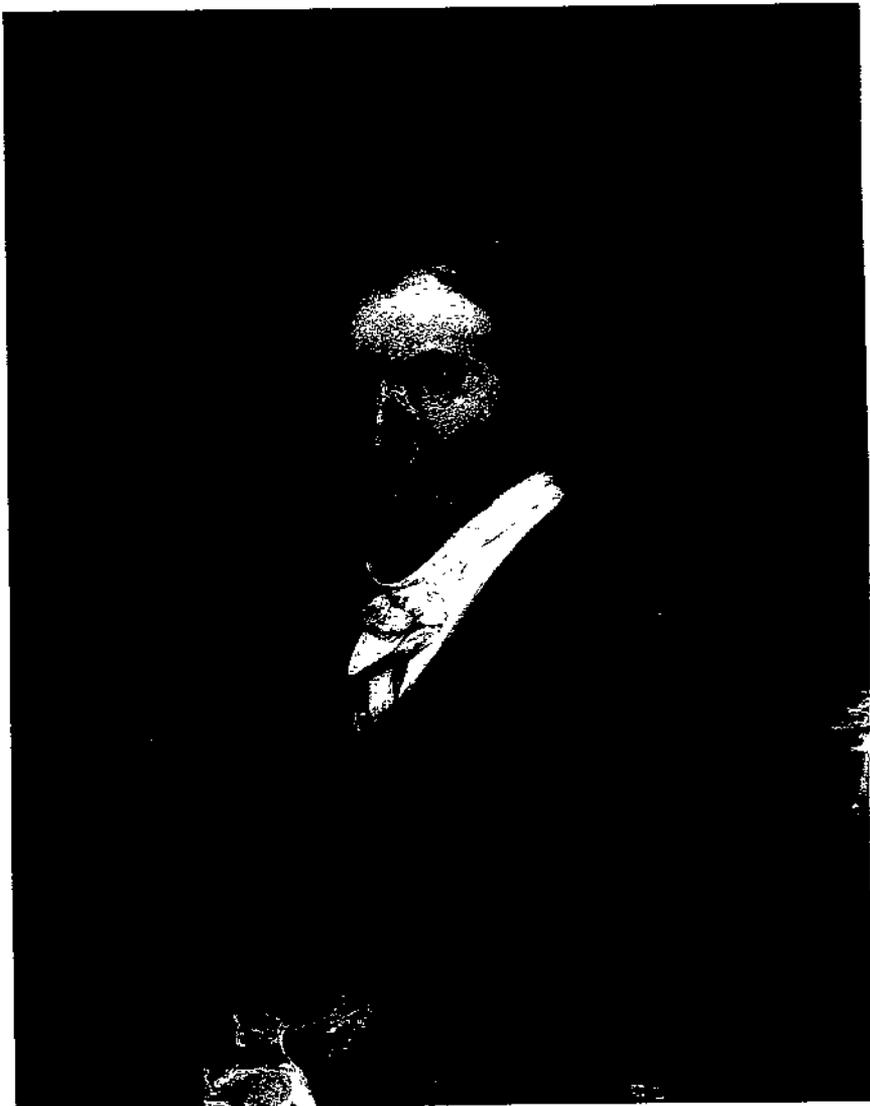
59. VI. 121. **Caleb Dodge** [Lucia 59. V. 25], probably born and died in Salem.

He drowned himself in the cistern of a distillery in a fit of derangement.<sup>2</sup>

59. VI. 122. **Henry Dodge** [Lucia 59. V. 25], probably born in Salem, died in Salem.

<sup>1</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections. Vol. IV. pp. 78, 80.

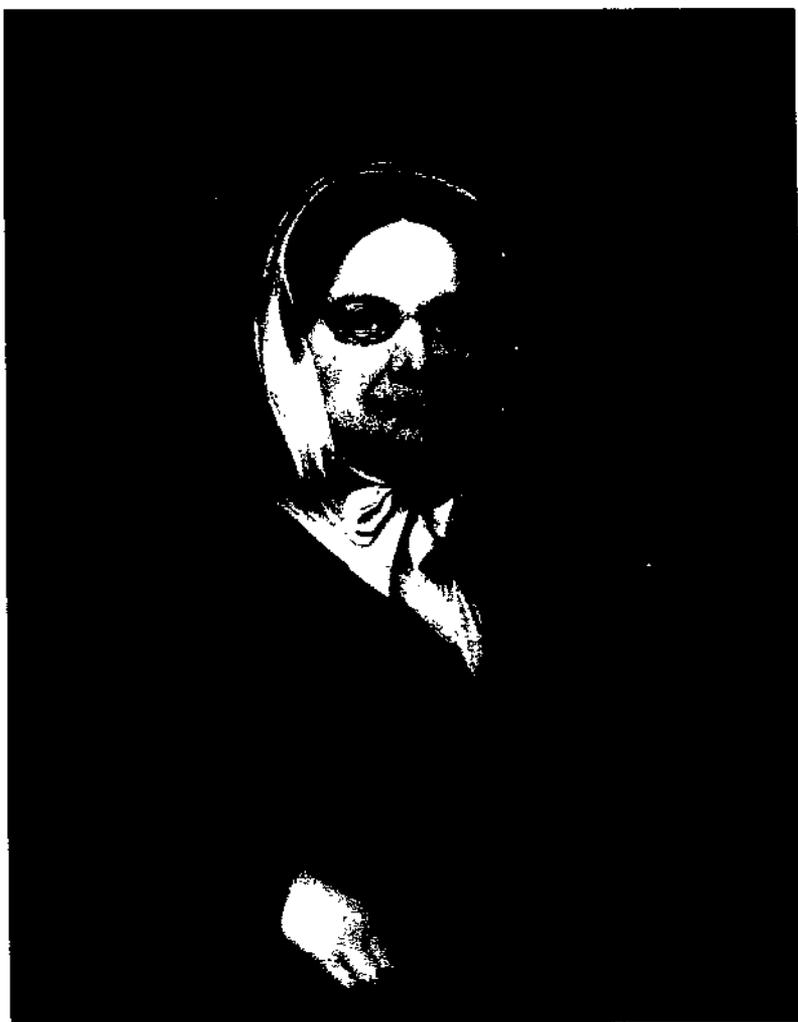
<sup>2</sup> Nichols Family Records.



PICKERING DODGE.

[59. VI. 123]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY FROTHINGHAM, PAINTED ABOUT 1820, NOW IN THE  
POSSESSION OF MRS. WILLIAM A. LANDER, OF SALEM, MASS.



REBECCA (JENKS) DODGE.

[59. VI. 133.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY OSGOOD, PAINTED IN 1840, NOW IN THE POSSESSION  
OF MRS. WILLIAM A. LANDER, OF SALEM, MASS.



THE HOUSE OF PICKERING DODGE AT SALEM, MASS.

[59. VI. 123.]

59. VI. 123. **Pickering Dodge** [Lucia 59. V. 25], born in Salem, died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.

Mr. Dodge was long known as one of the most active, enterprising, and honorable merchants of Salem. He was universally esteemed, and his loss, while in the midst of a career of enterprise and usefulness, was regarded as a public calamity. His funeral was attended by a larger number of people than had been seen on such an occasion for years. The flags of the shipping in Salem harbor were at half-mast during the day of the funeral.

Pickering Dodge was frank and affable in manner; kind, open-hearted, and truthful in his disposition; sincere and benevolent in his feelings, and free from all envy or jealousy. He was hospitable, liberal, and public-spirited, and won the esteem of all with whom he came in contact. He accomplished more than most men, and lived a long life in a short period.<sup>1</sup>

The portrait of Pickering Dodge, which is here reproduced, was painted by Frothingham about the year 1820. It is owned by his daughter, Mrs. William A. Lander, of Salem. His residence was on Chestnut Street. A heliotype of it is here given.

59. VI. 123. **Rebecca Jenks**, the wife of Pickering Dodge, probably born in Salem, died in Salem.

Mrs. Dodge was admitted a member of the First Church in Salem, July 10, 1804.

An obituary notice of Mrs. Dodge appeared in the Salem Gazette of April 1, 1851. It speaks of her as a woman of rare excellence in her social, domestic, and religious relations, and adds that she was gentle, kind, affectionate, and confiding, charitable in her construction of the acts of others, and that her every thought and deed was of a high standard.

Her portrait was painted by Osgood about the year 1840. It is owned by her daughter, Mrs. William A. Lander. It is here reproduced.

Mrs. Dodge was a daughter of Daniel and Mary (Masury) Jenks, of Salem. *William A. Lander* [59. VII. 342] was her nephew. Her ancestry

<sup>1</sup> Obituary notices in the Salem Register of Monday, Aug. 19, 1833, and in the Salem Gazette of Aug. 20, 1833.

includes the following families: Jenks, Merriam, Barry, Newhall, Potter, Farrar, Breed, Ballard, Masury. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{87}$ .

59. VI. 125. Catherine Dodge [Lucia 59. V. 25], probably born in Salem, baptized there Oct. 13, 1782, died in Salem.

Her aunt, Mrs. Timothy Pickering, in a letter to her daughter, Mrs. Dorsey, dated at Wenham, May 5, 1818, speaks of her death as follows:

"I presume you have heard of Catherine Stone's death. It is a great loss to her mother as well as to all her friends. I felt it sensibly. Her attention to me had always been marked with affection and sincerity. The babe when I saw it, I thought scarcely as large as Mary's first. It looked healthy. . . ."

In an obituary notice of Mrs. Stone, which was printed in the Salem Gazette of Friday, March 27, 1818, it is stated that in her death society had sustained a loss; that she engaged, both from principle and inclination, in the active charities of life; that she had a refined and enlightened mind, while in domestic scenes she displayed those affections and virtues which can alone sweeten life.

There is a poor oil cabinet-size portrait of her in possession of her grandson, Arthur R. Stone. There is also a good silhouette of her in possession of her grandson, John Robinson.

59. VI. 125. *John Stone*, the husband of Catherine Dodge, born in Reading, Mass., died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.

John Stone was brought up in the store of Messrs. Saxon & Wheelwright, wholesale dealers and importers of crockery and glassware, Boston. In 1803 he moved to Salem, where he became active both as a citizen and as a merchant. He was an ensign in the Salem Independent Corps of Cadets, and a captain in the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia.<sup>1</sup> For many years he was a deacon of the First Church in Salem.

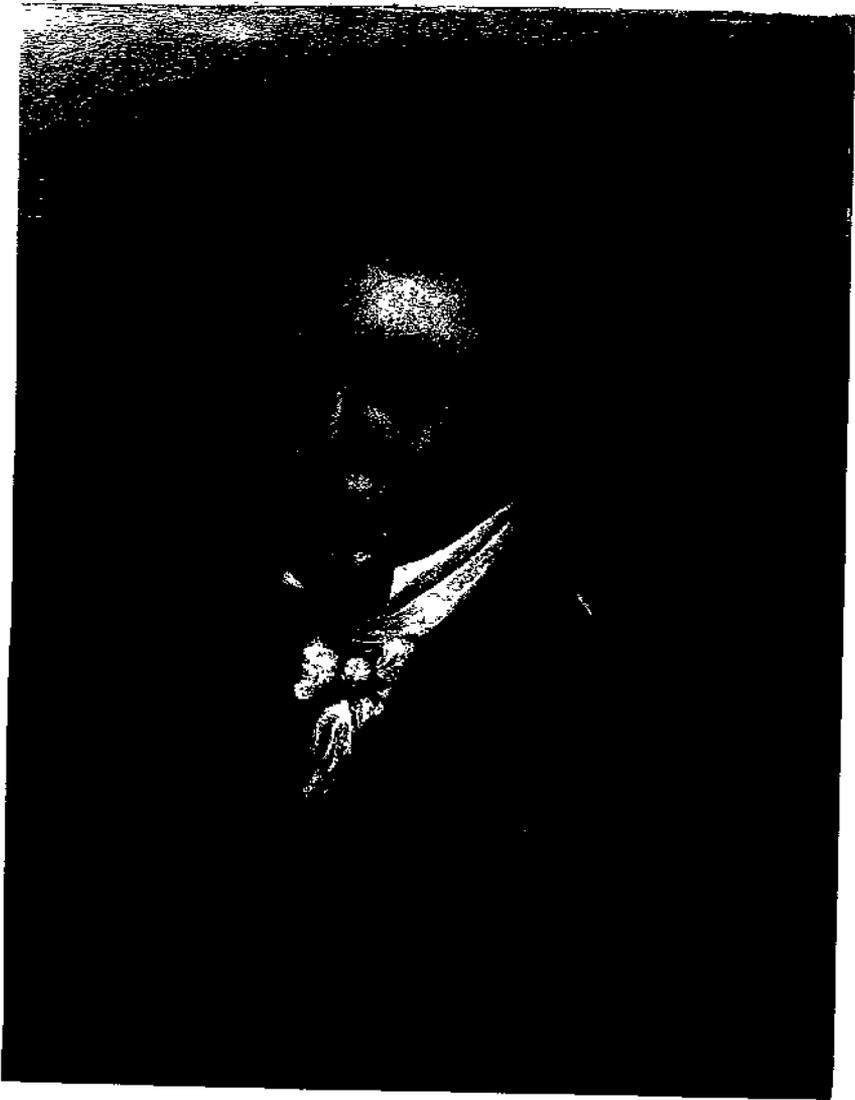
An obituary notice of him, printed in the Boston Atlas, was copied into the Salem Gazette of Saturday, Nov. 24, 1849. It speaks of his warm and generous heart, his kind and benevolent disposition, his affectionate and cheerful spirit, and the rectitude of his life and character. It also speaks of him as an upright citizen, sincere Christian, and honest man.

<sup>1</sup> Essex Institute Historical Collections, Vol. III, pp. 182-183.

JOHN STONE.

[59. VI. 125]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY OSGOOD, PAINTED IN 1828, NOW IN THE POSSESSION  
OF ARTHUR STONE, ESQ., OF SALEM, MASS.





ELIZA (DODGE) DEVEREUX.

[59. VI. 126.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY GILBERT STUART, PAINTED IN SEPTEMBER, 1817, NOW  
IN THE POSSESSION OF WILLIAM EDWARD SILSBEE, ESQ; OF BOSTON.

He married his second wife May 2, 1819. She was Mary Hodges, and was born in Salem, Nov. 17, 1791, and died Dec. 18, 1869. Her father was Jonathan Hodges, of Salem.

The heliotype here given is taken from a portrait painted by Charles Osgood in 1828. It is in the possession of Mr. Stone's grandson, Arthur R. Stone. Another grandson, John Robinson, has a silhouette of him.

John Stone was a son of the Rev. Eliab and Sarah (Hubbard) Stone, of Reading. *Francis H. Storer* [52. VIII. 585] is his grandnephew, and *John H. Storer* [51. IX. 1042] is his great-grandnephew. His ancestry includes the following families: Stone, Garrad, Howe, Moore, Brown, Stone, Stearns, Jones, Reed, Jennison, Peirce, Cole, Hubbard, Merriam, Rice, King, Conant, Horton, Walton, Raymond. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{88}$ .

59. VI. 126. **Eliza Dodge** [Lucia 59. V. 25] probably born in Salem, baptized there Dec. 18, 1785, as Elizabeth, died in Salem.

Mrs. Devereux was admitted a member of the First Church in Salem Feb. 3, 1811.

The first chapter in "A Half Century in Salem," by her daughter, M. C. D. Silsbee, entitled "Old Letters," is made up of extracts from the letters of Eliza Dodge, and they give a very good account of the social life of Salem when it was in its glory. In closing this chapter Mrs. Silsbee adds:

"The old yellow papers will now be laid carefully aside, perhaps never to be looked at again. The writer who exulted in prosperity, a loving happy home, and health so perfect as to call for constant gratitude, was in ten years from the last date, 1806, a confirmed invalid; but cheerful resignation took the place of high spirits; the unselfish heart never taxed the sympathies of those with whom, so far as was possible, she kept her place as a kind and cordial friend. Conversation that she liked so much, and in which she was acknowledged to be most delightful, was often from necessity relinquished; but to the utmost extent of diminishing strength she availed herself of the possibilities of enjoyment. To deep religious feeling, she added a philosophy that kept her calm and self-reliant in every trial. A wise and efficient household guide, she ruled it with firm and gentle sway, and she was ably described in a few words by the elder Dr. Peirson, who although not our family physician, made her occasional friendly visits: 'Mrs D—— is an alive woman.'"

A portrait of Mrs. Devereux, by Gilbert Stuart, painted in September, 1817, is in the possession of her grandson, William E. Silsbee, of Boston. On the back of the picture is the following inscription: —

"Portrait of Mrs. Eliza Devereux aged 31 years 10 mo.

"This picture was painted 29th. Sept. 1817 by Gilbert Stewart. The *head* from the upper part of the nose upward is thought a likeness — the lower part is wanting in resemblance. The *figure* is stiff much too erect and totally unlike.

"The figure from the Ruff downward including drapery, painted anew by Chester Harding 1835."

A heliotype is here given of this portrait. Her grandnephew, John Robinson, has a silhouette of Mrs. Devereux.

59. VI. 126. *Humphrey Devereux*, the husband of Eliza Dodge, born in Marblehead, Mass., died in Salem. A merchant. Residence: Salem.

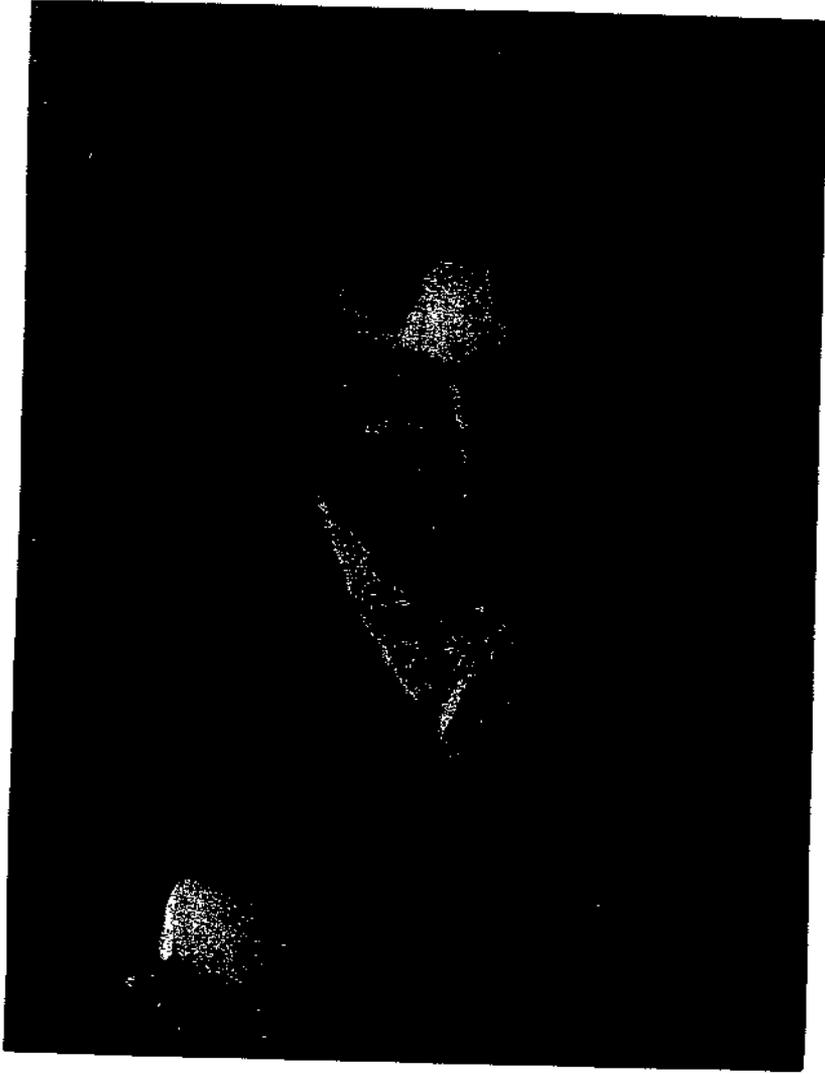
Humphrey Dodge, H. C. 1798, was for two years the sole survivor of his class. He began the study of law in the office of John Lowell, and was admitted to the Suffolk Bar; but soon after he yielded to a strong natural taste for an active business life, and gave up his profession to engage in commerce. As factor, agent, and owner, he made voyages to various parts of the world, visiting the East Indies and the chief marts of Europe. He lived for some time on the continent, and made himself thoroughly familiar with the business, resources, and institutions, of Europe, thereby qualifying himself for the character he sustained through life, of an enlightened merchant. During the war of 1812, while in one of his vessels, he was captured by the enemy and carried to Bermuda, where he remained for many months. He retired early from the sea, and devoted his attention to directing his commercial enterprises. Neither his tastes nor his ambition tempted him toward public life; but for more than half a century he was an active, efficient, and eminent citizen of Salem. He was a man of remarkable courtesy, and of great hospitality. His love of society was the most prominent of his characteristics. He delighted in the company of intelligent people, and particularly sought the companionship of the cultivated and learned. He had striking peculiarities of character and ways, as all strong minds have. He sometimes misunderstood others, as others sometimes misunderstood him. His decisive opinions, energetic expressions and methods attracted occasional comment; but he held on his own course and followed his own convictions and tastes.<sup>1</sup>

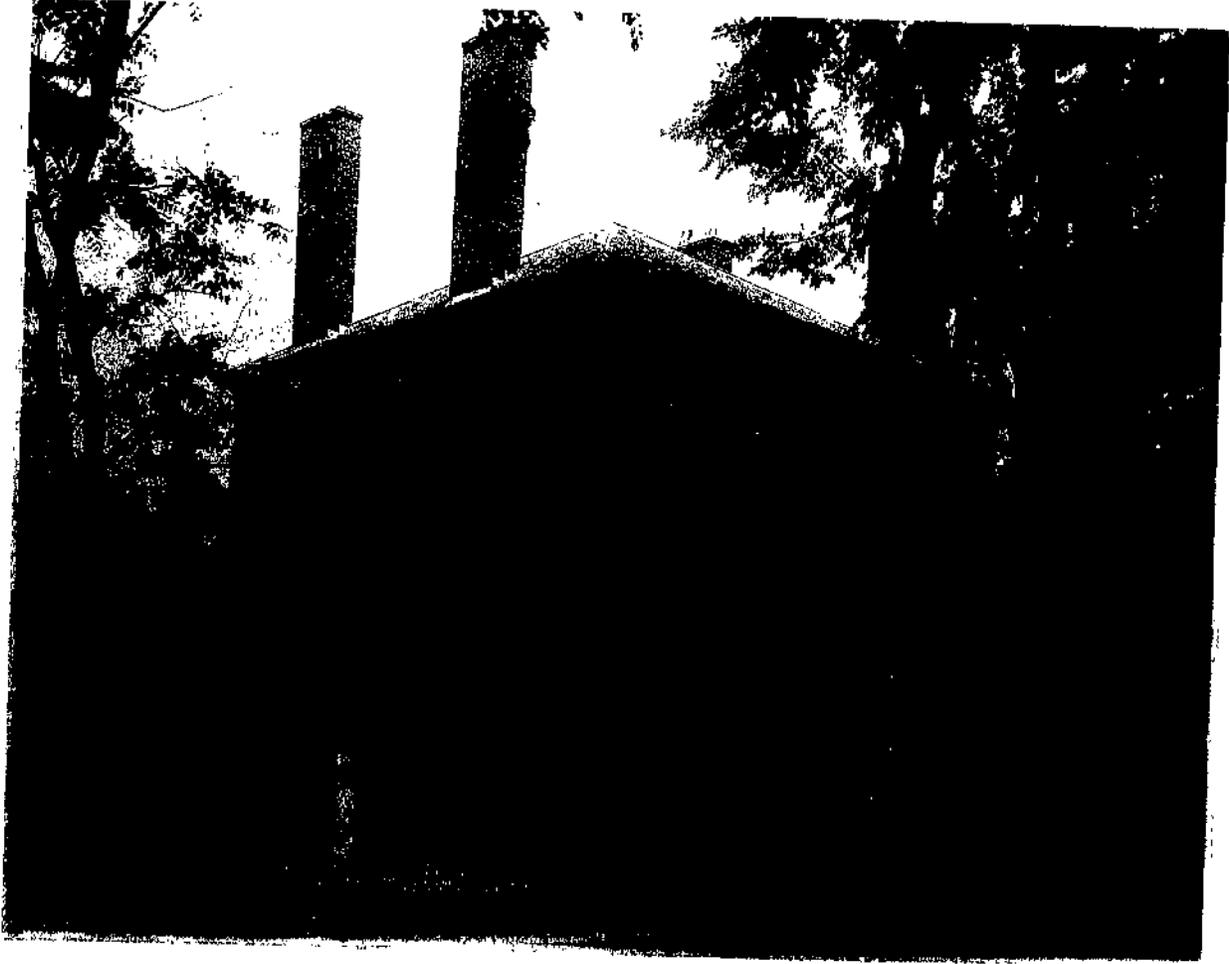
<sup>1</sup> Obituary in the Salem Gazette of June 4, 1867.

HUMPHREY DEVEREUX.

[59. VI. 130.]

FROM THE PORTRAIT BY GILBERT STUART, PAINTED IN SEPTEMBER, 1817,  
NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF NATHANIEL DEVEREUX SILSBEE, ESQ.,  
OF BOSTON.





THE HOUSE OF HUMPHREY DEVEREUX AT  
SALEM, MASS.

[39. VI. 126.]

He owned a farm near Marblehead, at the place which is still called Devereux. It was while on a visit to this farm that Longfellow wrote his "Fire of Driftwood." A heliotype of his house in Salem is here given.

Mr. Devereux was admitted a member of the First Church, Salem, Feb. 3, 1811. His portrait was painted by Gilbert Stuart in September, 1817, at the age of thirty-eight years, and is owned by his grandson, Nathaniel D. Silsbee. A heliotype of it is here given.

Humphrey Devereux was a son of Dr. Burrill and Elizabeth (Gerry) Devereux. His father graduated at Harvard College in 1767, and was a physician of Marblehead. His mother was a sister of Elbridge Gerry, a signer of the Declaration of Independence. *Sarah Burrill* [1-70. III. I] was his great-grandaunt; *Lydia Gerry* [1. VII. 3<sup>d</sup>] was his first cousin, and *Rebecca Taylor* [6-7. V. 4] was his first cousin once removed. His ancestry includes the following families: Devereux, Blaney, King, Guy (?), Burrill, Ivory, South, Jarvis, Gerry, Greenleaf, Russell, Elbridge. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{87}$ .

60-62. VI. 127. **Hannah Pickering** [John 60-68. V. 29], born in Salem, died in Andover, Vt.

60-62. VI. 127. **Samuel Wellington**, her husband, died in Brattleborough, Vt. Residence: Andover and Royalton, Vt.

Samuel Wellington was the eldest of his father's children. He was one of the "Green Mountain boys," and enlisted in the Revolutionary army when he was but fifteen or sixteen years old. He was in the battles of Lexington and Bunker Hill, and also at the battle of White Plains, where he received a severe wound in his neck. In consequence of this injury he was discharged from the service. He is said to have served in the war of 1812.

By his second wife, Experience Bemis, he had —

OLIVIA WELLINGTON. She was married.

He was a son of Jonathan and Lydia (Fiske) Wellington. ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{77}$ .

62. VI. 128. **Nathaniel Pickering** [John 60-68. V. 29], born in Salem. Residence: Richmond, N. H.

Mr. Pickering moved from Richmond to the State of Vermont, and afterwards he removed to Pennsylvania.

62. VI. 128. *Olive Buffum*, his wife.

Mr. and Mrs. Pickering were second and third cousins. Her first husband, whom she married Oct. 28, 1787, was Jedediah Buffum. Mr. Buffum had before this marriage, by Abigail Cook, daughter of Jonathan Cook, a son, Jedediah Buffum, who was born April 7, 1785.<sup>1</sup> Mr. Buffum committed suicide June 29, 1789. By him his wife Olive had the following child: —

OLIVE BUFFUM, born March 3, 1789. She married Samuel Pickering [68. VI. 138].

Mrs. Pickering's third husband was a Mr. Wilcox. The following account of Mr. and Mrs. Pickering is taken from a letter of Mr. W. H. Guernsey to Mrs. Pickering's great-grandson, Emmet H. Rixford: —

"After the death of Jedediah Buffum, your great-grandmother married Nathaniel Pickering by whom she had a considerable family of children. They removed to Pennsylvania, the 'Susquehanna country.'

"After the death of Nathaniel Pickering she again married a Wilcox to whom the children became much attached, and they all removed together to a southern state, Alabama, my mother thinks."

Mrs. Pickering was a daughter of Jonathan and Hannah (Estes) Gaskill, of Cumberland, R. I. *Olive Buffum* [68. VI. 138] was her daughter; *Jane Hobby* [1-70. III. 4] was her great-grandmother; and *William Pickering* [60-70. IV. 10<sup>2</sup>] was her granduncle. Her ancestry includes the following families: Gaskill, Southwick, Gardner, Frier, Pickering, Flint, Hobby, Estes. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{1}$ .

62. VI. 129. **William Pickering** [John 60-68. V. 29], born in Salem, probably died at sea.

<sup>1</sup> The History of the Town of Richmond, N. H., by William Bassett, p. 342.

63. VI. 131. **Eunice Pickering** [John 60-68. V. 29], born in Salem, died in Barre, Vt.

Mrs. Gale's gravestone was standing in 1886 in the cemetery at Barre.

63. VI. 131. **Ebenezer Brooks Gale**, her husband, born in Worcester County, Mass., died in Barre, Vt.<sup>1</sup> A farmer. Residence: Barre.

Mr. Gale was a prominent citizen of Barre. His gravestone was still standing in 1886 in the Barre cemetery.

Mr. Gale's father was a soldier of the Revolution. On the Lexington Alarm, in April, 1775, he promptly volunteered as a private in the company commanded by Captain John Crowl. In 1777, he served four months in Colonel Cushing's regiment in the Northern Army, and participated in the victory over General Burgoyne in October of that year. He lived in Princeton, Mass., in comparative independence, was a man of good education, and occupied a high social position. After the close of the Revolution, he joined heartily in the discussions of the day, and became one of the leaders in the famous Shays Rebellion, in which he was captain of a company. For this offence he was arrested and sentenced to be hanged; but he was afterwards pardoned. He removed to Barre, Vt., about 1790, where he was a highly respected citizen.<sup>2</sup>

Ebenezer Gale was a son of Captain Henry and Elizabeth (Drury) Gale, of Barre, Vt. *Sampson Gale* [68. VI. 137<sup>2</sup>] was his brother. His ancestry includes the following families: Gale, Fiske, Parkhurst, Brown, Garfield, Drury. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{VII}$ .

64-65. VI. 132. **Elizabeth Pickering** [John 60-68. V. 29], born in Salem,<sup>3</sup> died in Wallingford, Vt.

Mrs. Ballou's gravestone was standing in 1886 in the Wallingford cemetery.

<sup>1</sup> The date of his birth is given as Nov. 10, 1772, by his grandson Orlando C. Gale. It is given as Nov. 10, 1773, in the Gale Family Records, by George Gale, p. 83.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. pp. 78-84 and p. 111.

<sup>3</sup> The date of her birth is given as 1774, by her granddaughter, Mrs. John Wells, and by another authority as March 5, 1774; while in the History and Genealogy of the Ballous, by Adin Ballou, p. 415, it is given as Feb. 2, 1773. This same work, p. 415, gives her marriage as certified Nov. 29, 1791; while it is given in the History of the Town of Richmond, N. H., as Nov. 29, 1792; and by Mrs. Wells, as 1790.

64-65. VI. 132. *John Ballou*, her husband, born in Cumberland, R. I.,<sup>1</sup> died in Wallingford, Vt. A farmer. Residence: Wallingford.

Mr. Ballou resided for some time in Richmond, N. H., from which place he moved to Shrewsbury, Vt. He afterwards removed to Wallingford, Vt.

He was a son of Seth and Margaret (Bartlett) Ballou, of Cumberland, R. I., who removed to Richmond, N. H. His ancestry includes the following families: Ballou, Pike, Whitman, Arnold, Peak, Smith, Carpenter, Arnold, Harris, Cook, Bartlett. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{\frac{7}{8}}$ .

66. VI. 133. *Theophilus Pickering* [John 60-68. V. 29], born in Salem, probably died in Barre, Vt. A carpenter.

Mr. Pickering removed from Richmond, N. H., to Montpelier, Vt., where he worked at his trade on the State House. He then removed to Plainfield, and finally to Barre, Vt.

66. VI. 133. *Sarah Bullock*, his wife, probably born in Richmond, N.H.

Mrs. Pickering was a daughter of Jeremiah and Adah (Cass) Bullock, of Richmond, N. H. Her ancestry includes the following families: Bullock, Cass. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{\frac{7}{4}}$ .

66. VI. 134. *Lois Pickering* [John 60-68. V. 29], born in Salem, died in Delhi, N. Y.<sup>2</sup>

Mrs. John A. Parshall, of Delhi, N. Y., her granddaughter, says that Lois Thurber had the first side-saddle ever brought to Cooperstown, and that the other women of the settlement were frightfully jealous. The popular sentiment was finally voiced by one old lady, who arose in prayer-meeting and asked for prayers that Lois Thurber's pride over her new side-saddle might not lead her to eternal damnation, — or words to that effect.

<sup>1</sup> The date of his birth is given as Feb. 2, 1773, in the *History and Genealogy of the Ballous*, by Adin Ballou, p. 169, as well as by another authority. On p. 415, of the same work, it is given as March 5, 1774, which is the date given in the *History of the Town of Richmond, N. H.*, by William Bassett, p. 284. Emmet H. Rixford gives it as Feb. 2, 1770; while John Ballou's granddaughter, Mrs. John Wells, gives it as 1771.

<sup>2</sup> The date of her birth is given on her gravestone as 1779, per John A. Parshall.

Mrs. Parshall has an old and somewhat faded daguerrotype of Mrs. Thurber.<sup>1</sup>

66. VI. 134. *Abner Thurber*, her husband, probably born in Richmond, N. H., died in Cooperstown, N. Y. Residence: Cooperstown.

Mr. Thurber was a son of Jonathan and Lydia (Kingsley) Thurber, who came to Richmond, N. H., from Rehoboth, Mass., in 1762.<sup>2</sup> His ancestry includes the following families: Thurber, Bliss, Harmon, Kingsley. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{VII}$ .

66. VI. 135. *Timothy Pickering* [John 60-68. V. 29], born in Salem, died in Richmond, N. H. A carpenter and builder. Residence: Richmond.

Mr. Pickering was a very prominent citizen, and held various offices in the town. He was moderator of the town-meetings in 1833, town treasurer in 1830, 1832, and 1836, and a justice of the peace in 1834.<sup>3</sup> The following account shows that he possessed many of the characteristics of the Pickering family:—

“He bore a striking resemblance to the picture of old Judge Timothy Pickering which hangs in the Old South church at Boston. The similarity between the two does not end with the physical likeness; their mental characteristics apparently were much the same; each possessed a clear argumentative turn of mind and were endowed with a forcible use of language. Favoring surroundings and early educational advantages attended the Judge, while his namesake here had to contend with adverse influences which may have hindered his growth and development. The Esquire was always interested in politics; he never wearied in discussing the merits of candidates, or the policy of parties; was a strong partisan, unyielding and defiant in his opposition to the Federalists and Whigs; his vocabulary of epithets containing the most withering sarcasm, was inexhaustible, which he did not fail to use when occasion required which was not seldom in times of political excitement. In religion he was a Liberal. He was favorably disposed toward the Unitarians and took an active and foremost part in the formation of that society here. He was by trade a carpenter, a

<sup>1</sup> Letter of Lois Thurber's great-grandson, Leland O. Howard, dated at Washington, D. C., April 16, 1893.

<sup>2</sup> History of the Town of Richmond, N. H., by William Bassett, p. 509.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. pp. 250, 252.

thorough workman. He built many houses and was the contractor for building the Brick meeting-house. He was temperate in his habits and a despiser of hypocrites and shams."<sup>1</sup>

His gravestone was standing in 1886 in the graveyard at Richmond, N. H.

66. VI. 135<sup>1</sup>. *Martha Kelton*, the first wife of Timothy Pickering. Mrs. Pickering's gravestone was standing in 1886 in the graveyard at Richmond, N. H.

She was a daughter of Thomas Kelton, of Warwick, Mass., and a sister of her husband's second wife. ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{78}$ .

66. VI. 135<sup>2</sup>. *Nelle Kelton*, his second wife.

Mrs. Pickering's gravestone was standing in 1886 in the graveyard at Richmond, N. H.

She was a daughter of Thomas Kelton, of Warwick, Mass., and a sister of her husband's first wife. ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{78}$ .

67. VI. 136. *Jonathan Ingersoll Pickering* [John 60-68. V. 29], born in Salem, died in Worcester, N. Y. A hatter. Residence: Worcester, N. Y.

About the year 1817, Mr. Pickering moved from Richmond, N. H., to Worcester, Otsego County, N. Y., where he had a general store and hat manufactory. He also engaged in farming, and for many years preceding his death was a justice of the peace. He stood high in the Masonic order.

67. VI. 136. *Mary Cass*, his wife, born in Richmond, N. H., died in Colesville, N. Y.

Mrs. Pickering was a daughter of Joseph and Molly (Hews) Cass, of Richmond, N. H. ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{77}$ .

68. VI. 137. *Sarah Pickering* [John 60-68. V. 29], born in Richmond, N. H., probably died in Barre, Vt.

Mrs. Marshall's gravestone was standing in 1886 in the Barre cemetery. She is said to have had no children by either husband.

<sup>1</sup> History of the Town of Richmond, N. H., by William Bassett, p. 548.

68. VI. 137<sup>a</sup>. *Nathaniel Marshall*, her first husband.

Mr. Marshall lived for a time in Richmond, N. H., but he removed to Mont. He was called the Rev. Nathaniel Marshall, a Free Will Baptist.

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{78}$ .

68. VI. 137<sup>b</sup>. *Sampson Gale*, her second husband, probably born in Princeton, Mass., probably died in Barre, Vt. Residence: Barre.

Mr. Gale's gravestone was standing in 1886 in the cemetery at Barre. His second wife was Rebecca Lawson.

He was a son of Captain Henry and Elizabeth (Drury) Gale, of Barre, Vt. *Ebenezer Brooks Gale* [63. VI. 131] was his brother. His ancestry includes the following families: Gale, Fiske, Parkhurst, Brown, Garfield, Drury. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{78}$ .

68. VI. 138. *Samuel Pickering* [John 60-68. V. 29], born in Richmond, N. H., probably died in Winchester, N. H. A housewright. Residence: Winchester.

In 1824, he moved from Richmond to Winchester, the two towns adjoining each other. Here he lived the remainder of his life. He bore the title of captain, presumably a military one, but he was familiarly called "Uncle Sam." He was a very positive character, carried himself very erect, and had quite an aristocratic bearing. He was a strong Methodist, one of the pillars of the church, and a great exhorter in the prayer-meeting, one of his favorite expressions being, "We are poor miserable worms of the dust."

He and his son Ferdinand were quite deaf; and there are many amusing stories told of interviews between them, particularly in public. Samuel Pickering gave out that he was going to remove to Michigan, and wished to sell his farm. Having sold it, he bought another about a mile from town on the north side of the village, and lived on it many years. The townspeople from that time gave the locality the name of "Michigan," and as such it has been known to this day.<sup>1</sup>

Samuel Pickering's gravestone was standing in 1886 in the Winchester graveyard.

<sup>1</sup> The above facts were communicated by Dr. Peirce, of Winchester, N. H.

68. VI. 138. *Olive Buffum*, his wife, probably born in Richmond, N. H., died in Winchester, N. H.

Mrs. Pickering's gravestone was standing in 1886 in the Winchester graveyard.

She was a daughter of Jedediah and Olive (Gaskill) Buffum. *Olive Buffum* [62. VI. 128] was her mother.

Mrs. Pickering's ancestry includes the following families: Buffum, Pope, Taft, Gaskill, Southwick, Gardner, Frier, Pickering, Flint, Hobby, Estes. See ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{73}$ .

68. VI. 139. *David Pickering* [John 60-68. V. 29], born in Richmond, N. H., died of bronchitis in Ypsilanti, Mich. A minister.

David Pickering is said to have been one of the best and brightest of boys, and an excellent scholar. His appearance and manners were particularly interesting and agreeable. When he was about sixteen years old, he was converted, and joined the Free Will Baptists, under the preaching of Elder Nathaniel Marshall. The young fellow would sing, exhort, and pray surprisingly for one of his age; but on going to Barre, Vt., to learn a trade, he became acquainted with the Rev. Paul Dean, and was converted by him to Universalism. This second conversion seems to have determined him to give up his trade and study for the ministry. In a few years he became a preacher; and in September, 1809, he received a letter of fellowship from the General Convention at Barnard, Vt. He preached in various places, and was very much admired. About the year 1810, he removed to Shrewsbury, Vt., and a few years later, he was invited to settle in Lebanon, N. H. He remained in this vicinity for several years, and was quite successful in his ministry. After the death of his wife matters seemed to take an unfavorable turn in the society at Lebanon, and he went to Boston. Afterwards he preached for a time in St. Johnsbury, Vt., and then in Hudson, N. Y., where he labored successfully until 1823, when he took charge of the First Universalist Society in Providence, R. I. Here he remained some eight or ten years. The society finally became divided under Mr. Pickering, and it became necessary for him to give up his work in that city. He removed to the city of New York, and became the pastor of the society formerly

under the charge of the Rev. Edward Mitchell. That society fell to pieces under his administration, and he removed to Western New York. He preached for a few years at Butternuts (afterwards Morris), Otsego, N. Y., and in 1846 gave up preaching and went to Aurora, Erie County, to live on a farm which belonged to his third wife. In 1854-1855, he was living at Alden, Erie County, whence he removed to Ypsilanti, a few years previous to his death. From 1824 to 1828, he took charge of the "Christian Telescope," published in Providence. He was author of "Lectures on Defence of Divine Revelation," 1831; was editor of the "Gospel Preacher" in 1828, and the same year published a hymn-book of no inferior merit. He was a preacher and writer of ability, and during his earlier life occupied a high position in his denomination. He withdrew from the General Convention and joined the "Restorationists," so-called.

Mr. Pickering was a pleasant, social, and generous man, of agreeable manners.<sup>1</sup>

68. VI. 139<sup>1</sup>. *Louisa Rice*, his first wife, born at Hinsdale, Vt., died at Lebanon, N. H.

Mrs. Pickering was beautiful and amiable, and one of the best young ladies of Barre.<sup>2</sup>

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{80}^1$ .

68. VI. 139<sup>2</sup>. *Sally B. Jennison*, his second wife, born in Boston, died in New York.

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{80}^2$ .

68. VI. 139<sup>3</sup>. *Angelina Greene*, his third wife, born in Newport, Herkimer County, N. Y., died, in Aurora, Erie County, N. Y.

Mrs. Pickering's first husband, whom she married May 31, 1826, was Stephen B. Greene. By him she had the following children:—

ALMIRA GREENE, born July, 1827; died in infancy.

JOHN CLARK GREENE, born July, 1830; died May, 1849, unmarried.

SARAH C. GREENE, born April 5, 1833; died Oct. 2, 1875.

<sup>1</sup> The Trumpet and Universalist Magazine of Jan. 29, 1859, and of March 12, 1859; the Christian Repository of Feb. 4, 1859, and the History of the Town of Richmond, N. H., by William Bassett, pp. 465-466, which contains a portrait of Mr. Pickering.

<sup>2</sup> The Trumpet and Universalist Magazine of March 12, 1859.

Mrs. Pickering was a daughter of Stephen and Esther (Whipple) Clark, of Newport, N. Y. ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{30}$ .

68. VI. 139<sup>a</sup>. *Lucena Perry*, his fourth wife, born in Wales, N. H.

At the time of her marriage, which took place in Buffalo, N. Y., she was living at Alden, Erie County, N. Y. She removed with her husband to Ypsilanti, Michigan.

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{30}$ .

69. VI. 141. *Hannah Pickering* [William 69. V. 30], probably born in Warwick, Mass., died in Warwick.<sup>1</sup>

When she was eight years old, she went to live with her aunt, Mrs. Abigail Baldwin, of Salem, who at her death bequeathed to her the whole of her estate, a part of which, consisting of an old desk, an embroidered Pickering coat of arms, and an embroidered landscape, is still (1886) in the possession of Mrs. Simonds' daughter, Mrs. Clark, of Lynn, Mass. Mrs. Simonds' gravestone is still standing in the graveyard at Warwick.

69. VI. 141. *Laban Simonds*, her husband. Residence: Warwick, Mass.

Mr. Simonds' gravestone was standing in 1886 in the graveyard at Warwick.

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{31}$ .

69. VI. 147. *Tamar Pickering* [William 69-70. V. 30], probably born in Warwick, Mass., died in Warwick.<sup>2</sup>

69. VI. 148. *William Pickering* [William 69-70. V. 30], probably born in Warwick, Mass., died in Westmoreland, N. H. Residence: Warwick.

He moved from Warwick to North Carolina, separated from his wife, and finally came North to Westmoreland.

69. VI. 148. *Emma Owen*, his wife.

Her husband separated from her.

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{32}$ .

<sup>1</sup> The date of her birth is given in the Family Bible as Oct. 8, 1785, while the History of the Town of Richmond, N. H., by William Bassett, p. 466, gives it as Oct. 8, 1784.

<sup>2</sup> History of the Town of Warwick, Mass., by Jonathan Blake, p. 225.

B  
860 RD-107

69-70. VI. 150. *Eunice Pickering* [William 69-70. V. 30], born in Warwick, Mass., died in Turner, Ill.<sup>1</sup>

69-70. VI. 150<sup>a</sup>. *David Battles*, her first husband, born in Fitchburg, Mass., died in Westmoreland, N. H. A carpenter. Residence: Westmoreland.

Mr. Battles settled in Richmond, N. H., in 1819, and was a miller at Sprague's Mills until 1831.<sup>2</sup> He finally removed to Westmoreland.

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{53}$ .

70. VI. 150<sup>b</sup>. *Barnes Kuhn*, her second husband. A physician.

ANCESTRY TABLES  $\frac{VI}{53}$ .

<sup>1</sup> The date of her death is given as Feb. 9, 1877, by her son, Lorenzo D. Battles, and as March, 1876, by her daughter, Mrs. Rufus Lamb.

<sup>2</sup> History of the Town of Richmond, N. H., by William Bassett, p. 310.

